

War, Revolution Insurgency, Counter Insurgency



Clandestine

and



Guerrilla Warfare



and

The Christian

War, Revolution
Insurgency & Counter Insurgency
Clandestine & Guerrilla Warfare
And
The Christian
3rd Edition

Taken from detailed studies By R. B. Thieme Jr.

Compiling and Editing by:
Dr. Frank P. Ferraro

Copyright © 2025 ALL rights reserved

The content of this document is protected by all applicable copyright laws. Unauthorized use and/or duplication of this material for the purpose of sale or profit to any degree without express permission from the author is strictly prohibited.

Copyright © 2025

Bible Doctrine is a product of the Grace of God therefore this **UNMODIFIED** Doctrinal compilation as a reflection of the Grace of God is available to all at NO CHARGE. Duplication and distribution **WITHOUT MODIFICATION** is permitted by all.

[Table of Contents](#)

<u>Dedication.....</u>	<u>10</u>
<u>Preface.....</u>	<u>11</u>
<u>Additional Bible Doctrine Compilations Available:.....</u>	<u>13</u>
<u>Introduction to War and the Christian.....</u>	<u>14</u>
<u>Definitions:.....</u>	<u>14</u>
<u>The 2 Kinds of War.....</u>	<u>15</u>
<u>Satan's Rulership.....</u>	<u>15</u>
<u>2 Mechanisms for Waging War.....</u>	<u>16</u>
<u>Type I.....</u>	<u>16</u>
<u>Type II.....</u>	<u>16</u>
<u>Concepts of War & the Christian.....</u>	<u>17</u>
<u>The Cause of War.....</u>	<u>17</u>
<u>Evil Must be Eliminated.....</u>	<u>18</u>
<u>The Rise and Fall of Nations.....</u>	<u>19</u>
<u>Military Functions in the Rise and Fall of Nations.....</u>	<u>20</u>
<u>Spiritual Factors in the Rise and Fall of Nations.....</u>	<u>21</u>
<u>The Client Nation to God.....</u>	<u>21</u>
<u>The Plan of God for the Client Nation.....</u>	<u>22</u>
<u>The Reality of Client Nation Function.....</u>	<u>24</u>
<u>Killing & Violence as Problem Solutions in Normal Times.....</u>	<u>26</u>
<u>Testing & Deliverance.....</u>	<u>31</u>
<u>National or Historical Crisis in the Client Nation.....</u>	<u>36</u>
<u>Cleansing a Nation.....</u>	<u>36</u>
<u>Testing Before Crisis.....</u>	<u>37</u>
<u>Military Preparation vs Politics.....</u>	<u>38</u>
<u>Civilian Interference with Military Actions.....</u>	<u>39</u>
<u>Divine Institutions for Preservation of Nations.....</u>	<u>40</u>
<u>Divine Institution #1 == Volition or Free Will.....</u>	<u>40</u>
<u>Divine Institution #2 == Marriage.....</u>	<u>40</u>
<u>Divine Institution #3 = Family.....</u>	<u>40</u>
<u>Divine Institution #4 – Nationalism.....</u>	<u>41</u>
<u>The Issue of Freedom.....</u>	<u>42</u>
<u>Freedom & Government.....</u>	<u>44</u>
<u>Principles of National & Military Function.....</u>	<u>45</u>
<u>Authoritarianism vs Totalitarianism.....</u>	<u>46</u>
<u>National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>47</u>
<u>Understanding History.....</u>	<u>48</u>
<u>Requirements for Effective Military Function.....</u>	<u>48</u>
<u>True Leadership.....</u>	<u>48</u>
<u>Effective Training, Strict Discipline = High Morale.....</u>	<u>49</u>
<u>Confidence in Battle.....</u>	<u>49</u>
<u>The PRINCIPLE of Proper function in War.....</u>	<u>49</u>
<u>Warfare Principles.....</u>	<u>50</u>
<u>Victory in War.....</u>	<u>51</u>

Principles for Consideration in Warfare.....	53
Objective Reality in War.....	53
The Objective of Warfare.....	53
Annihilation & Unconditional Surrender.....	55
Requirements for Military Victory.....	55
True Leadership.....	55
Effective Training, Strict Discipline High Morale.....	55
Confidence in Battle.....	55
Exploiting Victory.....	56
Spiritual Principles for Exploiting Victory.....	56
Principles of leadership in warfare.....	57
The Essence of Military Leadership.....	58
Bible Doctrine & Military Leadership.....	60
Neutralizing Leadership.....	62
WAR Demands Training.....	62
War & History.....	63
Motives Leading to War – Hostile Intentions.....	64
WAR is MORAL.....	65
Just Warfare is From GOD.....	66
Sinful NOT To Go To War.....	66
War and the Christian.....	66
Reaction against Categories based on a FEW.....	66
Warfare & The Bible.....	66
War is Bonifide in History.....	68
The Lord Jesus, The Christ the Lord Sabaoth.....	71
The Believer, God and War.....	72
Murder vs Killing in Battle.....	74
Understanding Fear.....	75
Loyalty, Integrity & The Believer in War.....	75
The Man for the Crisis.....	78
Success in War.....	79
The Importance of Bible Doctrine in War.....	80
God Prepares the Believer for Training.....	82
Mental Attitude in Combat.....	83
The Believer in Combat.....	83
Combat vs Instincts.....	84
Women in Combat.....	85
War is for Adults.....	85
War Requires both Moral and Battle Courage.....	86
War as Personal Divine Discipline.....	88
Divine Good Production in War.....	88
Deliverance in Warfare.....	89
Believers are protected in warfare.....	89
Deliverance, How Does it Work.....	90

<u>Survival of the Nation.....</u>	<u>92</u>
Protection of the Nation.....	93
Universal Military Training.....	95
<u>Fighting for Freedom in the World.....</u>	<u>97</u>
Justified War in Far Off Places.....	98
<u>National Destruction Begins.....</u>	<u>99</u>
In the Beginning.....	100
Principles of the Cycles of Divine Discipline.....	101
National Discipline.....	101
The Punishment of the Nation.....	107
Surviving the Punishment of the Nation.....	109
Solutions for Crises and Disaster.....	111
Pivot Politics vs Power Politics as Solutions.....	112
The Basic Doctrinal Rationales:.....	113
Status quo of the United States.....	115
<u>Solution to National Decline.....</u>	<u>116</u>
Prayer as a Solution to National Problems.....	117
A Sample Prayer for Deliverance.....	117
<u>Revolution, the People & The Lord.....</u>	<u>118</u>
Revolutionary Leadership.....	122
Revolution and the People.....	123
Race & Religion in Revolution.....	124
Violence in Revolution.....	125
Thought & Decision in Revolution.....	125
Divine Perspective on Revolution.....	126
Revolution & God.....	128
The Believer's Perspective in Revolution.....	129
<u>Anatomy of Revolution.....</u>	<u>131</u>
The Principle of Revolution:.....	131
The Old Sin Nature & Revolution.....	132
Public Opinion & Revolution.....	133
Failure of Public Opinion.....	134
Revolution Defined.....	135
Evil of Bureaucracy.....	136
Propaganda in Revolution.....	136
COMMUNIST "BLUEPRINT FOR WORLD CONQUEST".....	137
Freedom & Revolution.....	138
The Hypocrisy of Pseudo Compassion.....	139
Compassion & Revolution Hypocrisy.....	140
The Right System, the Wrong People.....	142
Arrogance & Evil in Revolution.....	143
The Hard Core Revolutionist.....	144
Distortions of Leadership by Revolutionaries.....	145
Change & Revolution.....	146

Conspiracy & Revolution.....	146
Factors and Principles in Revolution & Civil War.....	146
2 Causes for Civil War.....	147
Revolution Where the Issue is Truth.....	147
Revolution Where the Issue is Politics.....	148
Arrogance Attracts Arrogance in Conspiracy & Revolution.....	148
Understanding the Revolutionary.....	151
Solution for Revolution.....	151
Resolution of Rebellion or Revolution.....	153
Isolation of the Leaders:.....	154
Revolutionary Guerrilla War & Strategy.....	156
Propaganda & Revolutionary War.....	159
Principles of Conventional vs Clandestine War.....	159
Conventional Just Warfare.....	160
Logistics and Intelligence.....	161
Realities of Combat.....	161
5 Factors of Combat Engagement.....	162
7 Factors Determining Victory or Defeat.....	162
Principles of Function for Victory in Battle:.....	163
The Rule of War.....	163
5 Essentials for Victory.....	163
Principles of Engagement of the Enemy.....	164
5 Dangerous Faults of a Commander.....	164
6 Calamities caused by the Commanding General.....	164
Principles of Conventional War.....	165
Offensive Action.....	165
Principle of The Objective.....	166
Conventional Warfare Functions.....	167
Conventional War Stumbling Blocks.....	168
Unit Cohesion & Function.....	169
Clandestine Warfare Operations.....	170
Clandestine Operations.....	171
Intelligence Operations.....	172
Scale of Values.....	172
The Honorable Spy and Counter Insurgent.....	175
Terrorism & the United States of America.....	176
Clandestine Counter Insurgency.....	176
Propaganda as a Weapon in Warfare.....	178
Guerrilla Warfare Operations.....	179
Underlying Principles.....	181
Conventional vs Guerrilla War.....	181
2 Kinds of Guerrilla Warfare.....	183
Traditional Guerrilla Warfare.....	183
Traditional Guerrilla Warfare & The Progressive Left.....	184

Revolutionary or Communist Guerrilla Warfare.....	184
Propaganda an Essential in Communist Guerrilla Warfare.....	186
Mass Formation.....	187
Mass Formation: Deployed After 200 Years of Study.....	187
Studies on Crowd Psychology.....	188
Fear & Mass Formation Psychology.....	189
“Modern” or Urban Guerrilla Warfare Operation.....	189
Guerrilla Warfare in the United States.....	190
U.S. Guerrilla Warfare Differences.....	190
Prepping for or Preventing Guerrilla Warfare.....	191
Prevention and Control of Mobs and Riots.....	191
Nature of Crowds – MOBS.....	191
Basic Behavior Patterns in Mobs.....	192
The People Involved in Mobs.....	192
Riot Patterns.....	193
Riot Symptoms.....	193
Riots as a Prelude to Revolutionary Guerrilla Warfare.....	194
Communism & US Riots.....	195
Communist Influence and Control MUST be Secret.....	195
Weapons for Urban Guerrilla Warfare.....	196
Recruiting for Guerrilla Organizations.....	196
Principles of Guerrilla Warfare.....	197
Definition Of The Urban Guerrilla.....	197
The Concept for the Christian.....	198
Counter Insurgent Guerrilla and Clandestine Warrior Qualities.....	199
How To Be Clandestine.....	200
Technical Preparations.....	202
Marksmanship Essentials.....	202
Organizational Groups.....	202
Logistics.....	203
Guerrilla Tactics for Insurgents and Counter Insurgents.....	203
The Objectives.....	204
A War of Nerves.....	209
Carrying Out Proper Tactics.....	210
Security.....	211
The Weaknesses of the Guerrilla.....	211
Popular Support.....	212
Origins of the Guerrilla Revolutionary.....	213
Opposing & Defeating Insurgent Guerrillas.....	213
Counter Insurgency.....	214
Counter Insurgency Principles.....	215
The Format for Intrigue.....	218
Types of Insurgency.....	220
Basic Weapon of Modern Warfare.....	221

The Goal of Modern Warfare.....	221
The Goal of Counter Insurgent Guerrilla War.....	222
Justified Killing & Violence.....	223
The Function of Clandestine Counter Insurgency.....	227
The Divine Application of Clandestine Warfare.....	229
Counter Insurgency & Good Decisions.....	231
Clandestine Warfare.....	232
Victory in Battle & Success of Counter Insurgency.....	233
Planning & Execution in Counter Insurgency.....	234
Identification of the Enemy.....	236
The SECRET of Clandestine War.....	236
Success of a Mission.....	237
Victory in Clandestine War.....	238
Attack by Strategy.....	239
The Skilled leader's Functions.....	240
Solution to Insurgency & Guerrilla War.....	240
Leadership Decapitation Effectiveness in Counter Insurgencies.....	241
Failure to Understand Modern Guerrilla Warfare.....	241
Summary of Principles of Counter Insurgency.....	242
Principle 1.....	242
Principle 2.....	243
Principle 3.....	243
Principle 4.....	244
Principle 5.....	244
Principle 6:.....	245
4 th Generation Warfare.....	246
The Three Percent, the "bitter clingers".....	249
4th Generation Warfare; Chinese "Unrestricted War".....	251
Potential 4th Generation Warfare Targeting.....	261
Considerations for Government in 4 th Generation War.....	261
A Hypothetical Scenario.....	264
The American Revolution of the 21 st Century.....	265
Decline of the United States.....	266
American Low Intensity Conflict 2021.....	268
Intelligence gathering.....	269
Escalation of Current Situations.....	271
How to Take a Stand in National Crisis.....	273
Strategies in National Disaster.....	277
The Believer's Preparation for the Crisis.....	278
Principles of Preparation for Crisis.....	278
Distractions in Crisis.....	279
Grace in Crisis.....	280
God's Provision.....	281
Stand Fast and Watch the Deliverance.....	283

<u>Principles Regarding Logistical Grace.....</u>	<u>283</u>
<u>Principle of Priorities.....</u>	<u>285</u>
<u>Survival & Solutions in Disaster.....</u>	<u>287</u>
<u>To Stay or Run.....</u>	<u>288</u>
<u>The Essentials Needed.....</u>	<u>288</u>
<u>Glossary.....</u>	<u>292</u>
<u>The Reluctant Sparrow.....</u>	<u>302</u>
<u>References.....</u>	<u>303</u>
<u>Passages.....</u>	<u>306</u>

Dedication

The word of God is alive and powerful, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of the soul and the spirit, and of the joints and the marrow, and is a critic of thoughts and intents of the heart. (Heb 4:12) All Scripture is God-Breathed – and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness; that the man of God might be mature, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. (2Tim 3:16-17) Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. (2Tim. 2:1)

This compilation of doctrinal principles is dedicated to my pastor of some 40+ years, Col. [R. B. Thieme Jr.](#), who, in my humble opinion, was one of, if not the, foremost theologian of the 20th century and most likely many others as well. Without his consistent, undaunted, dogmatic teaching of Bible Doctrine this document would not have been possible and I would, most likely, NOT have a clue about the Christian Way of Life. In his physical presence, mental acuity, supreme dedication to the word of God and overriding dogmatic veracity in the presentation of the doctrines of the bible he has been a life changing inspiration to myself and literally hundreds of thousands of other believers throughout the world. I, and these others I am sure, look forward to the honor of standing in ranks before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ as representatives of the “Berachah Battalion” who have grown up in the Spiritual Life under his phenomenal grace teaching.

I would also like to express my appreciation to Pastor [R. K. Lyon](#) of Sapulpa, OK for his continued support and encouragement and for sharing opinions and listening to my attempted organizing concerning Bible Doctrine principles.

Preface

Before a believer begins to study anything related to bible doctrine or any true spiritual phenomenon, he must ensure that he is under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit for teaching which requires the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. This can only be accomplished if he will name his KNOWN sins PRIVATELY to God the Father in order to be forgiven those and all other UNKNOWN or FORGOTTEN sins and to be placed again into fellowship with God and under the teaching and guiding ministry of God the Holy Spirit. [1John 1:9](#) states, “If we confess (name or cite) our (known) sins, He is faithful and justified to forgive us our (known) sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness (unknown sins).” This will put the believer into fellowship with God and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in a state of [Genuine Humility](#) and teachability and ready to learn Bible Doctrine. If you have never personally expressed faith ‘alone’ in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ ‘alone’ the issue is NOT naming your sins. The issue is nonmeritorious faith alone in Christ alone. “He who believes in the Son has Everlasting Life; But he who does not obey the command to believe in the Son shall not see (Everlasting) life, but the wrath of God abides on him.” ([John 3:36](#))

If we are totally objective we must admit to having delusions about some things in life at some time. For myself there is ONE thing in this life which I have no delusions about, Bible Doctrine. Were it not for the teaching ministry of Col. R. B. Thieme Jr. and his consistent clear, concise and dogmatic presentation of the doctrines of the bible I would know nothing of orthodox fundamental biblical doctrine. I have no delusion about my knowledge, calling or spiritual gift; and, recognize that I could not do what he and many other pastors have done, and continue to do, in the constant studying and teaching of Bible Doctrine to their congregations. Over the years I have learned innumerable principles from these studies by Pastor Thieme. One of the most important things I have learned has been that “your rate of learning MUST exceed your rate of FORGETTING” in order to advance in the Spiritual Life or to MAINTAIN your level of spiritual growth. This amplifies the necessity therefore of constant, consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and ultimately the Application of it to one’s life. It is my desire that this document be a source of consolidated doctrine and principles regarding the potential involvement and function of the Christian in any aspect of War to fulfill that very purpose.

This is a compilation from my notes from many sources especially based on the principles directly derived from the lessons taught by Col. R. B. Thieme Jr., including various passages and complete books of the scripture. These were taught after many years of Pastor Thieme serving in his ministry of Studying and Teaching Orthodox Fundamental Biblical Christian Doctrine according to an Isagogical, Exegetical and Categorical method. With this in mind be conscious of the fact that some of the terminology, doctrine and principles presented here will be, at best, difficult and possibly obscure, even contradictory to former ideas accumulated, for the new or infant believer. It took the Colonel many years of preparation and study to come to the point of being able to extract these doctrines and principles from the original languages of scripture so it should reasonably require some years of study by the believer under his type of ministry to be able to completely understand what is herein contained.

If you have read any of the other compilations I have put together you will notice some similarities or blatant duplication here. I have chosen to do this to establish a proper background to enable a better understanding of THIS subject matter. In effect this and all the other compilations of Bible Doctrine I have been instrumental in producing are designed to be STUDIED not simply read through. This can be accomplished by reading the document through and then returning to read again areas which require further study or taking individual chapters and reading and reviewing the terminology and references until they are inculcated. The reality is that to study a subject you must read it and then read it again and check all the references and definitions of terms not totally understood and then it must be read again and again until it is clearly understood and inculcated. This is STUDYING to enable the content of the material to be available for future application to situations and circumstances which may arise in one's life. To facilitate a clearer understanding on the part of the reader I have interlinked segments of this document and provided links to other documents to enable the reader to review, to learn or to recall terminology, concepts, principles and doctrines while engaged in the studying of other parts. I have also included a Glossary of the definition of terms and a listing of pertinent biblical Passages, which have been expanded and corrected in their translation from the original languages, which I believe will help in this endeavor. Whenever I use references to terms found in the Greek, Hebrew, Latin or Aramaic languages of scripture, I indicate them with the abbreviations of (gr), (heb), (lat) or (aram) as a precursor to the terms.

As one would expect, I have entered some opinions and concepts of my own from what I have learned from my studies of the teaching of Bible Doctrine by Pastor Thieme in various lessons, from later years and also from life experiences and other materials regarding both past and present historical and social trends. It is and has always been my opinion that GOD is logical and rational (He is devoid of emotion) therefore, his doctrine from the bible, the Thinking of Christ, ([1Cor 2:16](#)) must be LOGICAL and RATIONAL in its coordinated understanding. My effort here has been to consolidate the principles of various categories of War, Insurgency and Counter Insurgency in order to provide a place where believers might go to acquire or review concise, and hopefully lucid, information related to these principles. However, nothing contained herein is ever to be construed to have been originated by my personal abilities to extract doctrines from the original languages and historical background of the scripture. Neither is this to be a substitute for consistent DAILY study under one's right Pastor Teacher in order to develop the momentum needed to reach and hold on to spiritual maturity, the ultimate objective of the Spiritual Life. If more details and reference passages are desired concerning War in the Life of the Christian or how these principles were derived original lessons can be ordered from [R. B. Thieme Jr. Bible Ministries](#), P.O. Box 460829, Houston Tx. 77056-8829, or by phoning 713-621-3740.

Understand clearly, my objective in compiling these principles of Bible Doctrine is not whether it is considered good or bad, whether it is liked or disliked as a message by anyone, but only whether God the Holy Spirit can use the principles which have been demonstrated to be effective in history and the doctrinal content in the life of YOU the believer reading it. I have

nothing to prove to anyone in life and it is only getting the message through to YOU, the reader, that is important to me so that there is something for God the Holy Spirit to use. Understand that there will be duplication and repetition and one category of Bible Doctrine principles cannot always be separated and individually studied without relating it's impact on and from, very often, several others. However, as we clearly know in life and as the Colonel might have said on occasion: "REPETITION, REPETITION, REPETITION IS INVALUABLE SO GET USED TO IT AND ENJOY IT.

Dr. Frank P. Ferraro

Additional Bible Doctrine Compilations Available:

Working for God – How Good is GOOD ENOUGH!

The Influence of Grace vs The Influence of Evil on the Soul

Spiritual Common Sense

Royal Family Honor Code

The Power System of God – The Divine Dynasphere

Progression in the Spiritual Life

Flexibility & Essentials in the Christian Way of Life

The Edification Complex of the Soul

Propaganda, Brainwashing & Psychological Warfare

Interlocking System of Arrogance 4th Ed.

Understanding Grace

Problem Solutions in the Christian Life

Faith Rest for the Christian

Christian Reversionism

Many Other Short Compilations

Introduction to War and the Christian

“No one starts a war, or rather, no one in his rational senses ought to do so, without first being absolutely clear in his mind what he intends to achieve by that war and how he intends to conduct it.” General Carl Von Clausewitz

“I know not with what weapons World War III will be fought, but World War IV will be fought with sticks and stones.” Albert Einstein

The goal of this book is to provide information and principles which can guide the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in his understanding of War and when it is Just and Necessary and when it is NOT and what his responsibility is with regard to service to his nation. This is NOT a book on strategy or tactics in War, Insurgency, Counter Insurgency, Clandestine War nor Guerrilla War which each individually could be a lifetime study, although some strategy and tactics are presented here for consideration. The explicit purpose here is to clarify for the believer what he should and should not think, what he should and should not do, and what is acceptable and authorized by God and what is not in various categories of Warfare. In addition, in a situation of any type of warfare what the believer should be aware of and how he should conduct himself. In addition there is considerable repetition of fundamental concepts for what I believe are OBVIOUS reasons considering the fear and rejection of the people in the United States of the necessary means of conducting any type of WARFARE!

Definitions:

- War
 - Armed fighting between two or more countries or groups, or any situation in which there is strong competition between opposing sides or a great fight against something harmful.
- Conventional – Overt War
 - War which is Apparent, Obvious, Perceivable, Open, Public and is fought according to well established historical precedents.
- Clandestine War
 - War which is planned or conducted in secret, kept hidden from people, secret, covert, confidential, disguised, especially describing something that is not officially allowed, sanctioned or overtly declared as War.
- Guerrilla
 - A member of an unofficial military group trying to change the government by making sudden, unexpected attacks on the official military forces.
- Guerrilla – Unconventional War
 - Military operations that are fluid in which the ‘guerrillas’, operate in ‘bands’ rather than armies and never directly confront the opposing government forces in massive or decisive battles.

- Insurgency
 - A group of people attempting to take control of the government of a country by force or through legal or “parliamentary” means, the struggle of a group of people, often using violence, who refuse to accept their government's authority.
- Insurgent
 - Someone who is fighting by various means against an undesirable government in their own or another country, someone who opposes political authority.
- Counterinsurgency
 - Military or Police action taken by a government to prevent attacks, both legal and violent, by groups that are opposed to it.
- Counter Insurgent
 - One who is a patriot or loyalist supporting and defending his government and country in the face of Insurgency whether it is legal or violent in nature, clandestine, guerrilla based or overt war.

The 2 Kinds of War

- The object is the *overthrow of the enemy*, whether the aim be his destruction, politically, or merely at disarming him and forcing him to conclude peace on dictated terms;
- The object is *to make some conquests on the frontiers of an enemy's country*, either for the purpose of retaining them permanently, or of turning them to account as matter of exchange in the settlement of a peace. (**General Carl Von Clausewitz**)

Satan's Rulership

Satan, as ruler of this world since the fall of Adam, has a plan and policy to control that which he rules. It is known to us as Good and Evil where EVIL is the plan and policy and what can be called Human Good is the production of man which results from the engagement in that plan. ([Luke 4:5-7](#), [John 12:31](#), [14:30](#) [16:11](#), [2Cor 4:4](#), [Rev Chapter 12](#)) His system uses what can be called “Power Politics” but he cannot institute his policy only through propaganda because mankind is too stupid to follow it and thus he must resort to violence and change through violence to bring his policy and plan into action. This whole system of satanic control revolves around 2 principles:

- When attempts at influencing the mind with Lies and Propaganda fail then invoke tyranny.
- As a result of the plan and policy being impatient when trying to deceive using Lies and Propaganda it must inevitably resort to force and violence.

In [Rev 12](#) Satan's policy in connection with his last attempt to bring perfect environment on earth fails miserably and this merely intensifies violence and his attempts to force change. This is why God set up for human government the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and the [Divine](#)

Institutions to prevent the out of control violence, which would inevitably result under Satan's unrestrained plan, from destroying the Human Race. It is the responsibility of believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ to advance to Spiritual Maturity by means of consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine in order to guarantee that what Satan rules he cannot ever control. The Laws of Divine Establishment clearly demonstrate that the only thing which impresses some people such as criminals, communists and moslems is violence greater than they can muster or endure. This in essence is the reason for Just Warfare. In all cases of conventional, clandestine, guerrilla, insurgent or counter insurgent war the purpose of the LEGITIMATE ORGANIZATION involved in the war must be preserving or restoring Freedom under the functions of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions in that nation according to the principles of the Plan of God for it to be JUST. At times this may involve waging conventional or clandestine war in distant lands to prevent the encroachment of Evil into the client nation. At times it may mean counter insurgent war even guerrilla war in the client nation to remove a revolutionary faction and prevent the destruction of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution functions in that nation. Therefore, WAR is Justified for the believer and for the client nation in order to preserve and protect FREEDOM and enable its functions in service to God under the guidelines of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions.

2 Mechanisms for Waging War

Type I

Fighting with big machines and using them to advantage in warfare. The big advantage to this function is that when it occurs nothing can stand against these military machines except greater machines and the war can often be won in short order. In addition it is the machines which bear the brunt of the battle and human casualties are minimized when machines succeed in doing their job. This is, however, economically extremely expensive and will bankrupt a nation which tries to keep it up for too long a period of time. A very strong disadvantage is that terrain, vegetation and weather can hamper these machines and for effective use the machines must be brought to bear quickly without warning in order to provide rapid victory or the nation will be economically bled dry in a protracted war. Generally, because the society in the United States of America places a high premium on all human life, it is compelled to almost exclusively fight this type of war with machines and also because the citizenry generally today will not support Type II warfare. In addition the media, citizenry and civilian government would demand immediate courts martial of any military commander who continued to accept wholesale casualties such as those which occurred in the 7th and 9th divisions in 1972 in Vietnam.

Type II

Guerrilla warfare is using from small to large numbers of men lightly armed with tactical rifles, machine guns, mortars, rocket launchers, etc., to strike very rapidly and then run from the engagement, in totally unanticipated areas. This is a protracted type of war which weakens the enemy over a long period of time eventually destroying him when he is too weak. Unfortunately the United States of America has historically been too clean and neat and its administrators too stupid to realize the advantages of this type of warfare and how to use both

Type I and Type II together. In addition as is painfully obvious today, being clearly demonstrated by the abject failure of the United States Military in the wars in Korea, Vietnam, and Afghanistan, that the United States is also unable to combat this type of warfare.

Concepts of War & the Christian

It must be clearly understood that the believer has a responsibility to function at some point under patriotism in service to his country. This assumes LEGITIMATE functions in his government based on the understanding of and adherence OF THE GOVERNMENT to the principles of Bible Doctrine contained in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions no matter the TYPE of government operational in his nation. Therefore, when individuals who are against such a government take control of it through subterfuge in elections or some other way the Patriot, if and when he stands or moves against this illegitimacy in government, will be called an INSURGENT when in fact he may be operating under the principles of Counter Insurgency to remove those who are ILLEGITIMATELY functioning in his government. He will be labeled an Insurgent and the available forces of his government will be brought to bear against him. His actions in this counter insurgency effort MUST be toward maintaining the LEGITIMATE functions of his government and not attempting to overthrow and change it but simply to remove those in violation of its Legitimate standards.

The Cause of War

War results when an aggressive lustful nation or group presumes to induce tyranny into a nation by destroying its inherent freedoms by force. This is communism and it is clearly described by a communist defector, Whitiker Chambers in his manuscript, “Witness”: (50)

- It is a focus of concentrated EVIL.
- Its power is based on the power to hold CONVICTION and act upon it.
 - Communists have the commitment to LIVE or DIE to bear witness to their ‘FAITH’.
- Its force is derived from a vision of man without God, his mind displacing God as the creative intelligence of the world.
 - This removes the Right Lobe function and sets up the Left Lobe of the Soul as GOD.
 - It is man’s liberated mind by the sole force of its rational intelligence redirecting man’s destiny and reorganizing his life in this world.
- It is a challenge implying a THREAT for man to prove by his ACTS that he is the masterwork of creation.
 - The Left Lobe of the Soul challenges man to prove himself by reducing the meaningless chaos of nature by imposing on it his rational will to order, abundance, security and Peace.
 - This Vision of man’s Materialism threatens that if Man’s Right Lobe is unequal to the task of progress from the Left Lobe of the Soul, he will sink back into savagery.
 - The Right Lobe being unable to handle the functions from the rationalism of the Left Lobe is therefore destroyed and he becomes an ANIMAL.
- Communism is in the name of MIND men freeing themselves from GOD.
 - The crisis of communism exists to the degree it has FAILED to free from GOD the peoples that it rules.
- The crisis of the western world exists to the degree in which it is INDIFFERENT to GOD,

becoming entangled into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, and thus shares in the materialistic vision of communism.

Communists are therefore TOUGH ANIMALS and to hold them off or overcome them a conservative must be TOUGHER through genius and focused orientation on the principles and Plan of God. The insurgent revolutionists involved in Black Power of the 60s and Black Lives Matter and Antifa of the 21st century are ANIMALS having universally been trained by communists and to stop them they must be KILLED. Moslems in this country from the 60s who are now in government positions and in the military and Law Enforcement functions are also ANIMALS and have no right to be in those positions being unable according to their religion to swear allegiance to the American Constitution or the Nation.

War is always started by those in control of a group, region or nation having power lust or material lust for land or some other inordinate ambition. Those who control Russia, China, Cuba, North Korea and the moslems of the middle east, all fit into this category. There is only one thing which power lust is impressed by and for which it will stop and that is a PREPARED MILITARY ORGANIZATION. THE ONLY THING POWER LUST FEARS IS VIOLENCE AGAINST ITSELF GREATER THAN THAT WHICH THEY CAN OR ARE WILLING TO PERPETRATE AGAINST OTHERS. The United States of America must make an all out effort to arm itself against at least 4 different power lust groups in the world. These include: Russian Communism, Chinese Communism, North Korean Communism and Islam. Failure means that the United States will inevitably be invaded and destroyed unless the individuals in control of this nation get back under the common sense of what is RIGHT AND PROPER MILITARY PREPARATION.

War is a reality and it cannot be prevented. God could have sent Henry Kissinger or any other state department bureaucratic negotiator to Chedorlaomer in the ancient world and he would have been walked over and stomped into the ground like dust. When power lust reaches a saturation point with Evil, armies move and invasions occur. When Hitler reached a saturation point of Evil he then moved into Austria (which in fact historically VOTED to accept him), then into Czechoslovakia and then Poland and beyond. Napoleon, one of the greatest men in human history though an unbeliever, when fighting 2 armies opposing him larger than his own on the defensive for France, using his great nerve and timing defeated them, this started great power lust in him and he moved more and more to conquer instead of simply protecting his land.

Evil Must be Eliminated

Believers must understand historically that when God destroys a nation and another nation conquers and plunders and rapes and robs and enslaves and tortures those citizens, THERE IS A REASON FOR IT in the Plan of God. Evil (The Plan and Policy of Satan) to rule this world, when it becomes saturated in any nation MUST be destroyed. If not that 'disease' will spread and FREEDOM will be destroyed in the entire world and history will end and the Angelic Conflict will not be resolved. If that were able to have happened at any time past, present or in the future, Human History would end and mankind would not have been placed here by God in the first place. It is part of what God has known from his omniscience and allowed

into the Plan of God to resolve the contention, the REVOLUTIONARY WAR, between Fallen Angels and God, and because Satan has been given rulership of this world by Adam at his fall in the garden, that WAR will inevitably exist in this world in Human History, UNTIL SATAN NO LONGER RULES IT at the 2nd Advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and his Millennial Reign on this earth.

When any nation has rulership focused on or strongly influenced by EVIL and Evil functions saturating it, overriding the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, then God has to destroy it and the Supreme Court of Heaven must pronounce the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline on that nation. This is especially true for a Client Nation to God such as the United States of America. There is always a reason for war and it is clearly a demonstration of God allowing Extreme Divine Discipline for people saturated with EVIL and believers must recognize that wickedness and injustice are part of Evil along with failure of the individual to make Adjustment to the Justice of God. Overwhelming [National Arrogance](#) is an additional reason for war as divine judgment against that nation. HOWEVER, it only takes a small remnant of advancing or mature believers to preserve any nation when everything else is being destroyed.

Therefore, Going to war and killing the enemy who would destroy FREEDOM is HONORABLE and a thing which a strong believer will do as he represents his country professionally. To kill, to slaughter the enemy in battle is an honorable thing in a Just War. Therefore, when in battle in combat the believer must be one person, with one Frame of Reference and one set of Norms and Standards and Scale of Values, becoming a professional warrior, and when home again in civilian life he must have another Frame of Reference with normal Norms and Standards and a Scale of Values to be again a gentleman. He must have a different set of Norms and Standards and Scale of Values for each situation in order to not succumb to psychosis as a result of GUILT which he could develop from fighting and killing for one's nation and its freedoms. When one fights he must fight to destroy his opponents and in military service he must function to KILL or be killed and he must be focused on his primary objective, to destroy the enemy.

“War is an act of violence intended to compel the opponent to fulfill one's dictated will. Violence, that is to say, physical force is therefore the means; the compulsory submission of the enemy to one's will is the ultimate object. In order to attain this object fully, the enemy must be disarmed, and disarmament becomes therefore the immediate object of hostilities in theory. In such dangerous things as War, the errors which proceed from a spirit of BENEVOLENCE are the worst and to introduce into the philosophy of War itself a principle of moderation would be an absurdity.” General Carl Von Clausewitz

The Rise and Fall of Nations

Modern History is the resurgence of Nationalism, as part of the Plan of God vs Internationalism, which is a part of EVIL and a propaganda system for communist conquest and a definitive part of the conspiracy to destroy the United States and all western civilization

nations. Nations rise and fall based on biblical principles and God has established certain divine laws which are the basis for the rise and fall of ANY nation, whether the nation and its people are aware of them or NOT! Therefore, under these divine laws, the rise and fall of nations and the history of empires is based on the function of the Volition and the Norms and Standards of the soul of the individual citizen of the nation. This is the basis for the level of collective vigor of a people and the decline or success of a people. There is no such thing as “racial superiority” in history but there is a SOUL superiority and Historical Domination by peoples is not based on Race but on the MIND the SOUL of the people. Therefore, the Soul is the key to the rise and fall of nations which occurs based on the advancement or decline respectively of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Souls of the people. ([Dan 5](#))

The people of the United States of America have, for several generations, generally had weak souls and this country has been and continues to be totally IMMORAL in both its foreign and domestic policies. The concept of Equality among the people defies the dogmatic fact that People are not born, cannot live and do not die EQUALLY and they can not be made EQUAL by legislation and legislation in a legitimate government is to be designed to protect the life, freedom, rights and property of individuals ONLY. A perfect illustration is that Minority peoples cannot raise their standards through education and integration in education systems, which is totally IMMORAL. Integration of minorities into higher level education systems and requiring equal numbers of minority teachers in all schools is also IMMORAL because this DESTROYS the underlying principle behind legitimate education. Education is designed to EXPLOIT those with high IQ and high perspicacity abilities and the integration concept inevitably destroys this process. Lowering of College entrance standards to allow ignorant, stupid, emotional minority students to enroll has obvious repercussions and today in 2024 the average college student cannot hope to gain the education of 50 years ago let alone even approach the education of the 1930s because of the lowering of standards, concepts of equality and integration requirements. These things are what cause the decline of nations, which are instigated by the bleeding heart liberal who wants everyone to have the same level of success in life APART FROM THEIR OWN ABILITY, MOTIVATION AND VOLITION.

Military Functions in the Rise and Fall of Nations

The primary key consideration here is that there is never any basis for any nation to downgrade the status of its military because the very basis for freedom is Military Victory on the battlefield, especially in this United States of America for over 10 generations. In any nation in any governmental system, politicians STEAL Freedom and destroy it while it is the Military which preserves or restores it. History should be studied on the basis of War and military success in battles because it is in battles that freedoms are preserved or recovered. An appropriate analogy is that a Military Victory in Battle is like the REBOUND PROCEDURE in the Christian Way of Life, restoring what has been lost because of stupidity. Therefore, the Military establishment is the basis for recovery or preservation of all freedoms and the underlying support and basis for the true legitimate form of any governmental system, thus there is the Morality of War.

Spiritual Factors in the Rise and Fall of Nations

When everything else fails in a nation there is ultimately only one hope left, the spiritual factors. When a strong spiritual heritage is destroyed in a nation then that nation, especially a client nation to God, will be destroyed with it. This results from the destruction of the Right Lobe of the Soul in the people where their Norms and Standards and Scale of Values are destroyed by **Motivational Arrogance** with Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins. This begins with some level of Negative Volition by the unbeliever toward God, the Grace Plan of God and the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and in the believer toward Bible Doctrine which results in movement into the **8 Stages of Reversionism** with the various sublimation systems in the Frantic Search for Happiness. This can also begin with in either group with Negative Volition toward the **Laws of Divine Establishment** and **Divine Institutions** designed by God to preserve the Human Race. From this there is the development of maximum Scar Tissue on the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul eventually destroying its proper function. This is what has been occurring in the United States of America since, at the very least, the 1960s. This nations exists, today especially, with a maximum number of people who are ANIMALS with no Norms and Standards, no Frame of Reference and no Scale of Values of any consequence, as a result the majority of people having a destroyed Right Lobe of the Soul. There are also a maximum number of people in the United States who are AFRAID of these Animals and refuse to defend themselves or their nation against them. There are ‘minority’ and revolutionary groups like ‘antifa’ and ‘black lives matter’ and many others who have developed animal attitudes as a result of the destruction of their Soul Norms and Standards. There are a maximum number of people in government, who instead of wiping these degenerate and apostate people out of society by killing them on the spot or suppressing them by Lawful functions, cater to them because they FEAR them and these groups are accelerating the total destruction of the United States. These people include students in various universities and gang members in the ghettos of the cities, even governmental officials who cater to them constantly and many are animals and drug addicts and have totally destroyed their own Right Lobe of the Soul by the use of their own volition.

The Client Nation to God

What is a client or priest nation to God and what is its purpose? From the beginning of Human History with Ish (Adam) and his wife Ishah (Eve), after they were kicked out of the Garden of Eden, human beings were 1 race and had 1 language. In the time of Noah, angelic beings infiltrated and attempted to corrupt the Human Race by cohabitation with humans producing a mixed angelic-human race, the Nephalim. God destroyed all these who rejected him with the flood and started the new era of Human History with 8 believers, Noah and his family. These eventually formed the 3 major races, Semitic, Japhetic, and Hamitic derived from Noah’s 3 sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth. However these 3 races still had only 1 language. Evangelism throughout this stage of Human History, where the gospel of Christ from **Gen 3:15** was proclaimed by word of mouth, which was possible because there was only 1 language. However, mankind again abused this situation and tried to reach God himself by building the Tower of Babel, setting up a system of internationalism and worshiping idols while

rejecting God. God at this point of history dispersed the people throughout the geographic earth and caused them to have varying languages. At this point in Human History, in order for there to still be effective Evangelism of the people of the earth, there had to be a select group of people who would go out to other areas of the world and learn the language there and proclaim the gospel of Christ to the people living there. These people were to be the ancient world missionaries. The client or priest nation is the nation which has been selected by God to preserve, protect and disseminate the Gospel of Christ and the Doctrines of Scripture. In ancient times the Jews were selected to be the missionary nation by God for this purpose. Abram, a gentile Chaldean from the city state of Ur, was selected by God and told to leave his country and family to serve God. Abram was a bit reticent with regard to this and did what God wanted but tried to do it only on his own terms. Just like most Christians today. Eventually Abram grew up in his Spiritual Life and trusted God and his promise for a son but it took him until he was almost 100 years old to get there. (The principle is never be in a big hurry to do any [WORK for God](#) until his timing is right and until you grow up spiritually). He was promised by God to have “seed” meaning descendants which would be innumerable as a new race in Human History. This was the ORIGIN of the 4th race, the Jewish Race, formed on a Spiritual Basis by Abram making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, which has been preserved throughout human history to this very day despite unimaginable adversities. At the time of Moses when the Jews had been enslaved for 400 years in Egypt, (which was for the specific purpose of preparing them to become a separate nation), under the incredible leadership of Moses they left Egypt and eventually occupied part of the land God promised to Abraham in Palestine and became the nation of Israel. In the dispensation of the Age of Israel the purpose of the Jewish Race and nation was to serve God as the missionary nation to the world and preserve, protect and disseminate the gospel of Christ and the doctrines of scripture. They held this position rather unsuccessfully, from 1441 BC until 70 AD when the Age of Israel was INTERRUPTED by the period of history which is current today, the Church Age. Today in the Church Age, which has been going on for close to 2000 years now, the Jews are prohibited from being a priest nation to God and ONLY gentile nations can become a priest or client nation to God. In history since 70 AD various gentile nations have had the honor and responsibility of being the client nation to God. Some historical examples include, Rome, Sweden, Great Britain, and the United States of America. As one client nation goes down in history another rises up to take its place and provide service to God under his divine plan. Therefore 2 things are very clear at this time, 1st the United States of America IS a client nation to God still and 2nd the United States of America has failed miserably in its responsibility to God.

The Plan of God for the Client Nation

God has a plan for the whole of the Human Race and has provided for both the unbeliever and believer. God has provided the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions to sustain them both. These provide enough freedom for evangelism to effectively occur and for unbelievers who hear the Gospel of Christ to be able to use their volition to decide for or against The Lord Jesus, The Christ personally without any coercion positively or negatively. For believers this freedom enables them to use their volition freely to decide for or against consistent intake of Bible Doctrine and function in the Plan of God. At [Salvation Adjustment to](#)

[the Justice of God](#), He gives every new believer his Absolute Righteousness as the basis for his being the recipient of [Logistical Grace](#) support which is designed for sustaining the believer's life while he remains on this earth in order to provide equal opportunity to every believer for his advancement in the Spiritual Life. This logistical support is consistent for both those believers who will succeed and those who will fail in the Spiritual Life.

Evil is a factor which the believer must constantly face which was not judged in Christ on the cross because it is the Plan and Policy of Satan, for ruling the Human Race after the fall of Adam, along with its production of Human Good. This was not judged because the Human Race was established to demonstrate to Satan and all Angelic Creatures that the Love of God always works with the Justice of God and Righteousness of God for all in creation. Therefore, MAN is here to CHOOSE for the Grace Plan of God or the Evil Plan of Satan. ([Heb 5:13](#)) In the life of the believer a major issue is always to distinguish the difference between God's GRACE and Satan's Good and Evil. The more one desires to help the human race and fix the problems of mankind the greater the concentration of EVIL from the plan of Satan in his soul, driving his motivation. This is the frustration of the do good radical liberal, who means well in trying to protect the environment or provide "equality" for man but who does not realize that by much of his efforts he will cancel all benefits for mankind for many years because of his focus on some crusade in Arrogance. ([Rom 7:19-21](#)) Understand that not all [Human Good](#) production is bad for the Human Race and legitimate Human Good production is that which follows and supports the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. However, Believers are constantly warned to not be influenced by Evil but only by Grace from Bible Doctrine. For both the believer and unbeliever submission to divinely delegated properly authorized authority under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions prevents succumbing to the influence of Evil, and for the unbeliever this is legitimate Human Good production. ([Eccl 8:2-5](#))

The only way the believer can over come Evil with Bible Doctrine is to advance in the Plan of God but advancement in the Plan of God is ONLY possible through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine. Evil cannot ever be stopped through any form of social action, socialism, CHANGE or reform. Neither these or any crusade for the good of mankind will ever stop Evil and in fact merely intensifies Evil. These and much more are a part of that EVIL plan of Satan who as ruler of this world desires to provide a Perfect Millennial Environment on the earth BEFORE the 2nd advent of Christ. Therefore consistent function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) is the only way for the believer to stop Evil in his life. Crusades and social action in all forms are distractions to the believer from the Plan of God and purpose of God and NEVER overcome Evil. Things were much worse than people generally had realized in the client nation United States of America in 1979 and 1980. They are INFINITELY WORSE today in the 2nd decade of the 21st century so that the only hope for the United States then and surely now is:

- The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History.
- Spiritual Leadership free from [Arrogance](#) communicating accurate Bible Doctrine.
 - Through this function God often saves the nation not the people, parties, human powers, schemes or plans.

- Through this function God also saves all grace oriented MATURE believers, saturated with Metabolized Bible Doctrine and humility.
- The maintaining of a pivot or very strong remnant of mature believers (Today only a very small Jeshurun Remnant).

It is the responsibility of the Individual Christian in the client nation to fulfill the Plan of God for his life. The key to this function is consistent, persistent, daily function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception, Operation Z](#) to engage in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and then application of it to his life. In order for this to be possible the client nation must function based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions of God. These 2 areas are designed to protect and preserve the Human Race from its own self destructive tendency while living under the Evil Plan and Policy of Satan and provide an environment where by both personal and group evangelism can occur without interference and where personal Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God can also take place freely. This requires FREEDOM. Therefore, FREEDOM is the single most important thing in a nation and in life after Bible Doctrine, which in fact details and encompasses freedom's aspects totally. To establish and then maintain and protect freedom within a client nation there must be a strong military to oppose those outside the client nation who would destroy that freedom. In addition there must be a JUST system of law based on the Laws of Divine Establishment principles under a FAIR and IMPARTIAL Judicial and Law Enforcement process. It is unfortunately clear today that the United States of America has failed in every way to live up to these required parameters. However, as a part of the client nation to God it is still the responsibility of the individual believer to help preserve the client nation. The Christian must fulfill his duty to serve his country in some way in his life under the Plan of God to fulfill this responsibility. There may come a time when the Christian may have to fight and even to give up his life in the service of his country to fulfill the Plan of God for his life and to protect the FREEDOM of his client nation. This has occurred in the past many times beginning in the United States of America with the American War for Independence and was most dramatically displayed in the success of the United States of America in World War II. Therefore it is extremely important to understand War, when it is Just and when it is NOT and how to properly prosecute it. It is also necessary to understand different kinds of warfare and when each is to be used to the advantage of and for the protection, preservation or restoration of the client nation to God.

The Reality of Client Nation Function

Once military victory secures freedom for the client nation it is the function of individuals in the spiritual realm to perpetuate client nation function. Therefore, in the continued function of a client nation the true issue is "what are the believers doing?" Under the Plan of God the principle for the client nation is, "as goes the believer so goes the client nation". If the believer fails to advance to spiritual maturity through persistent and consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine and thereby fulfill Divine Good production as a royal ambassador for Christ under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit, then the purpose of freedom in the client nation is LOST. The result of victory in war provides or restores the opportunities under freedom for those who are believers to fulfill their function

in life and therefore, freedom sponsors client nation Modus Operandi. In proper client nation function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions the military establishment must be strengthened and perpetuated in time of peace to guarantee freedom from foreign aggression or domestic interference through revolution. It is a most difficult function in the client nation for the people to see value in a strong military during a time of peace. However, having a very strong military during times of peace is the real guarantee of peace. (Consider the History of Rome) The honorable profession of Law Enforcement secures the function of freedom against criminal activity and conspiracy within the client nation. The United States of America has miserably failed in both of these areas from the 1960s through to the early part of the 21st century. Law Enforcement is critical to maintaining freedom and establishment oriented client nation functions and NO ONE should ever be set above the law of the land for any reason. The separation of Church and State opens the door for proper client nation function in the spiritual realm. The real purpose of government with regard to “church” is to protect the freedom of religion and worship ensuring individuals can engage in worship without any interference, unless the “religion” is being forced on others. However, in the United States of America the government questions the validity of this because:

- People use religion to avoid taxation and this is Evil
- Men operate churches out of their garage to avoid taxation and are Evil
- Groups or organizations who sell ministerial degrees through the mail are criminal
- Cult and paramilitary religious organizations (the Jones cult and others) are Evil
- The National Counsel of Churches financially sponsors revolutionary organizations
- Pastors often try to assume authority over people outside the Local Church
- Pastors often try to organize people against communism or other ideologies
- Instead of teaching Bible Doctrine pastors initiate crusades against civil inequities

There cannot be freedom without separation of church and state. Under Freedom evangelization in the client nation provides options for the unbeliever to freely accept or reject Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. This is the primary function of the client nation and believers are kept alive to grow in Knowledge and Grace in the Plan of God and to lead people to Christ as individual witnesses or evangelists. Those individuals who express Positive Volition toward Jesus Christ form the nucleus for client nation spiritual functions. When this nucleus has formed then these believers, individually, must then decide what to do about Bible Doctrine. Failure or success for the believer in the Plan of God and his purpose for being supported by Logistical Grace provision, is related completely to his attitude toward Bible Doctrine and the resultant spiritual growth or lack thereof. For the believer in Jesus Christ thinking in life must have as its foundation and base Bible Doctrine. Bible Doctrine is the ultimate source of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and the foundation on which freedom is built for everyone in the Human Race. Without such Divine Viewpoint in his life the believer is lost and his only purpose for being alive under consistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine is to be used to test the commitment of growing believers who are under positive volition toward Bible Doctrine. He remains alive to continue to make more and greater wrong decisions until he runs out of options and is removed from this life under the Sin Unto Death, dying Divine Discipline. Therefore, it is a free will choice for individuals to believe in The Lord Jesus, The

Christ, which opens up options for other free will choices for their exploitation of client nation freedom. Daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine results in spiritual growth, advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity, fulfillment of the Plan of God, formation of the pivot of mature believers all which bring blessing by association to the client nation. Therefore once again it becomes clearly apparent that as goes the mature believer, the pivot, so goes the prosperity and security in the client nation.

It must be a Client nation function to support all Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine through freedom and this goes on to another factor which is missionary activity to foreign lands. This begins when in the Local Church certain spiritual gifts are recognized which are pertinent to sending believers to a foreign country where no client nation benefits exist. Missionaries go to areas of the world outside their client nation where client nation functions do not exist such as in the past in:

- Korea
- India
- Africa
- Afghanistan
- China
- Etc

This has resulted in millions of people who would have died and gone to the Lake of Fire now being face to face with the Lord. Today this influence has been and continues to be negated in Africa, India, and other areas by the arrogance of radical liberalism and independents without responsibility. It is the responsibility of the client nation to protect its missionaries AT ALL COSTS wherever they might go. Here again is seen the abject failure of the United States of America with its foreign policies of NOT protecting its citizens throughout the entire world.

Killing & Violence as Problem Solutions in Normal Times

The use of violence to solve problems in life never solves anything but creates greater problems. One of the things which destroys any effective system is to create a power structure, which overthrows the original system so that the system is gone and the power is all that is left. What remains in these situations is power encompassed by irresponsibility and thus it becomes in a nation a tyrannical dictatorship where all freedom and self determination is removed. When a system of authority in a nation is destroyed without replacing it all that is left is anarchy, lawlessness, dog eat dog insanity. Power outside the legitimate systems established by God, therefore, is tyranny; while power within the systems established by God is legitimate authority. Thus power minus the system is the function of the greatest Evil. Power under authority in a system allows individuals to work within the system so that everyone is restrained from destroying anyone else. When people come to power by means of “[power politics](#)” they destroy the system and when the system is destroyed the person who is trying to destroy it ultimately destroys himself.

There will be times for every believer when he is tempted to take law into his own hands and to use violence instead of leaving things in the hands of the Lord. Only in leaving things in the Lord's hands can the Laws of Divine Establishment principles be maintained and the

Integrity of God allowed to deal with the matters at hand. When confronted with a situation in which it appears that VIOLENCE will solve the problem the individual believer must use the Essence of God rationale and emphasize the application in reverse concentration with regard to the Integrity of God:

- The Righteousness of God will always be fair
- The Justice of God executes the judgments demanded by the Righteousness of God
- The Omniscience of God knows all the facts all the time
- The Sovereignty of God decides the most appropriate time for judgment

“Pivot Politics” emphasizes man's helplessness and simultaneously looks to the Grace of God for solutions thus relating the believer and his situation to divine solutions. Power politics emphasizes CHANGE as the key concept, while pivot politics emphasizes grace and maintaining the status quo while de-emphasizing change as the panacea of life. Change as in discarding the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions is not God's answer and not his solution and even if one has the power to make these types of changes it would not be compatible with the Plan of God. Therefore, power politics is man trying to play God and pivot politics is God solving man's problems without man's help. Change, in this reference, upsets establishment and replaces it with something worse such as tyranny or anarchy and loss of freedom. Change, wrought by the violence of “power politics”, is devastating to the Human Race while change wrought in the individual's soul by the ministry of God the Holy Spirit is a constant blessing to man. In the United States of America when violence was used to solve the problems of slavery in the 2nd War for Independence, it meant that the very system which guaranteed far reaching freedom for the citizens was destroyed and that system was state's rights. Any time violence, or a function of Evil such as conspiracy, is used to change a system, the purpose for which violence or conspiracy was engaged in is defeated. Once one resorts to violence to solve problems he enters into “power politics” and once he does this he is never the same person again. Killing those who oppose one's ideas or functions is how one becomes involved in the violence of “power politics”. Killing opponents results in making martyrs of them when they could have simply been discredited. Violence does not solve problems. Never forget the principle that the power of “pivot politics” is in thinking and proper use of authority and not in violence or assassination.

No matter how bad a ruler may be in any area there is a courtesy that is owed to the office he holds despite any and all failures of that individual. It is short sighted and ludicrous to assume that the failure of an individual in any office of authority at ANY level means that the system under which that authority exists is now invalid and useless. Violence never solves these kinds of problems and there must always remain the system of authority to fall back on. It takes true HUMILITY to accept and respond to authority especially when it is incompetent and inefficient. In the United States of America, because the franchise to vote has been vastly over extended, incompetence is constantly elected to government by the incompetent irresponsible voters and this results in an ingrained lack of trust and respect for those in authority. Under conditions like this it is easy to be enticed into revolution or violence because of the incompetence in governmental leaders.

To assassinate a person is often quite easy but it creates a martyr invariably adding momentum to whatever their cause may be. It is much better to get rid of them with finesse by discrediting or convicting them preventing being blamed for their destruction. No matter how great a man is add arrogance to him and you have a weak effeminate male or masculine female. Any person in arrogance is a sucker for any system of finesse and arrogance destroys the ability to recognize finesse and counter it. One of the most effective strategies for destroying an arrogant person is a threat strategy used so successfully throughout the 20th century by the communists of Russia from 1917. The idea here is that the most effective way to deal with an arrogant person is to frighten him. Being involved in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) he will be very vulnerable to being frightened because of the system interlocking him with impulsive and institutional arrogance. To assassinate Evil men is to convert them into heroes; to assassinate one thought of as a hero is to advance the cause of that hero. The threat strategy is a perfect counter attack because when a believer resorts to violence he over extends his attack leaving a gap in his own defenses.

Removing the opponents of the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and client nation functions is something to be left to the legal system when the legal system still maintains its integrity and functions properly under law. Killing the leaders in opposition to establishment principles must not occur by the individual believer because it will be used by the revolutionaries to set them up as martyrs and thereby strengthen their cause. However, when the believer is involved in an [organization](#) which functions in clandestine operations and [counter insurgency](#) efforts the intelligent thing to do is to publicly kill those who stand close to the ones in leading positions, the 2nd and 3rd in command under the leaders and consistently kill whoever replaces them to pass FEAR on to the leader and those he may attempt to choose for replacements. The smart person knows that by killing a jackass he then becomes a martyr and thus he becomes the rallying point for the movement he represents. However, if the Jackass is left alone then the movement ultimately will die as a result of his stupidity and incompetence. In normal times for normal people not involved in organized counter insurgency or clandestine warfare operations the dumbest thing to do is to become involved in assassinating someone and those who attempt to assassinate are stupid. (See the attempted assassination of Mr. Trump on July 23, 2024 in Butler, PA.) Many people in history like Martin Luther King have become hero's as a result of being assassinated. However, most of his past and current worshipers did not even know that King was communist oriented and used religion to advance communism but by killing him, he was made a hero to this very day for black Americans. Therefore the principle for normal people in normal times is that the worst thing to be done to try to solve any problem is to kill someone.

The worst thing to be done by any leader is to jump onto the side of "power politics" when the Lord has the situation already corrected. When the principles of "pivot politics" are violated by using violence "power politics" has been entered at the lowest level putting that person into subjection to those above him. "Pivot politics" reads the believer directly into the Plan of God and into the grace blessing from divine justice. When the believer puts himself under the wrong system, the Lord will sustain him there but he is ineffective as a result of not using Bible Doctrine. This one becomes a social action person and revolutionary and

completely wrong in what he thinks, says and does. (These are believers who Bomb Abortion Clinics) By using the sword of violence the great believer departs from the Essence of God and Plan of God rationales as solutions for his problems. Killing instantly without due process or proper reasoning appeals to people emotionally but when in a position of authority one cannot use emotion and cannot function based on emotion because there is nothing in emotion which supports the essential sense of responsibility which must accompany all authority. Proper emotion is what should be occurring when one knows he did something right, whether it is acknowledged or not, simply because it is great to know he has made something work right and it has been successful. In other words EMOTION responds to a Right thing done in a RIGHT way when it is operating properly. When emotion is out of control it destroys the thinking process in the soul so when one has authority he must not function based on emotion but must be lucidly correct in the orders he gives or risk completely losing control of any situation. When violence is used and control of the situation is lost the believer has abandoned the [Faith Rest Drill](#) (5 Stages) and by resorting to violence he has admitted the validity of violence as a solution. Then, for this believer a simple threat of violence to his person will drive him away in total fear. He will become a coward and cowardice will replace the function of the Faith Rest in his life. This cowardice will eventually change into Self Pity and then oscillate with Self Righteousness. These kinds of people are completely unstable and unable to ever properly handle even the slightest authority.

If people who have come ILLEGITIMATELY to power are to be gotten rid of these people must be taken into a court of law and they must be found to be ruling unlawfully and THEN if needed executed. Violence must never be used to remove a person from power or office in normal times when the judicial process is functioning with honor because using violence to remove a bad person will require the use of violence to maintain that position of power. Properly organized military action and capital punishment must be used to execute enemies of the country. Crime is perpetrated by people with a criminal mind and this type will never make good soldiers. A criminal mind rejects all authority except his own unless it suits his purpose to give lip service to it. A criminal is a loner and a loner on the battlefield is detrimental to any unit. Law must prevent criminals from serving in the military since any time a criminal accepts the authority of anyone it is ONLY for his own purpose. Capital punishment must be used in cases where the criminal has been convicted of “Capital” crimes such as Murder, Dope Pushing, Rape, Sexual Abuse especially of Children, Kidnapping, and any other crime which strongly violates the volition of another in some type of forced slavery. The principle is elucidated in [1Kings 19:1](#) and [Matt 26:52](#) which are references to crime or illegal violence or any system of using power or authority to destroy the freedom of others. These passages DO NOT refer to any military or Law Enforcement functions which are legitimate and legal uses of force and violence in the framework of their professional functions. When violence, which is authorized, is used in counter insurgency functions to preserve or restore the client nation functions and it has been successful, the killing, which is authorized under those conditions, MUST STOP and the proper system of law brought back into play to remove those who have continued to violate the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions as proper functions in the client nation. When a person takes the law into his own hands he is no better than the lawless problem he is trying to correct. When one rejects legitimate

authority, weak or strong, ignoring authority to cure a problem in the national entity, he creates lawlessness and potential dictatorship.

The power of the believer does not reside in human force, violence, intimidation or tyranny and using force and violence always creates greater problems. Therefore, clearly, lynch mobs, rioting and revolution are completely wrong. The power for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ resides in the Lord himself and the Bible Doctrine principles which he has provided and they are related to the fact that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History. The power of the believer is found in thought which can make or break him NOT in violence. These thoughts can be from Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul acquired through the Grace Apparatus for Perception or they can be related to the failure of thought which is the Arrogance which replaces it. Therefore, Bible Doctrine learned by every believer through concentration must be applied through reverse concentration and even success or victory does not ever mean the believer can stop thinking [Divine Viewpoint](#). In fact the believer is most vulnerable to defeat after any great spiritual victory. In any historical, natural or national disaster, when NOT involved in an organization focused on restoring the proper functions in the client nation to God, neither the Plan of God, the Essence of God, the Logistical Grace nor the Afortiori rationales justify giving an order for violence. Violence is never justified by the individual in retribution, vengeance, solving personal or national problems and it is sin and also violation of Laws of Divine Establishment freedom.

However, any and every person always has the right to defend his life against a criminal and to stop him if he attacks. It is justifiable to do whatever is needed to stop the criminal and if they intend to use violence at the level of lethal force then the individual can use whatever is needed to stop them including lethal force. The most unrealistic thing ever to happen in the United States of America was the 1968 gun control act, which was one of the most emotional pieces of legislation, which in effect opened the door to taking the effective means of self defense in the forms of guns from lawful citizens and thereby allowing the central government to RUN OVER the rights and freedoms of the citizens without any consequence. The Gun gives the lawful citizens the chance to defend his own life when confronted by the danger of criminality in any form AND it gives him the chance to defend himself against an out of control tyrannical government. The Gun is NOT evil but is a TOOL for self defense to preserve individual freedom and if the ability of the individual to easily and readily access them for use is removed what recourse does he have to defend his freedom?

When the Impulsive Arrogance of one in a position of authority says to simply kill men it is a political crime. Political crimes are the worst crimes of all as clearly demonstrated in the Modus Operandi of all communist governments. In addition, the murder of innocent civilians of a defeated enemy is an erroneous solution (although there are exceptions to this) even if suggested by an a believer in advanced Spiritual Maturity. He is most likely under the influence of impulsive arrogance and has malfunctioned under the Faith Rest Drill ^(5 Stages)• Slaughter of those innocents who are forced to live under Evil is trying to solve Evil by the use of Evil. When under the influence of Evil orders in the name of humanity, the death of a

group of people, is Evil added to Evil and thereby destroys the effectiveness of the believer who is in charge. When an enemy has been decisively defeated and his ability to wage war has been totally eliminated, those who remain must then be addressed under the proper system of Law and when necessary executed after conviction and the remainder evangelized and provided with proper missionary functions. This is what Gen. Douglas MacArthur did in Japan after accepting their UNCONDITIONAL SURRENDER at the end of World War II.

Violence lust means one will either be in or out of the picture in a situation. If he wins a fight he is IN, if he loses a fight he is OUT, and once he resorts to violence to successfully solve his problems he must remember some day someone bigger or stronger or more vicious will beat him also. Once he commits his way to solving problems through violence by beating everyone around him he will eventually be beaten very badly by someone else. No matter how good a person may be someone is always better when it comes to violence. Therefore once an individual person has accepted violence as the means of solving problems he has in effect accepted his own doom. This is the principle described in the bible where it is said, “he who lives by the sword (Violence as a solution to personal problems) will die by the sword (Greater legal violence)”. Every person alive has the right to defend his own and the lives of others close to him and his property with whatever violence he can muster. HOWEVER, no one, especially the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ has any right to INITIATE violence to solve any problem. Use of violence to solve problems causes a person to expose his involvement in the Arrogance of Pettiness. Nice people who start solving problems with violence become bullies and petty. Bullies are created by their acceptance of a principle where they believe that they are tougher than anyone else in their environment and if anyone disagrees then they initiate a fight. In the growth and maturation of boys they need to learn to defend themselves but must not abuse this knowledge and push others around with their strengths. All bullies are petty and take instant likes or dislikes to others in order to push them around by mental or physical intimidation. Pettiness is a mental ploy which often results in mental illness. Pettiness is Irresponsibility and Irrationality combined and results in a miserable life lacking capacity for happiness. It is Arrogance which produces pettiness which when combined with power lust produces violence lust. Once a person abuses power and authority by resorting to violence he becomes a slave to the Evil system of “power politics” and therefore vulnerable to intimidation by greater power and authority. This is true of nations as well as individuals

Testing & Deliverance

The Old Sin Nature has 3 manifestations:

- Personal sins – including Crime as violations of the mandates or character of God, collected and imputed to and judged in the humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross.
- Human Good – production of the Plan and Policy of Satan to rule this world completely apart from God
- Evil – saturated functions of the Plan and Policy of Satan to rule this world and enslave mankind

This sets up an understanding of the basis for Satan’s Appeal in the Trial of the Angelic

Conflict. Evil and Good are the satanic policy and production in the Angelic Conflict to enable Satan to rule angelic creation and during the Appeal portion of the Angelic Conflict, the History of the Human Race. Believers must therefore be tested in the field of Good and Evil. Human Good production with its basis in Evil are for believers distractions from and alternatives to the Divine Good production under the Grace Plan of God. Sin was judged and removed as an issue in this historical appeal of Satan because the issue must remain a choice by man between the Grace Plan of God or the Evil Plan of Satan, between Divine Good production under Grace provisions or Human Good production under Evil provisions in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Therefore the believer often finds himself in disaster situations because he has become involved in social action or human good production under the influence of the Evil policy of Satan.

God does not leave us helpless in the devil's world but provides systems of preparation in testing for the believer. In every case there will never be given to a believer a great test for which the requisite Bible Doctrine has not been provided. Unfortunately, many believers do not persist in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and MISS the provision for the crisis. Believers must prepare consistently over a period of time and continue to take and pass many small tests in life in order to be ready to apply Bible Doctrine for the big test when it comes. In the Plan of God each believer is on his own and MUST rely on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to solve his own problems. God always provides a way of escape from all levels of testing. ([1Cor 10:13](#)) This is true for both the individual believer and the client nation collectively. For the believer who is not involved in continuous personal sin and neglect of rebound, testing will catch or overtake him for various reasons but there will be nothing which is unusual for mankind. The only testing which ever comes to the believer is that which is from and about mankind. God has promised to protect the believer from demon or satanic attack thus the believer cannot be directly attacked by nor possessed by demons in the Church Age because of the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit. However, the believer can be demon obsessed, under strong demon influence based on the principles of Evil, because of unquestioningly believing the satanic Lie as a result of consistent rejection of Bible Doctrine and the development of Scar Tissue of the Soul and intensification of Arrogance.

Therefore, every believer will be constantly tested in the course of his life so that he can learn to apply the Bible Doctrine which he has learned or should have learned and thus be prepared for any historical or national crisis. However, for there to be legitimate testing for the believer the situation must be hopeless and the believer must be helpless. Believers often fail a test by finding some way to meet the problem by means of human resources which makes the test invalid so that he gains no benefit from it. In this case testing can be turned to Divine Discipline when the believer fails. Thus, in historical crisis the believer must use the Modus Operandi of doctrinal response to testing and thereby receive blessing for doing so. Persistence in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine means continuation in the Plan of God, therefore, the logical expectation of the advancing believer should be for more testing and more opportunity to apply Bible Doctrine. Each testing is a training exercise preparing the believer for historical or national disaster or crisis even WARFARE. It is because of this that believers who have consistent Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine will be able to

instantly make application of Bible Doctrine to the crisis.

As the believers in the client nation learn more Bible Doctrine God holds off major disasters so that the believers can face and overcome collective historical disaster or personal and extremely difficult situations or pressures of life. (This was the historical situation in the United States of America in the late 1970s and 1980s) God will not permit the believer to be tested beyond the level of the Bible Doctrine he has provided for him to learn. However, God will provide testing for all the Bible Doctrine that the believer has accumulated and will learn BUT it is the responsibility of each believer to take advantage of the provision and the logistical support which is designed to assist in that learning. This will result in the disaster or pressure being turned to blessing when Bible Doctrine is applied to the situation both during the time of enduring the pressure and after the testing is completed. Testing or suffering is a reality in order for blessing to be provided. The believer must not stand around and feel sorry for himself and weep and wail when there is trouble and pressure in life because the Bible Doctrine which is supposed to be resident in his Stream of Consciousness of his Soul has been made available so that he can link it to the situation. In addition, the believer will only be tested for the level or content of Bible Doctrine he has in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul IF he has continually exposed himself to Doctrinal Teaching. He will not necessarily be tested concerning all that doctrine which he has actually been exposed to which may be beyond his capacity to metabolize at that time. Again, however, the believer is responsible to expose himself to Bible Doctrine teaching and function properly in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of it consistently. Sometimes it takes days or months or even years for the believer to metabolize advanced doctrines and link them categorically so that they can be applied effectively using the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages). The believers with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will be the ones who can apply Bible Doctrine to the simple pressures of life and also to crisis or disaster. If the believer fails in the learning of the Bible Doctrine which God provides by neglect or rejection of it, then the testing will most certainly overwhelm him and be disciplinary in nature.

Testing and pressure often give the believer the feeling of isolation so that there can often develop a sense of self pity and that the world has passed by completely ignoring the plight of this poor believer. The feeling is that no one knows and no one cares if he is even alive. This Mental Attitude is the key to failure in any testing. The Plan of God ensures that billions of years ago each and every believer was in the mind of God. God, in Eternity Past, cared about each individual believer and this begins with his Foreknowledge. The Foreknowledge of God is what his Omniscience fed into the Divine Decree which contains ONLY every thought, motivation, decision and action which HAS, IS, WOULD or WILL OCCUR in Human History. Therefore, the Foreknowledge of God means that in Eternity Past God knew all about every believer and there can be nothing which will overtake a believer from blessing to testing to disaster which God did not know about and which he thus prepared support for him. Therefore, under the provisions of Logistical Grace God provides whatever the need is for any testing, pressure or disaster in life. Therefore, for believers only, no matter how they die or how they live, GOD knew all about each of them personally and has never forgotten about any one of them. Believers under pressure in life will be tempted to fall into Self Pity and Self

Righteous Arrogance and all the negative things which occur in thinking under pressure conditions. Believers can get away with these failings until disaster or crisis occurs historically or nationally and then they will inevitably fail and fall to the wayside.

The basis for deliverance of a client nation and blessing for that nation is always only from the Justice of God imputing blessing to the Righteousness of God in each mature believer. Only the pivot of mature believers delivers the client nation in time of national crisis and provides for the blessings of prosperity in normal times. The integrity of the individual believer is determined by the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Consider that the Integrity of God is the Righteousness of God + the Justice of God. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, the expression of faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, God gave every new believer his own Absolute Righteousness. During “Phase II” of the Plan of God for the believer, the Christian Way of Life, the believer is to accumulate a maximum level of what makes up the Justice of God, the Thinking or Mind of Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)) therefore combining it with the Righteousness of God to form Integrity in the believer. The Integrity from Absolute Righteousness imputed at salvation and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul + Loyalty to that doctrine == Honor in the believer. Therefore it is the mature believer who learns Bible Doctrine who is the stability of the nation. Some of these believers who have made Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are in the military, some are business men, some are ladies and some children. However, Pseudo Integrity under the Plan of Satan results from Loyalty to Evil so that Evil + False or Pseudo Loyalty == Dishonor which inevitably when wide spread among the population destroys the nation. There is never conflict between true loyalty and virtuous integrity unless and until Arrogance infiltrates the soul.

No nation will ever be delivered by any politician nor any part of a federal or central government. When a client nation moves too far into the degeneracy of the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) and the Apostasy of [Reversionism](#) then God must shock them with 4 terrible cycles of Divine Discipline and there is no public election which will save the nation from this even with good policies and conservatives in the executive, legislative and judicial branches of the government. The deliverance of client nation United States of America must come exactly the same as it did for Israel during the ministry of Isaiah else this nation will suffer the fate of Judah during the ministry of Jeremiah. Therefore it is National Integrity from the adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions or the whole realm of Bible Doctrine which is the deliverance of the client nation. All mature believers have this integrity and the people in general can also have integrity IF they will, maybe yes and maybe no, adhere to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

Therefore, the deliverance of any client nation is based on the pivot of mature believers and those believers and unbelievers who function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution principles. National Integrity comes from Loyalty to the absolute truths found in Bible Doctrine and / or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and also includes loyalty to consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of

Bible Doctrine in either format. Thus it is possible for Loyalty to conflict with Integrity derived from Bible Doctrine when people become careless about their Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine from these sources. It is Self discipline and enforced academic discipline resulting in concentration on the principles of the Bible Doctrine from scripture including the Laws of Divine Establishment which removes all conflict between integrity and loyalty. For some, individually, there will be only Self Induced Misery and Divine Discipline because they have become careless and distracted from Bible Doctrine and lost their consistency in Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or establishment principles. However, for the positive advancing believer, the use of the [REBOUND Procedure](#) can convert Divine Discipline to blessing in disaster while Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for the unbeliever can do the same. As client nation United States of America closes in on the time of national disaster there will be more and greater distractions for those who must continue to be consistent in their intake of Bible Doctrine.

Whenever Bible Doctrine is presented including any aspect of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, and believer and unbeliever both say no to these, a layer of Scar Tissue of the Soul begins to be formed. When **NO** is the answer to doctrine over and over the layers of Scar Tissue of the Soul increase to the point of the person entering into “Strong Delusion” and thus only being able to believe the Lie which is from the Evil Plan and Policy of Satan. When this is combined with the Arrogance of Self Pity and Self Righteousness the result is a Guilt complex. When this occurs in the general population of a nation they then try to solve the problems of all of mankind by human efforts and ultimately destroy their country. This is the development of the American Volunteer Army since the 1980s and the provision of massive levels of foreign aid to other countries to bribe them to Like and Side With the United States. All of this results in a total divorcement from reality and will readily and quickly bring on a general or collective psychosis. The United States of America is a client nation to God and today it is in the final stages of the 4th cycle of Divine Discipline or potentially has already moved into the irresolvable 5th cycle. Every normal avenue of solution to this nations problems is log jammed with liberalism, the degeneracy of arrogance, the apostasy of reversionism, humanitarianism, racism, internationalism, escalating cold war and insurgent guerrilla war scenarios, etc., which are destroying the United States from within and threatening it from outside. At this time the communist conspiracy to control the United States of America and rule the world is making great advances while there is constant failure in both policy and practice internally in America. The United States has had and continues to have foreign and domestic policies which are saturated with Evil and cause this nation to turn its back on those nations which it should be supporting and give money in exchanged for desired friendship to those that should be destroyed. The United States is, through its cowardly attitudes, directly responsible for the destruction of $\frac{1}{3}$ to $\frac{2}{3}$ of the people of the world under communism. This has systematically resulted because believers, the only true hope for the nation, have become totally involved in social action rather than spiritual growth.

This nation has already fulfilled in detail every major historical trend which led to the fall of the Roman Empire in the 4th century AD. There is BIG central government, HUGE since Franklin Roosevelt, which has been trying ineffectively to compete with free enterprise and has

been trying to control and destroy big business, even to the proclaiming of the false concept that SMALL business is the source of the nations prosperity. Conservatives tend to be stupid and fight among themselves and also become involved in the complete idiocy of antisemitism and because of their stupidity the radical liberal democrats have been able to control the country. The bottom line for the United States of America and any client nation in history is that Bible Doctrine as the mind or thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)) and the voice of God the Holy Spirit is the only source of deliverance for the nation. Therefore, the nations survival depends on the individual believer's attitude toward Bible Doctrine. Public opinion, the majority voice, has never saved anything or anyone in all of Human History and does not mean anything in reality. The preservation and deliverance of this country, IF it can even occur today, will be through the people who know their attitude toward Bible Doctrine is the ONLY SOLUTION and their advance toward or status as part of the remnant of believers is the critical issue. God's plan never depends on ONE MAN and the United States of America's survival depends on the mature believers who reach and remain in the Pivot or the Remnant. When one gets down to the basic principles of the Plan of God, he sees that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and does so THROUGH the pivot of mature believers to preserve His Client Nation.

National or Historical Crisis in the Client Nation

Since there MUST BE Testing of the believer before disaster in order for him to survive the disaster it must be recognized that Christians suffer in many situations under any form of government for many different reasons. Some are for blessing and some are for Divine Discipline, therefore in every Christian's life some suffering is Divine Discipline and some is Testing designed for blessing and advance in the Spiritual Life. When suffering is for Divine Discipline, whether it is individual or collective in the client nation, the issue is always sin. When suffering is testing designed for blessing the issue is always Grace. When the issue is sin the only logical approach for believers is to engage the function of the Rebound Procedure. ([1John 1:9](#), [1Cor 11:31](#), [Ps 32](#), [Ps 38](#)) However, this is contrary to popular belief among Christians who think that the major issue in the Christian Way of Life is SIN, BUT IN FACT IT IS the GRACE OF GOD which provided the solution for sin at the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross and sin is only an issue in secular social life. When the issue of suffering is GRACE the only logical approach to this suffering is the Faith Rest Drill ^(5 Stages) and the application of the [Rationales of Bible Doctrine](#) from one's own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the situation.

Cleansing a Nation

There are 2 major systems for the cleansing of any nation:

- Economic depression
- WAR

These are both designed to bring to the top the noblest of men and remove from the land those holding back a nation and its functions and freedoms. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will always be delivered from economic disaster or warfare. ([Job 5:19-27](#), [Ps 33:18-19](#)) God will put up the Wall of Fire around mature or maturing believers against communism or islam which are constantly trying to corrupt the nation from

within using socialism and religion. No matter what great or small armies or forces move across the chess board of Human History the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God has a wall of fire protection surrounding him. Whether his nation itself is preserved around him or NOT, he himself is always preserved.

Testing Before Crisis

Before any believer is ready for historical crisis he must be tested under social, professional, business, and personal situations but all the testing is to be handled exactly the same way by proper use of the complete function of the Faith Rest Drill ^(5 Stages). Problems in life are not there for the believer to whine and complain about but to drive him to advance in the Spiritual Life and to prepare him for far greater disaster. Before God, no matter how many times one fails on a day by day basis, the key to his Spiritual Life is his attitude toward Bible Doctrine making GRACE the major issue for the Christian. When maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine resides in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then there is the reality that God is faithful and from the beginning of the one's entry into the Plan of God it includes Logistical Grace and the Essence of God which when formed into doctrinal rationales can be used in overcoming the pressures of any testing. If the believer cannot apply Metabolized Bible Doctrine from his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in time of normal life for suffering from divine discipline for sin or testing for blessing, he will never be able to apply it in time of crisis where there is great violence and crime in the land and when he is likely to become a victim. This believer certainly will not be able to function properly in any organization which is focused on the restoration of the client nation to God.

The believer should in time of pressure always think in terms of Grace and ensure that he is current with God in terms of rebound functions. By thinking only in terms of sins, either one's own or someone else's, when under testing he will fail. This failure in pressure situations when thinking about another's sins results from judging, and when thinking about personal sin results in involvement in the Arrogance of Guilt, Self Righteousness or Self Pity. For each and every believer the issue is not whether he has or has not sinned or will or will not sin in the future, but that even when sin is the problem the use of the [rebound procedure](#) returns the issue to GRACE. Therefore always, when under pressure in life, the believer should think in terms of GRACE, where the rationale of Logistical Grace says, "I am alive and thus God has a plan for my life". War is testing used collectively for client nation failures and is often used by God as disaster to provide Divine Discipline for the failed nation. This has been occurring in the United States of America for many decades since the end of World War II. When a nation loses a war it is part of the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline on that nation. The United States has lost in Korea, Vietnam and now Afghanistan and is on the very brink of the end of the 4th cycle of Divine Discipline awaiting the destruction to come by the 5th cycle. ([Is 3:16-26](#), [Jer 6:22-23](#))

It appears that the United States may again have a short reprieve given it from the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline, or at least the United States is now experiencing "Grace before JUDGMENT". It may be that Mr. Trump has again been put into office to solidify the position of radical liberals who oppose the proper function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the

continuation of this great nation as a client nation to God and therefore enable their destruction OR by his overall rejection the destruction of this nation. If this is true, and it appears to be, the United States has a reprieve, an OPPORTUNITY, and to have any chance to survive as a nation it will most likely be engaged in warfare. If the population keeps on being diametrically opposed then there will be civil war at best. Believers will most surely all be involved and must learn the proper use of the weapons they possess as part of their function “living as unto the Lord” and use them well when necessary. NEVER, NOT FOR EVEN 1 SECOND, looking back and being disturbed at the corpses of the enemy when they have killed to preserve themselves or the client nation to God. It is the responsibility as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ to kill the enemies of the client nation and of God and one should be able to do it without one qualm or one second of lost sleep.

Military Preparation vs Politics

There never has been nor will ever be any substitute for taking the offensive in war. It is the offensive which always wins historically. In American history, only when American armies go on the defense do they lose and they only go on the defensive because of politicians who are always in fear of public pressure. Politicians always fail in times of relative peace and then when war breaks out there is nothing to fight with so the military has to go on the defensive to be able to prepare for the war and this results always in losing the greatest warriors. These men sacrifice their lives so the nation can prepare for war LATE in the game. This is also true when politicians are in control of war such as in the end of World War II, Korea, Vietnam and Afghanistan where the military was prohibited from becoming offensive in its function and withdrawn when it had the potential to WIN by total destruction of the enemy.

If General MacArthur had been allowed to cross the Yalu river and continue his envelopment tactics he would have defeated the North Koreans and also the Chinese communists as well and we would not have Chinese communism and no split in Korea today. As a result, the United States lost the initiative in Korea and when ever an army loses the initiative MEN are sacrificed and armies destroyed. If units persist in sitting behind defenses even the dumbest tacticians will sooner or later find a way to get to them, even if it takes months to do it. Look at Diem Bien Fu and the French Foreign Legion. Always the force in war which wins is the one which takes the initiative in battle. Therefore, a sure means of bringing defeat to a nation is to continuously adopt the failed strategies used in failures by other nations. This has been clearly demonstrated by the concept of DEFENSE and DEFENSIVE ACTIONS. This has unfortunately been forced to be adopted by the United States military many times because politicians have prevented there being enough troops to defend anything in the United States when War breaks out in history.

The United States constantly invites trouble from 2nd rate nations and has really not advanced the military in any way for decades as a result of politicians using it for social experimentation. Today the military is scrambling to try to come up with hypersonic missiles or defense systems against these first strike weapons having lagged in their development, while the nation provides enhanced welfare benefits to scum and illegal aliens permitted to remain alive in this nation. The world has now seen the effective testing and development of hypersonic deployment

vehicles by both Russia and China. The United States has the smallest navy in its history and basically is incapable of building sufficient replacements and has relegated this function to JAPAN. The American government has completely destroyed the youth of the nation by abolishing the draft and universal military service. America has done everything wrong which can be done to bring on military disaster, the military industrial complex even contracts out sophisticated weapons parts production to foreign countries. The liberal radical politicians have been for decades trying to remove weapons from the hands of lawful citizens and the Russians, Chinese and moslems want this to happen so they can invade with impunity. The only stabilizing factor is Bible Doctrine in the souls of mature believers and The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History and today Mature Believers are few and far between.

Military Preparedness is essential for the survival of any nation especially a client nation to God. All professional military men understand today that they are outnumbered and their equipment, numbers and logistical capacity are far exceeded by what the communists and even moslem terrorists possess. The soviets have again militarily outstripped the United States in every way and are being followed or equaled by the Chinese and they do not allow welfare nor socialism state functions but have a definitive system of slavery so that everyone is a slave to the state. Both function under the principles of world domination by communism and are focused on conquering the United States in any way possible and sooner or later Americans will have to KILL communists and moslems IN THIS NATION and all over the world or be destroyed as a nation. The Russians through their president have made a laughing stock of this nation by publicly proclaiming that the course the United States is on today is identical to what occurred in the Bolshevik revolution of 1917 in Russia and that they consider that to have been WRONG. This nation as a whole is sound asleep in this 21st century and simply awaiting the national destruction which very well may be inevitable.

Civilian Interference with Military Actions

Every civilian person, whether individuals of prominence or government officials, who has ever interfered with the function of the military and caused the death of even one Military Personnel as a result, should be stood up before a firing squad and EXECUTED for Treason. Flavius Renatus – a Military Writer in the later days of the Roman empire became very concerned when the Roman army was not being victorious because of civilian interference. The fact is that NO military has ever succeeded without INTENSIVE military training and believe it or not INTENSIVE training must be DANGEROUS to the trainee to some degree because WAR IS DANGEROUS to the soldier to the ultimate degree. Therefore, every person who ever complained about the intensity of military training or wrote congress because training was too tough has done great harm to the military establishment and is personally responsible for the deaths of many men. Military training and functions since the 1960s and in fact even in World War II and Korea, Vietnam and the Middle east had come under some civilian interfering influence. At this time in the 21st century the American military has been destroyed by civilian interference into every form and level of education especially military training. Civilian interference with military training in the United States has been ridiculous and today is in fact beyond imagination with women and homosexuals being allowed into combat groups. This started initially in North Carolina when a few boys in Marine boot camp drown in marshes on

the march and people started protesting to their senators. Then the senators and congressmen began to interfere and the training has been systematically degraded to the point of it being pitiful. Congressmen have interfered to this date so that the Drill Sargent can only make a recruit do 10 push ups at a time lest he hurt him or his psyche. When during World War II General George Patton hit a coward on his helmet several times, and was required to publicly apologize for that, this was the beginning of liberal stupidity in the military. This was interference by Roosevelt and the stupidity of allowing him to influence military functions by Eisenhower and every other senior officer who allowed this to happen. Patton should have slapped this man silly and all his senior officers should have APOLOGIZED TO HIM for allowing the press to pressure him. This must stop and military training MUST return to being extremely intensive and demanding if the United States of America is to survive in the future.

Divine Institutions for Preservation of Nations

The Divine Institutions are principles or systems set up by God for the survival of the Human Race which protect mankind from self destruction and premature termination of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. Just as the 'LAW of GRAVITY' applies to both believer and unbeliever so do the Divine Institutions.

Divine Institution #1 == Volition or Free Will

This is freedom of choice and the right to live and produce in compatibility with one's abilities and motivations without violation of common law or another person's freedoms. ALL people are born with FREE WILL VOLITION of the soul. However, the Free Will function of any individual must be limited by a system of common law in order to prevent violation of another persons volition. This includes the freedom to accept or reject the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for all human sins as the means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The true fact is that the entire purpose of Divine Institution #1 is to give every member of the Human Race the opportunity to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or not, FREELY, and EVERY human being ever to exist has had and will have a chance for Salvation.

Divine Institution #2 == Marriage

This is based on a Law of God which says that there IS one Right Man or Right Woman for each member of the Human Race of OPPOSITE GENDER and Marriage protects this Divine Institution. The framework of boundaries for Right Man and Right Woman in marriage begins with it being the permanent residence for Category II Love and thus is the basic stabilizer of the Human Race. Marriage has been designed by God to orient both male and female to their proper perspective in life and to be the basic stabilizer of life and if every married couple had their Right Man or Right Woman there would be NO WAR.

Divine Institution #3 = Family

Homo Sapien is the most helpless creature ever to exist at the point of physical birth and in order for a human infant to survive to adulthood someone must do EVERYTHING for them and

THIS ILLUSTRATES GRACE in principle. In order for Christians as a whole to survive in this world ruled by Satan under principles of Evil, GOD must do everything for them. This consequently requires stability in the home for there to be the greatest benefit to the children. By means of the Home, children must be TRAINED by their parents in the proper functions of LIFE with regard to respect for authority, the principles of freedom, proper use of volition, respect for Law and Order and respect for the rights, privacy and property of others. Christian parents must also train their children regarding the Gospel of Christ and then the details of the Bible Doctrines of the Word of God.

Divine Institution #4 – Nationalism

A Nation is simply a number of people grouped together for combined functions and having their rights, privacy, property, freedom and life protected by a centralized government. The Human Race accumulated in nations can be divided into 3 categories based on:

- Race
- Geography
- Language

These divisions are essential for the survival of the Human Race and nationalism is based on any one or any combination of these and is the system of ORDER designed by God for man collectively. Nationalism has common law and culture and the legitimate law is designed to protect the life, freedom, rights, property, privacy, business even the social life of the individual. The culture is derived from the thought patterns of the people collectively. To protect the rights of each individual in the nation from internal attacks there must be a system of legitimate common law, Law Enforcement and Judicial Administration which must be OBJECTIVE and based on the Laws of Divine Establishment. To protect the rights of the individuals in the nation and the overall function of the nation from external attacks or interference there must be an effective Military establishment and this must be objective and based on the Laws of Divine Establishment as well. There must be some type of legitimate government administration and its functions MUST be based totally on understanding and adhering to both the Laws of Divine Establishment and these Divine Institutions. In government administration there must be a means of material support through TAXATION and legitimate personal income tax should be a FIXED income tax exactly the same percentage for every individual. There must be a legitimate economic system which must be based on free enterprise and there must be separation of Economy and State functions and the system must be totally based on the law of supply and demand. The legitimate economy of the nation must be without any government interference so that even in economic depression, which is a GOOD thing for an economy allowing a nation to purge the weak in business and life thereby wiping out the incompetent, there must be NO government support provided. When a government tampers with free enterprise the nation collects individuals who are like rabid dogs that infect everyone and this results in a RAVING MAD NATION. Socialism in any of its functions is ILLEGITIMATE and is ANTI GOD, ANTI Christ and ANTI BIBLICAL, however, Charity is authorized, and recommended and taught by Bible Doctrine but socialism as a government or economic system is not charity and is totally destructive to the people. Under socialism as the Right Lobe of the Soul is destroyed by false principles of function, there comes to the front the concept of the Greatest Good for the Greatest Number which is straight from EVIL and a

complete FARCE. In addition there must be complete separation of Religion and State. It is the designed purpose of MAN to CHOOSE to accept or reject a personal relationship with God through acceptance of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for all human sins. RELIGION is the antithesis of this designed by Satan specifically to deceive and distract man from making this decision. However, Government must never interfere with the individual's free will to CHOOSE Religion vs Christianity.

The Issue of Freedom

For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, next to Christ himself, Freedom must be the most important thing in his life. Freedom is much more important than any crusade because any time one starts on any crusade it inevitably destroys some area of freedom. Freedom is the primary essential in the function of mankind in the Angelic Conflict. Freedom is necessary for man to be able to CHOOSE between the Grace Plan of God and the Evil Plan of Satan. Without Freedom no man could make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and no man could advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, Freedom is Essential and it resolves the !!Angelic Conflict!! and is more valuable than any other thing in Human History including gold, gems, land, love, etc. Under the principles revolving around freedom, the whole system of divine solutions for the believer are operational at all times. It is God's intention that freedom always exists somewhere and it is a prerequisite for any nation to be a client nation to God. The issue is and always has been in Human History, "What is the correct solution to the Evil of the Plan of Satan, power politics or pivot politics"? Believers must discover what the Modus Operandi of God is in PIVOT POLITICS. Considering this issue of pivot and power politics there must be another question answered which is, "What is the responsibility of the believer"? Bible Doctrine says pivot politics is correct and offers solutions through individuals without tampering with collective human freedoms. Satan says power politics, which through violence exchanges one system of Evil for another set of Evils, is the answer to the human condition. Power Politics uses social action, muck raking, crusades, violence, assassination, revolution, etc. If God permitted power politics to run loose without restraint then the Human Race would eradicate itself and would no longer exist. God put Divine Establishment laws into effect ensuring that all systems of power politics eventually change back to the Pivot Politics involving the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions in order to continue else humanity would destroy itself. Therefore, in any society, change can occur without tampering with human freedom or it can occur by changing things forcibly and thereby going from good to bad or bad to FAR WORSE. Bible Doctrine explains that under pivot politics solutions are based on the individual without tampering with the freedom of others and this must be the believer's attitude and orientation in life. Therefore, all improvements in society are personal and individual without interfering with or destroying freedom with the singular exception being the control, punishment or prevention of crime or foreign aggression. Therefore, Power Politics is clearly demonstrated in revolution which is always exchanging established Evil for non-established Evil. Power politics is change by invoking tyranny, self righteous arrogance, disruption of normal life and above all destruction of freedom using violence and the slaughter of the innocent. Pivot politics rejects

all these actions as totally unnecessary radical surgery. Pivot politics emphasizes individual and personal solutions to historical problems based on the believers advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History through pivot politics, through the mature believers who make up the pivot, which advocates maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. These mature believers form a pivot for the client nation to revolve around which is derived from a maximum number of souls in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God; all this without disruption of society. The training for pivot politics demands Logistical Grace support for Logistical Grace testing which involves hopeless situations for helpless believers.

Power politics uses the principles of Evil in the Cosmic Dynaspheres to produce Human Good in an effort to solve man's problems using man's efforts, while Pivot Politics uses the principles of Grace from Bible Doctrine to produce Divine Good which is man using the resources provided by God to solve man's problems. In the provision of Logistical Grace the issue of focus must be that no matter the situation in the life of the believer, whether he is an advancing or retrogressing believer, the source of Grace is always there on His throne and operating on His own perfect Grace policy. Therefore, no matter how desperate the situation may appear or actually be, the source can and will always provide the necessary logistics for the believer to allow him to, at any time, choose to advance in the Plan of God. Therefore, the agenda from The Lord for the believer is to move ONE STEP AT A TIME because the preparation for deliverance from any crisis or disaster takes one step at a time moving from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Spiritual Maturity.

Therefore, considering the essential nature of Freedom as an issue, the ultimate question in history is when can a nation justifiably engage in War. In the United States of America, a client nation to God, it is wrong for people to desire to change the government to socialism or dictatorship but efforts must be made to try to correct the flaws of the existing system and still maintain and use freedom. When Abraham Lincoln called for thousands of volunteers to superimpose his will regarding the slavery of blacks on the southern states, which in fact had a right to function under the Constitution in their own way in many specific areas and were already voluntarily and individually ending slavery, he resorted to violence and it was the most destructive thing which ever happened to freedom in the United States of America. The irony is that Lincoln himself was racist and never considered the black man his equal in any way. (See the Lincoln – Douglas Debates) Any president who resorts to violence to make changes, even when change may seem to be necessary, immediately sets a precedent and it is for this reason that since 1865 the American Constitutional system of government has been limping along and systematically failing. This problem came to a head under Franklin Roosevelt. Under the American Constitution a citizen of this country has no issue because of his race and forcing racial issues to the front even today will ultimately destroy this nation. Every citizen in the United States is free to fail or succeed, free to advance as far as his ability will take him OR NOT, free and innocent before a court of law until proven guilty. Genetic heritage must never be used to demand personal advancement over others or personal destruction of others because of prejudice making race an issue. The true Issue must always be how a person individually performs with regard to the system not his genetic background.

Freedom & Government

Any system of government functioning under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#) provides authority and freedom in balance to one another in order that everyone can enjoy maximum freedom. The principles which must be addressed and recognized are:

- Freedom without authority is anarchy
- Authority without freedom is tyranny
- Freedom is the heritage of physical birth
 - This results from the divine imputation of Soul life to the format soul at birth
- Freedom is the extension of this soul life and includes:
 - Volition
 - Emotion
 - Mentality
 - Conscience

There are 2 categories of freedom which exist in this life:

- Human freedom
 - The result of the imputation of soul life at the point of physical birth
 - Protection and security for that freedom is provided by God through the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.
 - God does not guarantee EQUALITY at birth nor in life through any principle such as is found under socialism.
- Spiritual Freedom
 - The result of regeneration and the imputation of the Righteousness and Eternal Life of God to the new believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - This is guaranteed and secured by Bible Doctrine contained in the canon of scripture pertinent to the function of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#).

Neither category of freedom can exist without freedom being protected by and functioning under the umbrella of authority designed and delegated by God. The Laws of Divine Establishment protect life, privacy, property and self determination under the umbrella of establishment Authority, thereby providing a maximum equal freedom for every person. Therefore the Laws of Divine Establishment as the sponsor of freedom in the functions of the Human Race never divorces freedom, privacy, or property from authority. Therefore, ALL Revolution in any organization or nation is not only anti-authority but also anti-establishment as well and anything which is anti-establishment is also ANTI-GOD.

Privacy is the environment for the proper and effective function of freedom. Possession of private property is the motivation for functions under freedom under the principle of profit. Spiritual freedom is the direct result of both Logistical Grace and for the mature believer Escrow Super – Grace, for blessing and support imputed from the Justice of God to the believer in the Plan of God. Revolution EMPHASIZES equality, a false and mythical principle, in the Human Race while freedom guarantees complete inequality, a dogmatically accurate principle, in the Human Race. *The believer must understand clearly that FREEDOM is the invention of*

God to resolve the Angelic Conflict while EQUALITY is the invention of Satan to counter attack this Plan of God and substitute a system of [Arrogance](#) for human functions since Satan is the originator of arrogance and current ruler of this world. Therefore, clearly, Equality is and stems from Arrogance while Freedom requires Humility and stems from God through Bible Doctrine so that ultimately the principle is that “God makes war against the arrogant believer but gives grace to the humble”. ([1Pet 5:5](#), [James 4:6](#)) The reality of life is that Freedom neither manufactures nor guarantees equality in the Human Race because these cannot ever coexist. The irony of Revolution is that it uses freedom to destroy freedom by attacking authoritarianism and replacing it with totalitarianism. Therefore, the absolute best form of government which functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment is where 1 single person rules as an enlightened monarch or dictator FOR THE ULTIMATE GOOD OF THE PEOPLE. This will be the absolute Rule of The Lord Jesus, The Christ after his 2nd advent during his Millennial Reign on this earth. Freedom is the reality of life while equality is a distorted myth of life under satanic rule. Freedom only guarantees inequality both in time and in eternity, whether in heaven or the Lake of Fire wherever one may end up. The concepts of Equality are the devices of the arrogant revolutionaries instilled into their propaganda while they are seeking to gain power and control thus producing tyrannical inequality, by exploiting the strong delusion in the people with lying propaganda. Forced equality is the policy of totalitarianism where the tyrants and dictators operating under the Evil plan of Satan motivated by Arrogance produce Sin, Crime and Human Good, as a result of that Evil, which they always justify and use to control the people resulting in INEQUALITY.

When any organization or system demonstrates fair and impartial inequality, this guarantees the existence of great freedom. Socialism and communism which try to make all people equal completely destroy freedom. This is made attractive to the oppressed or downtrodden people by proclaiming to them that it will provide equality in the form of the greater good for the greater number. Believers especially must remember that Satan still rules this world and under his system of EVIL this is his deception. Freedom must NEVER be surrendered because it is the major issue in the Angelic Conflict appeal which provides the opportunity for any human being to choose FREELY between the Plan of God and the plan of Satan. These are the true, JUSTIFIABLE, reasons to engage in War for protection, preservation or restoration of the client nation to God under the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions with maximum FREEDOM.

Principles of National & Military Function

The United States of America has a great military record despite the fact that it has given little attention to the military in all of its history. The United States began its history as a representative constitutional republic but through the national degeneracy of collective involvement in the [Interlocking Systems of Arrogance](#) it has degraded into a socialistic democracy. The historical fact is that the most unstable and inefficient form of government is democracy, see Athens. The United States of America has become a democracy by giving the ability to decide who will run the government to a majority of people who have no integrity,

no honor, no sense of responsibility and no desire to serve the nation in any way. Democracy as a form of government is just a hair's breadth from the total degeneracy of anarchy which in fact can be seen clearly knocking on this nations door today. In any organization when a large number of people are asked to decide what should be done it always results in total confusion. The more people that have something to say about how things are to be done the worse it always becomes. If the running of the United States army depended on the opinion of everyone in the United States of America there would be no military and total chaos. This points out in principle what is wrong in the government and the military of the United States of America today. The organization and operation of the military establishment must be run based on honor, integrity and a STRICT code of ethics and discipline above all else. People who are successful in business or science cannot run an army as seen in the managerial system of leadership in place with the United States Army since the 1970's started by McNamara. The United States had a great system of military leadership because it had great men who were dedicated to the military. The principle is that NO large organization succeeds beyond the integrity and honor of the individuals who compose it. The major problem today is that there is less understanding of honor and integrity in the general population and also the officer corps of the military than in all of the history of the United States of America. The fault stems from Self Righteous Arrogance and this has resulted in setting up an inflexible arrogant code for advancement of officers in the military services in general and in fact throughout all levels of the government. To make this situation, which seemed to not be able to become so, far worse, the United States government has recently ruled that women will now be able to serve regularly in combat. One of the national administrators has suggested also that the military draft be reinstated and everyone over the age of 18 be subject to conscription into the military service, men and women. The Draft for universal military service is a GOOD thing but it should not include females and if females want to serve they should volunteer and be placed in one of the MANY necessary support units. Unfortunately, until this country as a client nation is straightened out and returns its footing to the standpoint of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions the military will remain helpless to fulfill its function of freedom through military victory.

Authoritarianism vs Totalitarianism

No national government is LEGITIMATE, no matter the type it may be, unless those in control who run the government function based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Believers must learn to distinguish between authoritarian government, which is legal and establishment oriented, and totalitarian government which his based on Evil and a non-establishment government. Authoritarian government follows the Laws of Divine Establishment striking a balance between governmental authority and the freedom of the people whether it is:

- A Monarchy
- An Oligarchy
- A Republic

The United States of America as client nation to God has functioned under Evil in developing and implementing its foreign policy for many decades having overthrown or permitted the overthrow of many authoritarian governments throughout the world because these may have

been dictatorships or that which approximates dictatorship including:

- Shaw of Iran
- Somoza of Nicaragua
- Eon Smith of Rhodesia
- Diem in Vietnam
- Parks in South Korea
- The government of South Africa

Democracy is the most strongly Evil form of government, in fact it is constantly teetering on the brink of NO GOVERNMENT in Anarchy, having the least function under the Laws of Divine Establishment which exist to guarantee human freedom. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment in any type of government there must be LITTLE Government and BIG people. Under the Constitutional Republic of the United States the Federal government is supposed to be the servant of the people and must function only to strengthen liberty never to solve social problems. Democracy is in fact anarchy with a vernier of hypocrisy and the foreign policy extant in the United States today supports the Evil of socialistic governments and turns its back on establishment governments and has done so for many decades. The people and those in control of the government have clearly failed to realize that socialism and welfare state functions are an attack on freedom, completely contrary to the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and totally destructive to the Human Race as a whole. The United States of America in this early 21st century is very close to overt revolution because of an unprecedented increased unemployment accompanied by free government “stimulus” handouts which in a welfare state always means revolution when they are stopped. In fact now in 2025 these government subsidies and handouts may stop completely and America may then look for the beginnings of revolution.

National Arrogance

National arrogance was about to destroy the United States of America in the 1960s and 1970s and it was demonstrated in the labeling of minorities, in racism, in demonstration marches (which are unconstitutional in themselves), and above all in war protests. When people demand special treatment because of their race THEY themselves make an issue of race and they reject the system under which this country is to function which becomes a point of [Arrogance](#). This is radical liberalism today, it is ghastly arrogance which is Self Righteous Arrogance and these people want to change the function and also to destroy the system. Everyone has been in a position at some time in life where they reject the authority which they are under and think they have a right to change it to align with their thoughts and views or to criticize the person who is in authority. This is Blind Arrogance and Authority Arrogance and will invariably interlock with all the other systems of Arrogance to ultimately destroy that person. The system must not be destroyed even if there is strong disagreement with the system. If the system is based at all on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and it is destroyed along with it goes any semblance of freedom the people may have had.

Understanding History

The citizens of the United States of America are the worlds poorest historians and the average American has less understanding of history than any other people in the world. The majority of the people in the United States think of freedom in terms of human rights and their being personally able to do whatever they desire at any time, which is absolutely unrealistic and ridiculous. They label and consider the system in the United States to be a democracy (historically as the absolute WORST form of government it functions at the level of the lowest common denominator) but fail to recognize that under many monarchies and dictatorships people have far greater freedoms than in the so called democratic systems. The level of personal freedom in the United States of America today is FAR BELOW that which existed at the beginning of this Constitutional Republic. By far the greatest government for providing freedom and opportunity for the people of a nation historically was the dictatorship of the Roman Empire and the Monarchy of Victorian England. However, no matter what form of government exists as long as there is no state religion and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions are adhered to there will be great opportunity for the people to advance and to have great prosperity. When there is a state religion it inevitably will seek to persecute those who do not accept it and it thereby immediately becomes a destructive system in history. ISLAM is the greatest illustration and the worst pseudo religious system with regard to the destruction of freedom and right next to it is Romanism. Any form of government which functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions will provide the greatest freedom and in absolute fact the best form of government is Absolute Enlightened Monarchy.

This or any nation can be vastly improved by the execution of capital criminals immediately after conviction and the people in Washington DC running the government since 2020 are such traitorous criminals and in violation of the constitutional laws of this nation. The nation can also be improved by the death of its enemies in battle, conventional war or clandestine, counter insurgent even guerrilla war. Terrorism, personal assassination even of the most evil persons, or revolution against an established government which functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions puts the believer outside of the Plan of God and outside of pivot politics and into the Evil system of power politics. The solution in pivot politics is Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for advance to Spiritual Maturity so that The Lord Jesus, The Christ can exercise control of Human History through the pivot of mature believers. The solution of power politics inevitably becomes violence against any in opposition to it in the client nation were there is inevitable killing, lynching or some sort of mob violence which destroys freedom.

Requirements for Effective Military Function

True Leadership

Good leadership, strict discipline and objective Authority Orientation is essential for effective military function and battlefield victory and also essential in the Spiritual Life where Bible Doctrine must come from a Pastor Teacher who is properly prepared and supremely motivated to teach it effectively. ALL Leaders must have moral courage and wisdom and have taken cognizance of the true situation and know the concept of offensive action for victory. Military

Leaders especially must be aggressive and only think in terms of the offense while only using defense to support offensive actions.

Effective Training, Strict Discipline = High Morale

Fighting Men must have an excellent Mental Attitude and be teachable and trainable. Both the military man and the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must be teachable. Some are not and when they entangle themselves in a state of arrogance, implacability and vindictiveness or some other Mental Attitude which is a stumbling block for them they invariably fail. Intensive Training under the strictest discipline builds confidence which brings with it the highest levels of Morale in any combat unit.

Confidence in Battle

The believer as a fighting man must never be intimidated by the enemy he faces. The Christian is in a constant warfare status as an integral part of the Angelic Conflict between God and Satan and must never forget on which side he is fighting and never be intimidated by his unseen enemy. Consider shepherd boy David facing the 10' tall warrior Goliath. No believer should ever consider the past record of an opponent because this becomes intimidation and intimidation results in his easy defeat. Mental Attitude is important in everything in life and considering that in the Plan of God for the believer, Justice demands Justice, Mental Attitude is of primary importance in Love, War, Business, Relationships with people, Capacity for life, ETC. An army composed of arrogant veteran soldiers may, and often does, become careless because of its past record of successes and this provides a great advantage to the opposing force. Victories of the past can result in overconfidence and considering self beyond defeat as a result of having defeated many others. At this point these become vulnerable to that very defeat. Arrogant Self Confidence combined with debauchery after victory removes discipline, alertness and tactical cohesion of any army and will make them vulnerable to defeat. In addition GOD, in a Just War, will be on the side of the believer who is operating on the principle that Justice demands Justice. [Ps 144:1-2](#)

The PRINCIPLE of Proper function in War

The United States, both the government administrators and the people, generally does not understand the principle of proper function in war and protection of the client nation and its freedom AT ALL COSTS. Because it does not understand this the people suffer greatly in this country. Today, having a general overall lack of interest in God or Bible Doctrine the people of this nation have no clue that this nation is special and has many special responsibilities directly to GOD as a client nation. As with any national entity the United States can only survive by having a STRONG invincible military force. The people of this country have not ever understood this and have some goofy idea of "fair play" in warfare thinking of it in terms of "sportsmanship". The basic principle in war and in Law Enforcement is that ***violence can only be met with greater violence to control or defeat it.*** Today in the 21st century this nation is all but defeated internally and this will inevitably lead to external defeat unless the status of thinking of the people dramatically changes. The Lord Jesus, The Christ will not come and

preach the sermon on the mount to the soldiers advancing at the end of the tribulation to slaughter the Jews, he does not say to them, “Blessed are the peace makers”. They would laugh at him and try to shoot him down just as those in China, Russia, Korea, Vietnam and Afghanistan have been laughing at the United States today. The United States has been for over 100 years faced with an enemy which ONLY understands and fears FORCE as PHYSICAL VIOLENCE GREATER than that which they can perpetrate on others, namely communism and also islam for many hundreds of years. These groups do not understand nor adhere to peace talks, negotiations, treaties, acquiescence, coexistence but ONLY violence. The fact is that NO REAL AMERICAN understands these things either and true Americans do not intend or desire to ‘COEXIST’ with the kooks and off base radical liberals, communists or islamic idiots. When The Lord Jesus, The Christ returns he does not give the enemies of Israel any sweat peace talk around a negotiating table but he goes after them and totally slaughters them. His clothing is to be saturated with blood and the blood of those he slaughters will run for 150+ miles as deep as a horses bridle. This is the only thing that these people functioning totally under the system of EVIL understand. ***When dealing with violent people or nations the only thing they understand is GREATER FORCE THAN THEY CAN MUSTER OR USE.*** There are people and also nations which are just like this, and as a result, GOD MEETS VIOLENCE WITH VIOLENCE AND AUTHORIZES THE USE OF VIOLENCE TO DESTROY AGGRESSIVE VIOLENCE. It is imperative that each believer understand that ONE CANNOT STOP VIOLENCE IN WARFARE BY DISARMAMENT WHETHER IT IS A HOT WAR OR A COLD CLANDESTINE WAR AND TO DISARM A NATION MEANS TO INVITE DISASTER FOR THAT NATION. Nationalism, Divine Institution #4, must be maintained in the devil’s world with legitimate strong military organizations and strong effective Judicial and Law Enforcement systems. Only in the millennium under the personal reign of The Lord Jesus, The Christ will the military be abolished safely because of the rulership of Christ Jesus throughout the earth. Therefore, today, ONE MUST MEET VIOLENCE WITH VIOLENCE IF AN INDIVIDUAL OR A NATION IS TO SURVIVE WHEN CONFRONTED WITH AGGRESSIVE VIOLENCE. ([Matt 24:6-7](#)) To this end, the Lord provides what is necessary for every believer who has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. ([Is 41:10](#), [Deut 31:6](#), [Deut 31:8](#))

Warfare Principles

There is a time for war and a time for peace and this will be the case until the 2nd advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. ([Eccl 3:6-8](#), [Num 21:14](#)) In the client nation to God there is to be a strong Spiritual Factor in the Military. ([Neh 4:8-9](#)) When functioning properly as a client nation to God there must also be a strong establishment factor involving the military. Nehemiah was a Jewish general not a prophet and he is the one who indicated this. ([Neh 4:13-15](#)) The principle is that the very threat of being prepared is often the basis of maintaining peace in the devils world. The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the Lord Sabaoth has a military image as the Lord of the Armies from the point when Moses said, “The Lord of the Armies will fight for you today.” ([Ex 14:13-14](#)) Joshua as leader of the Jews when they crossed the Jordan river and entered the land was not the military commander but simply chief of staff to the Lord of the Armies. ([Josh 5:13-6:2](#)) The Lord Jesus, The Christ, will go forth and fight against those nations who are aggressively ambitions for more territory just as he will fight in the days of the battle of Armageddon and He will deliver the Jews in that day and the client nation who is

still in possession of a pivot of mature believers today. ([Zech 14:2](#)) The Lord himself, holds the one man record for killing the enemy in battle. ([Is 37:33-37](#)) It was The Lord Jesus, The Christ as the Angel of Jehovah who struck down 185,000 Assyrians in their bivouac in one the night, a military organization which had never suffered defeat in 200 years. At the end of the Armageddon campaign He, Christ, will smite the nations and rule the nations with a rod of iron. ([Rev 19:11](#))

Therefore, the principle of combat and killing in combat in defense of the client nation and freedom is not immoral but a moral principle under the Laws of Divine Establishment. The principle of universal military training is also a valid and essential concept for the client nation ([Numbers chapters 1, 2, 3, 4](#)) where what is called “the census” is a mobilization plan in preparation for potential invasion. The National entity of the client nation especially, must always have a professional military staff of high ranking officers who are capable and devoted to the planning of warfare. ([Luke 14:31](#)) The Staff must be perpetuated and continually train and study and there must always be brilliant men dedicated to the honorable profession of the military with true Motivation for military service and training from God. ([Ps 144:1-2](#)) [2Sam 22:35-36](#) also indicates that top physical conditioning is essential for effective battlefield performance. There must be enforced humility from the strictest discipline, which is a critically important principle. Therefore, Victory in war does not depend on numbers or mere courage but only discipline and training will ensure it. The Romans owed the conquest of most of the world in their time to no other concept or activity than continual military training and the strict exact observance of discipline and unwearied cultivation of the arts of war. The Spaniards surpassed the Romans in both numbers and physical strength, and the Carthaginians in both wealth, strategy and tactics under Hannibal. The Greeks were superior in skill, arts and all kinds of knowledge but to all these advantages the Romans opposed them with unusual care in the choices of their conscription and the superiority of their military training.

Victory in War

The principle of Victory and Military effort is centered around the idea that the offensive is the only military action by which a decision is gained and units must take the offensive and be aggressive in order to win. In any area of life the only way to gain is to be on the offensive and aggressive. The United States military had no tactics for offensive warfare in 1979. The plans which existed for troops in Germany for example in 1976 to stop the communists were defensive allowing ONLY for holding out for 11 days against hopeless odds. Defensive action cannot ever bring victory, see Vietnam. Any offensive against a superior force demands maximum courage, nerve, discipline, training, coordination and motivation and every conceivable military virtue. This principle applies to believers as well in their Spiritual Life and in order to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and be the recipient of one's own Escrow Super – Grace blessings the believer must have maximum courage and a completely Relaxed Mental Attitude. The offensive is the only effective way to conduct war and destroy enemy armies and make any opposing nation helpless. The offensive is the only way to overcome revolutionary clandestine and guerrilla insurgency in a nation as well. The offensive is a challenge to the leadership of the force adopting it. The greatest offensive military leader in American history is Douglas MacArthur. He is the greatest example of

effective strategic and tactical mindedness in our history and must be listed with Hannibal, Caesar, Alexander, Gustavus Adolphus, Frederick the Great and Napoleon. MacArthur saved Australia from the Japanese when the Australians were going to back down into their continent and let the Japanese have their coastline. He took almost nothing in military equipment and went all the way to Tokyo and victory in the Pacific. He was almost universally despised and because he was so courageous a man, many were very jealous of him. He was always taking the offensive from New Guinea all the way into Tokyo and also in Korea and if he would not have been stopped in Korea by Truman he would have beaten the Chinese communists and North Koreans both. Aggressive minded orientals fear only one man and respect only one man historically, that is Douglas MacArthur. Generals Chenot, Robert Fredrick, R. E. Lee, Johnathan Jackson, George Patrick Patton Jr. were all offensive minded men. This is why Lee gave the order to attack on the 3rd day at Gettysburg and unfortunately lost. The offensive removes limitations to maneuver and provides flexibility for forces whereby ultimate victory is achieved. An inferior army on the offensive will ultimately defeat a superior army on the defensive. This was Napoleon's first Italian campaign where he fought 4 Austrian armies and defeated them, and this also occurred for him similarly at Austerlitz. Genius in strategy and tactics is therefore always related to the offensive. The defensive maneuver should ONLY be used to ASSIST OFFENSIVE ACTION ELSEWHERE, to gain time or to use good terrain or compensate for a weakness. This is why MacArthur took the defensive position at Bataan to assist offensive action elsewhere. Whenever armies stop maneuvering, meaning when they stop being on the offensive, they start losing and surrendering. Military leadership with a defensive attitude cannot win wars. To divide one's forces against a superior enemy is a violation of every good tactical principle BUT to divide forces for a night attack is often a gamble worth taking. Night attack with division of forces demands maximum coordination between units and maximum discipline. An attack will work at night provided the inferior force has an element of surprise and will attack with a demoralizing aggression so that the enemy cannot sit back and see what is actually coming against them and take measures for a counter attack.

Success on the battlefield, whether it is in conventional, guerrilla or clandestine war, requires the provision of sufficient supplies and material. When freedom is threatened by revolution it requires the sacrifices of both military and civilian populations to engage in production to sustain those who fight for freedom. Just as Logistical Grace is critical for the fulfillment by the believer of the Plan of God in the Spiritual Life also it is needed for the acquisition, preservation or restoration of freedom through military victory. The military complex must never cease to appreciate civilian support and sacrifice in time of war and the civilian population should never cease to appreciate those who fight and often sacrifice their lives for the freedom of the client nation. (This was the major failure in the United States during the Vietnam War brought on by universal propagandizing stimulated by Liberal Communists in this nation) Therefore, the civilian and military populations are mutually dependent on each other and must recognize this and always work together to accomplish a total effort in the defeat of the enemy. The point and principle is that ALL the hero's are NOT on the battlefield and often neither are the traitors.

Principles for Consideration in Warfare

A great number of propositions make themselves evident without any difficulty when considering the real objective in warfare.

- Strategic effects may be referred to certain centers of gravity for stability and victory
- A demonstration is a weaker application of force than a real attack and there must be some special reason for resorting to the former
- Victory consists not merely in the conquest on the field of battle, but in the complete destruction of the enemy armed forces, physically and morally, which can in general only be effected by a sustained pursuit after the victory in battle is gained
- Successes are always greatest at the point where the victory has been gained
- The change from one line and object to another can only be regarded as a necessary evil
- A turning movement is only justified by a superiority of numbers generally or by the advantage of lines of communication and retreat over those of the enemy
- Flank positions are only justifiable on similar grounds
- Every attack becomes weaker as it progresses.

Objective Reality in War

- The mind cannot stop short of an extreme of function in War, because it has to deal with an extreme, the violence of WAR.
- War is never an isolated act but is based on what is known about an opponent and what is known by an opponent about one.
- War is never a single instantaneous effort, a complete concentration of all available means in a moment of time is contradictory to the nature of War and it is a progressive increase in hostilities and violence to prevent exhaustion of both physical and mental resources.

The Objective of Warfare

War is nothing but a duel on an extensive scale. War therefore is an act of violence intended to compel one's opponent to fulfill one's will. Therefore, Good Violence arms itself with the inventions of Art and Science in order to contend against Bad Violence. Violence, that is to say physical force, is therefore the means; the compulsory submission of the enemy to one's will is the ultimate objective. In order to attain this objective fully, the enemy must be disarmed, and disarmament becomes therefore the immediate objective of hostilities in theory. (22)

Now, philanthropists (and very often Politicians) may easily imagine there is a skillful method of disarming and overcoming an enemy without great bloodshed, and that this is the proper tendency of the Art of War. However, in such dangerous things as War, the errors which proceed from a spirit of benevolence are the worst. It follows that he who uses force unsparingly, without reference to the bloodshed involved, must obtain a superiority if his adversary uses less vigor in its application. The former then dictates the law to the latter, and both proceed to extremities to which the only limitations are those imposed by the amount of

counter-acting force on each side. Therefore, to introduce into the philosophy of War itself a principle of moderation (fair play) IS an absurdity. (22)

Therefore, the principle objective of War is NOT to be sweet or kind to the enemy and comfort him and provide him with blood plasma for his wounded. The enemy must be killed and every male in their military should be killed. The believer must understand that he is to utterly destroy the enemy in warfare and if he does not, that enemy will teach him his apostasy and degeneracy and God will then destroy him. A primary illustration of this is found in the Book of Esther and in a reflection of the function of the United States of America in World War II where the real enemy was not only the Germans and Japanese but also the Russians and the American military did not destroy the Russians and as a result communism has been strong IN and AGAINST the United States of America since the end of World War II and is totally out of control today. If the enemy is not eradicated they will become a strong influence to the nations people who are fighting against them. Today in the 21st century the people of the United States think in terms of the stupidity of socialism which is a ploy used by communism to degrade any legitimate nation whose culture and system is based on freedom so that they can take over that nation and enforce their process by means of violence under communism. If the believer does not destroy the enemy he will end up sinning against the Lord and the enemy sooner or later will destroy him and his nation and this is the lesson that the Carthaginians did NOT LEARN and as a result the Romans totally destroyed Carthage. When involved in WAR, the enemy must be killed and their ability to wage war must be CRUSHED else they will come back against the defending nation sooner or later.

Thus the aim of all action in War is to disarm the enemy. (22) If one's opponent is to be made to comply with one's will, he must be placed in a situation which is more oppressive to him than the sacrifice which is demanded of him to resist. However, the disadvantages of this position must naturally not be of a transitory nature, at least in appearance, otherwise the enemy, instead of yielding, will hold out, in the prospect of a change for the better. Therefore, every change in the position for the enemy which is produced by a continuation of the War should therefore be a change for the worse. The worst condition in which a belligerent can be placed is that of being completely disarmed. Therefore, the true aim of action in War applies to both parties and as long as the enemy is not defeated, he may defeat the defender. (22)

ONCE the enemy has been placed into a position of extreme disadvantage, then there is victory in battle and when he is on the run he must be PURSUED and ALL OF THEM KILLED. This is contrary to the thinking of liberalism and this principle of Bible Doctrine must come to the forefront for the United States to be maintained. When the enemy is in a position of disadvantage the believer in the military must NEVER LET UP AND NEVER FEEL SORRY FOR THEM but MUST annihilate them on the battlefield. One cannot ever afford sympathy in combat and he must remain tough and focused and slaughter the enemy and this failure has over taken the United States as clearly illustrated by the weak stance against Russia, China, N. Korea and in the middle east, and if the enemy is not killed and rendered incapable of prosecuting war they will recover and attack again. Therefore Annihilation of the enemy is the

desired end result of warfare.

Annihilation & Unconditional Surrender

Annihilation and decisive defeat of the enemy ALWAYS brings PEACE. ([Josh 11:23](#), [Josh 14:15](#), [Ps 46:8-11](#))

- Annihilation = KILLING AS MANY ENEMY INVOLVED IN COMBAT OR SUPPORTING IT AS POSSIBLE
- Decisive Defeat = Strategic, Tactical and Logistical defeat.

Josh 11:23 and **Josh 14:15** both end with “and they had peace in the land” because they slaughtered the enemy and decisively defeated them. Therefore, the objective of combat is that every male combatant in the army of the enemy or any individual in support of the enemy is to be completely annihilated, killed dead. Warfare is therefore the basis for the survival of Divine Institution #4 and Peace is produced by killing in fact slaughtering the enemy in a very decisive and impressive way. In the Sennacherib invasion of Israel he had 185,000 of the finest Assyrian infantry, undefeated for some 200 years, which were killed in 1 night by The Lord Jesus, The Christ. They were destroyed, caused to cease, terminated by Divine Decree from GOD. Therefore, it is clearly demonstrated that it is The Lord Jesus, The Christ who makes wars to cease by annihilation of the enemy. The point is that the only way to make peace with aggressive nations in this world ruled by Satan is to annihilate the enemy and decisively defeat him. THEREFORE, Wars are terminated or interrupted by the slaughter of the enemy and this brings peace. This principle also applies to young boys learning how to deal with bullies and bullies must be defeated by any means possible.

Therefore in combat, one must Fight to KILL, and one must NOT TURN THE OTHER CHEEK UNTIL THE MILLENNIUM. Additionally a significant point again is that during the Church Age the MEEK will inherit nothing and by rolling over on their back and wagging their tail they will just get stomped to death. Self Righteous females must not reject these things because no matter how independent they may be they WILL become the victims of war and are the one’s raped and abused in every imaginable way. In war it is KILL or be killed and no country can ever survive in this world without killing its enemies and to think otherwise is completely naive stupidity.

Requirements for Military Victory

True Leadership

Good leadership is essential for military victory and ALL Leaders must have moral courage and wisdom and know the true situation and the concept of offensive action for victory.

Effective Training, Strict Discipline High Morale

Fighting Men must have an excellent intensive training, strict discipline, excellent Mental Attitude and be teachable and trainable.

Confidence in Battle

The believer as a fighting man must never be intimidated by the enemy he faces.

Consider David facing Goliath, and remember David picked up 5 stones for his sling when he confronted Goliath because he knew GOLIATH HAD 4 BROTHERS not because he was concerned he might MISS his target!

Exploiting Victory

The exploitation of victory is the Principle of Total Victory and is essential in effective use of military tactics but is also important in any facet of life as well. Exploiting initial success in victory is what makes it possible for peace after war. The enemy must NEVER be allowed to recover or regroup to form a counter attack and they must be kept on the run and in a state of panic. This is demonstrated by the exploitation of David's victory over Goliath when the weak, cowardly Jews mustered themselves and pursued the enemy to its complete destruction. The enemy must be demoralized by effective aggressive pursuit which keeps them running both mentally and physically. This was the failure of Marshal Nae at Waterloo and of General Mead against Lee where both of these situations would have ended these wars immediately. **Victory must be exploited.** Where there are no reserves for exploitation once the initial breakthrough is made the attacking force has a very difficult job and they must continue to put pressure on the enemy and call on their own reserves of strength and pursue even in a state of exhaustion. Therefore in all cases an attacking force which succeeds must exploit the breakthrough with aggressive vigorous pursuit. This was the purpose of the "swamp phase" of Airborne Ranger training which used to exist but which the government interfered with and removed because of bleeding heart liberal complaints. It is extremely important to keep moving and keep fighting when one has gone 2 or 3 days without food or sleep. This demands maximum conditioning and is what determines if an army is well trained or not. The United States is soft today and this is reflected in the training of the military which could not exploit a victory even if they had a victory.

In order to defeat the enemy, one must proportion his efforts to his powers of resistance, *the sum of available means* and *the strength of the Will*. The sum of the available means may be estimated in a measure, as it depends (although not entirely) upon numbers and equipment. The strength of will or volition is more difficult to determine, and can only be estimated to a certain extent by the strength of the motives. When the motives are based on Legitimate considerations such as the preservation of Freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment then the means can be taken and either increased so as to obtain a preponderance, or, in case there is not the resources to effect this, do the best possible by increasing the means as far as possible. However, in all cases of warfare it is imperative to remember that the adversary does the same.

Spiritual Principles for Exploiting Victory

Spiritual Principles to be used in Warfare demonstrate the principle that all military victory for believers is a commemoration of the power of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul applied under the principle of **Spiritual Common Sense**. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer serving in the military becomes the decisive factor in the crisis of combat. The last reserve of motivation, when exhausted from long marches in a pursuit to catch the enemy who is fleeing, and then to launch a surprise

attack having success at all points of that attack, then despite being totally exhausted from marching, pursue and attack to further PRESS the enemy as much as possible to flee, for the believer, results from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine both men and leaders will perform superbly. For the greatest of success in any field or activity in life there is no substitute for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Physically it takes strong self discipline and enforced discipline, training, endurance and nervous energy to have the ability for the initial pursuit, surprise attack, and exploitation of the tactical success and then further pursuit when exhausted to enable the destruction of the enemy and recovery of friendly captives and plunder. Mentally it takes courage, concentration and coordination between units with proper motivation and Mental Attitude to succeed professionally. All this must be related to the spiritual factor where believers who were under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine have the needed capacity for warfare. This class of men would be successful and win and succeed completely and totally by functioning under the principles of the spiritual life from spiritual advance. Victory is what they expect and success is what they anticipate having a great field commander and great infantry training and the believer must learn from this example and apply it to all aspects of his life.

Principles of leadership in warfare

- Self discipline which accepts enforced humility when tempted to move into arrogance
- Group discipline as an essential for proper orientation to life
- Relaxed Mental Attitude
- Strong character from Integrity + Loyalty to Truth resulting in Honor
 - The extreme importance of the Honor Code in the military
- Professional understanding of all phases of the military operations
 - Logistics
 - Strategy
 - Tactics, etc.
- Loyalty as a result of understanding the establishment doctrinal principle of authority
- Objectivity in living by principles and not succumbing to personnel conflicts
- Common sense and good judgment
 - From the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages)
 - From adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions
- Fairness and objectivity toward those under one's command
 - Understanding people
 - Avoidance of prejudice
- Executive ability
 - Organize
 - Categorize
 - Systematize
 - Analyze
 - Delegate

- Good Health
 - Endurance
 - Nervous Energy
 - Top physical condition
- Dress, Carriage and Poise as one of the greatest manifestations of knowledge plus humility along with courtesy and flair.

The Essence of Military Leadership

These are characteristics which are developed through Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the Spiritual Life with some being inherent and some acquired from effective training and preparation where all can be acquired with proper motivation:

- #1 – Self Discipline
 - In military training Enforced Discipline results in Enforced Humility when there is proper response to the required discipline.
 - This develops into SELF discipline which results in Genuine Humility and concentration which brings with it teachability.
- #2 – Group Discipline
 - There must be avoidance of the Herd Instinct and a focus on following orders and doing one's job as part of a TEAM and as unto the Lord.
 - This is learned by being required to function as team where the objective of the team is more important than the individual on the team.
 - Combat team.
 - Flight team in a bomber.
 - Rifle Squad or Platoon.

Leadership must recognize the importance of SELF and GROUP Discipline.

- #3 – Zeal
 - Orientation to and understanding of the purpose or objective
 - The believer doing his job as part of the TEAM and as unto the Lord
 - The unbeliever doing his job as part of the TEAM for the sake of freedom of self and others.
- #4 – Relaxed Mental Attitude & Mental Stability
 - Resulting from self discipline and a thorough knowledge of the subject of training.
 - Resulting from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Soul for the believer which completes construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul
 - Grace Orientation and Functional Virtue with freedom from Mental Attitude Sins an essential for proper thinking during a crisis and effective decision making.
- #5 – Character with a sense of responsibility
 - Resulting from a proper Frame of Reference, Norms and Standards and Scale of Values developed in the Right Lobe of the Soul from principles of Bible Doctrine.
- #6 – Intelligence
 - The ability to grasp new ideas
 - Alertness, concentration and analytical ability.
- #7 – Thoroughness, Understanding and Knowledge of the Profession
 - Accumulation of detailed knowledge of military tactics and strategy principles.

- Confidence in one's leadership ability where officers must learn every small detail of their profession to develop greater confidence in their ability to lead men and instill confidence in the men being led.
- Knowledge of the job & responsibilities of those above his rank to be able to step into their function in time of crisis and continue to fight.
- Knowledge of the job of every man under his command for the same reason.
- #8 – Wisdom
 - The accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine principles into the Right Lobe of the Soul with the development and deploying of the Problem Solving Devices and completion of the Edification Complex in the soul.
- #9 – Loyalty to both those under and above one's command.
 - LOYALTY UP can only occur when LOYALTY DOWN occurs first.
- #10 – Common Sense & good judgment
 - The ability to Think and effectively use language to communicate
 - Developed through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.
 - Never attempting to be a theorist and use common sense at the same time.
- #11– Objectivity toward those under one's authority
 - Lack of Personal prejudice
- #12 – Understanding others
 - Recognizing the rights and privacy of those under one's authority.
- #13 – Initiative & Force
 - Aggressiveness and understanding that all great military successes are based on offensive action.
 - Never thinking in terms of extensive defensive action.
- #14 – Executive or Administrative Ability
 - The ability to organize, analyze, categorize, synthesize, systematize and then delegate.
 - The ability to systematically develop concepts using the ability to think categorically.
- #15 – Maintenance of personal HEALTH
 - Physical endurance and nervous stability
- #16 – Personal Physical Presence
 - Dress, carriage, poise, courtesy and flair

The believer who is a leader must never allow himself to even think that being a Christian means he must be a meek mealy mouthed mamma's boy and turn the other cheek to all who are offended by him or seek to offend him. Therefore, the successful military leader must be strong and a man possessing a maximum knowledge of Bible Doctrine which increases his ability in the military profession. His planning for war is established by counsel through Metabolized Bible Doctrine and engaging in successful war is a matter of good planning, good judgment and good advice. Only through a capable general can successful warfare be prosecuted ([Prov 20:18](#)) because inevitably victory is only found in the greatness of the one who is in command, the military leader.

Bible Doctrine & Military Leadership

Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is extremely important to any type of Military Leadership. Perfect illustrations from history include:

- Robert E Lee
- Thomas Johnathan Jackson
- Douglas MacArthur
- George Patton
- Joshua
- David
- Gustavus Adolphus
- Sir Henry Havelock
- C. G. Gordon
- Edmond H. H. Allenby
- John Brown Gordon
- And several others

The greatest enemy to Bible Doctrine, including the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, and therefore to leadership is **Mental Attitude Arrogance** and its Mental Attitude Sins. Mental Attitude Sins, and all verbal and overt sins which must begin with Mental Attitude Sins, produce Self Induced Misery, all which are destructive to leadership as a result of destroying any accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul. God has provided the ability for the believer through the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Soul to build the Edification Complex in his Soul and this complex or structure is designed to house the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul. Therefore, any believer or anyone in any position of leadership must avoid Mental Attitude Sins which lead to verbal and overt sins in order to allow the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the soul for eventual orientation and application to his life.

Jealousy or enviousness is an extremely destructive part of Mental Attitude Arrogance as a Mental Attitude Sin which leads to horrendous verbal and overt sins which destroy capacity for LOVE, thus destroy the ability of the believer to have a relationship with The Lord Jesus, The Christ so that any Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul cannot be applied. This is a very dangerous and horrible thing in military leadership and in military history THOUSANDS have died because of jealousy in Leadership. In World War I at the battle of Tannenberg 85-100,000 Russians died because of Jealousy between the 2 commanding Russian generals. In addition Jealousy never travels alone and always forms into a complex of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins and this guarantees total misery and spiritual destruction for the believer who engages in it.

Mental Attitude Sins destroy both Moral Courage and Battle courage, therefore, Mental Attitude Sins destroy military leadership. In World War II jealousy was constantly directed toward Douglas MacArthur by officers from other branches of the military services. Jealousy neutralizes all ability and capacity in life in every category along with Moral and Battle courage

and thereby brings incredible Self Induced Misery to the one engaging in it. [Prov 24:1-6](#) is devoted to Military Leadership and the first command is to NOT be jealous or envious of SUCCESSFUL EVIL MEN. In addition, becoming involved in “herd instinct” functions, trying to be popular, acting like other people you want to be with, being overly overtly friendly with them, like the men under one’s authority, when this results in association with cowards, liberals, those with weak character, it always brings personal disaster and destroys leadership ability.

Therefore the believer in any occupation or profession NEEDS consistent intake of Bible Doctrine to complete his Edification Complex of the Soul and build a maximum content of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. The unbeliever needs consistent intake of principles and concepts from Bible Doctrine related to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions to built up his system of concentration and focus in his soul. The structure of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) is like a building constructed in the soul and is made up of a foundation and 8 floors. This ‘house’ is built through accumulation of wisdom, the construction material which is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This structure or house of the soul is the stabilizer of the mentality of the soul and is what is lacking at the point of the believer making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The soul is composed of 7 compartments and the Frame of Reference is the entry point for all Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Soul. The Frame of Reference is where MORAL and BATTLE courage are developed and where Divine Viewpoint is manufactured when this area is properly organized and functioning. From this organized Frame of Reference there comes properly oriented Norms and Standards, and Scale of Values so that this believer then prepares himself for all the exigencies of life especially military service and military leadership functions.

It is through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer that his occupation or profession becomes something stimulating as a result of his consistent function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). His development of enhanced skill results from the influence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in learning his profession, especially that of military leadership. A military leader who possesses maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul develops strong moral courage. He can make decisions under pressure and in combat and thus becomes strong in his profession. He is able to consistently increase his ability, alertness, activity of mind, bravery, moral courage and a firm, stable and undaunted Mental Attitude from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thus giving him greater ability in his profession. Therefore, success in the art of military leadership belongs to the believer and the bible condones and advocates the military profession and Victory in combat always lies in the greatness of leadership, the one who plans the strategy and tactics. Therefore, in every nation there is a need for strong professional military leadership. ([Prov 20:18](#)) A person who is a good leader cannot be instantly turned into a military leader and he must know military history and military science and be trained to devise good strategic and tactical plans to make war successfully. In the United States of America the civilian authority has generally lacked leadership characteristics and moral courage and as a

result has pushed these poor characteristics onto the military leadership and thereby been extremely destructive to the United States military.

Neutralizing Leadership

When the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the military leader, which is the area for development of effective Norms and Standards, Scale of Values and Frame of Reference, is destroyed there will be annihilation in Battle. Therefore, the quickest way to be defeated in battle is to LACK the moral courage to KILL the enemy by any means possible which will bring on destruction of one's Battle Courage and ultimate defeat. The quickest way to neutralize the Right Lobe of the Soul is with the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins, especially jealousy, guilt, emotional revolt, self pity, sentimentality, pettiness, vindictiveness, etc. When there is in the Right Lobe of the Soul no moral courage because of Mental Attitude Sin and no battle courage as a result of this, there will be no ability to be decisive in leadership and this means absolute destruction. This is the true absolute value of insidious, unrelenting propaganda programs which have been being effectively used against the United States of America in its education systems for more than 50 years.

WAR Demands Training

The Military Establishment is part of Divine Institution #4 and warfare must be prepared for and men trained for it. A person cannot be a civilian and put on a uniform and pick up a weapon and go to war and become part of a military team without training. In [Num 31:3-5](#), Moses is telling the people to Arm, Mobilize and Train men for war. Abraham trained 280 of his men to be soldiers as well as cattlemen, therefore, BEFORE WARFARE THERE MUST BE TRAINING. An essential part of military training is close order drill which is designed to develop teamwork and instant obedience to commands. Therefore, even when there are good men which are good raw material for combat units, they cannot be put into uniform and given weapons and expected to function as a military TEAM until they are trained. It requires a great deal of training and individual and group discipline with collective concepts involving tactics to accomplish this. However, when a nation has a generation of cowardly men as in the 60s and now again in the early 21st century they cannot even be trained a whole year with any positive results. Trying to fight a war with untrained men results in all of them eventually being killed. The underlying problem is that the civilian mind cannot comprehend this principle and it is civilians who occupy the government and who constantly interfere with military functions. Therefore any civilians who think they can function together as a unit to resist insurgency or tyranny are operating on a FALSE premise.

In the [Book of Judges](#) the Jews were repeatedly enslaved because they NEGLECTED MILITARY TRAINING. When a new generation rises in a nation in peaceful times, they know nothing about war and therefore, EVERY generation MUST be TAUGHT warfare in order to continue protection of the nation and maintain peace. Every generation of men must be taught how to function as a combat team with Self discipline, Group discipline, tactics, strategies and the

functions of various weapons of war. When any nation neglects this principle they will be enslaved just as the Jews were. ([Judg 3:1-2](#)) This has been the problem in the United States of America since the end of World War II. The United States had a NO WIN policy in Korea, Vietnam and in the Middle East as well. There have been civilians in government who have had oversight control of the military who are traitors and there have been and currently are general officers and civilians in government who have degraded in every possible way military training. (This may be changing today in 2025) This has resulted in part from a lack of financial backing, which has been given to Illegal Aliens in the United States as welfare support and education, from allowing homosexuals and females into combat units and from dictating idiotic Rules of Engagement and on and on. The United States has provided training money to other nations who eventually fight against America and then some idiot came up with the idea of VOLAR, the VOLUNTEER ARMY, the most idiotic system ever. The United States of America MUST return to universal military training and the fact is that the properly trained men in the military will most often never use their training because it is a deterrent to war and the best way to have peace in this world ruled by Satan. In addition when men are to be trained for war there must be some sort of a department of defense, a professional war planning department in order that when War occurs it can be determined if one's 10,000 well trained men can face and defeat 20,000 enemy. ([Luke 14:31](#))

Victory in battle is not dependent on numbers but on SKILL, DISCIPLINE thus on TRAINING. Rome conquered the world because of continued Training and the exact observance of discipline in their camps and unwearied cultivation of the Arts of War. ([Judg 3:2](#)) In every case of war for Rome they were always outnumbered, out-skilled or out financed but Rome had extreme training and exacting discipline with continuous practice to harden the troops. Training results in exacting knowledge of a soldier's profession and this heightens his courage so that he only wants the opportunity to execute what he is convinced has been perfectly taught to him.

For the nation focused on freedom, military training pays off double:

- In military life with victory on the battlefield.
- In civilian life with proper authority orientation and function in society.

This occurs because military training turns a boy into a MAN bringing him to self discipline and authority orientation, with a true sense of responsibility under freedom, something severely lacking in the United States of America today. Therefore, Military training must be accomplished with harsh and strict discipline and extremely demanding training efforts under normal circumstances in order for the soldiers to be ready and able to function under abnormal circumstances in combat. The fact is that too many young American men have not come back from war because the training has been made too soft.

War & History

War is a bonifide part of Human History because there are and always will be those who plot warfare and the destruction of peace for their own personal gains. ([Ps 55:20-23](#), [Ps 140:1-2](#), [Ps 68:30](#), [Ps 120:6-7](#), [James 4:1](#)) People constantly plot warfare and it is simply an extension of

the functions of the Old Sin Nature and will exist until the millennial reign of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. This clearly establishes the necessity of the military establishment existing and functioning properly to resist and stave off tyranny when it arises. In [Psalm 140](#) the true nature of communism and islam can be seen in Russia, China, Korea and the Middle East and many other countries who have discovered that Americans are not willing to fight and have lost the ability for effectively waging war.

As a result War will always exist in history despite all man's efforts for peace. ([Matt 24:6](#), [Mk 13:7](#), [Luke 21:9](#)) Jesus said, "there will be wars and rumors of wars until I return" and He will not return until He is to END the Tribulation and at that time there will be the greatest war of all of Human History which HE will end. AFTER this war, then, the Swords will be turned into plowshares and there will be war no more during the millennial reign of The Lord Jesus, The Christ when he supersedes Satan as ruler of this world. ([Is 2:4](#), [Micah 4:3](#)) No person, group nor anything man can ever do will stop WAR but man's misguided efforts can destroy the client nation United States of America today. Therefore War is a bonifide part of history ([Eccl 3:8](#), [Num 21:14](#)) and the application is quite simple. A client nation like the United States of America which is based on freedom which recognizes the separation of church and state, protects the rights of every individual to personally believe in The Lord Jesus, The Christ without being punished for this or to reject Christ without punishment, which is a legitimate nation under a legitimate government and follows the principles of the Divine Institutions and recognizes the individuals right to freedom, privacy, property, and the right of the individual to pursue a course of action commensurate with the Law of the land, IS WORTH FIGHTING FOR.

Motives Leading to War – Hostile Intentions

If it is found that civilized nations do not torture or put their prisoners to death, do not devastate towns and countries, this is because their intelligence exercises greater influence on their mode of carrying on War, and has taught them more effectual means of applying force than these rude acts. However, the tendency to destroy the adversary, which lies at the bottom of the conception of War, is in no way changed or modified through the progress of civilization. War is an act of violence pushed to its utmost bounds; as one side dictates the law to the other, there arises a sort of reciprocal action, which logically must lead to an extreme. ([22](#))

Aggressive nations manufacture war out of aggression on the part of their leadership and become the enemy of freedom. As long as there exists a SINGLE Old Sin Nature in the world there will be WAR. ([James 4:1](#)) Every citizen in a client nation and especially every believer should recognize that world peace is totally impossible and disarmament inevitably means the ultimate conquest of his country but this will not and cannot contribute in any way to world peace. Peace can only exist under the following conditions:

- A nation whose military is so strong that no one will ever think of attacking it.
- A nation who has so dominated the military picture in history and whose freedoms are so great that there is no possibility of any nation initiating warfare against it.

There are two bases for Peace in the Angelic Conflict:

- A supremely strong Military Establishment
- Domination of Bible Doctrine and construction of the Edification Complex in the soul of a maximum number of believers forming the Pivot of mature believers in a nation.

There is no law, system of law or principle of function which can bring world peace except the spiritual principle of developing a large national pivot and / or the development of a very strong military establishment.

WAR is MORAL

There is no moral or spiritual basis for any young man ever being a 'conscientious objector' to war or military service. The bible clearly states the fact that JUST WAR is MORAL and from GOD. It is non-christian and apostate for a believer to be a conscientious objector though it may be normal for him to be a coward as demonstrated by this proclamation. Immoral acts may be committed in war but fighting and killing the enemy of one's nation is MORAL when the war is JUST so that those killing the enemy are right in doing so. Therefore, no one ever has any right to shirk military service as a conscientious objector on the basis of morality or religion and based on the word of God there is no excuse nor justification for a conscientious objector to military service. These young men are simply cowards or those who have their soul saturated with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and Mental Attitude Sins. Therefore, there is no legitimate justifiable basis for the United States Supreme Court Ruling in 1969.

Religion and liberalism have combined to say that War is immoral and young men under certain conditions have a right to refuse to go to war. There was a traitorous plot between the Schools, some Local Churches, and religious clergy to try to help keep young men out of military service and abolish war but Jesus clearly said there would be wars, both HOT and COLD, until the 2nd advent and his reign in the millennium. Therefore, any person who calls himself a conscientious objector is confused and either a coward or traitor. Having cowards in combat lead to military defeat nevertheless war will continue and all cowards and females should be placed in NON-COMBAT support positions. The bible teaches that when a country is about to be destroyed its men become like women and its women assume the roles of men. Oh My God! This clearly is the United States of America today in this early 21st century. It is stupidity and a total disorientation to reality to be involved in the trend and tendency of thinking that warfare is somehow BAD when actually in this world ruled by Satan under EVIL and in the Angelic Conflict overall, it is WARFARE which provides and preserves freedom. Warfare in providing freedom makes evangelism possible and provides the basis for every great missionary activity in all of Human History. Evangelism under Freedom makes it possible for mankind in general to fulfill his created purpose, to freely decide to live under the Plan of God or the Plan of Satan during his lifetime. Without Freedom this cannot be accomplished and the Angelic Conflict cannot be resolved AND man would not have been created in the first place. It is the Military establishment, functioning legitimately under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, which provides, protects or restores freedom and politicians ONLY destroy freedom never provide it. Preservation of any nation, especially a client nation to God like the United States of America, depends only on the Grace of God and the function in the

Spiritual Life of the believer in constructing to completion the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) and as a result God favoring the nation during Warfare.

Just Warfare is From GOD

When conditions exist that require killing of the enemy of one's nation it is not only justified but commanded by God. ([1Chron 5:18-22](#), [Num 21:14](#)) The believer in military service is in full time Christian service and his CHRISTIAN service is being a soldier. He MUST do his job as unto the Lord and when that entails killing the enemy he should be the best killer in his unit. Therefore, the killing of the enemy in Just Warfare is not an act of immorality but one of morality and highly desirable because Just War is PRO-GOD and PRO-CHRISTIANITY. The bible clearly points out that GOD is the source of Just War and that a JUST war is from God. The Jews when fighting the Arabs engaged the FAITH REST process and as a result God delivered them because they put their trust in him. This war ([1Chron 5:22](#)) was from THE GOD and the enemy was KILLED, DEAD. This negates the ideas concerning the immorality of war and being a conscientious objector to military service based on the bible.

Sinful NOT To Go To War

The believer must understand that there are times when it is SINFUL to NOT go to war. The point to be remembered is that FREEDOM always has to be purchased on the Battlefield. This includes Personal Freedom, opportunity for Evangelism and Missionary Activity and all Local Church Functions. When men go to war as patriots they can become very discouraged knowing that yellow cowards are allowed to remain home and chase their girls around town. Those who avoid military service should be aware that they are NOT ONLY SINFUL but bring the lord's anger down on the nation as a whole as well. Therefore, the Draft Dodging, conscientious objectors are overt cowards and SIN against the Lord and their sin will find them out. This occurs when the nation these people live in is DESTROYED by WAR because they refuse to fight, being yellow cowards. The people as a whole then go into slavery and the sin of cowardice and dodging the draft finds them out.

War and the Christian

Reaction against Categories based on a FEW

An arrogant society rejects its own basis for survival by reacting to the failures of a few. When there are failures of a few police officers or failures of a few in large businesses or failures of a few in the military and people react against those CATEGORIES in their society this is a rejection of what is essential in a nation for survival based on the poor functions of only a FEW Old Sin Natures.

Warfare & The Bible

In spite of man's efforts for peace war will exist until the millennial reign of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. ([Matt 24:6-7](#)) People who don't recognize the importance of war and the legitimacy of war are like those who do not recognize that people having Old Sin Natures are basically No Damned Good. This is having one's head in the clouds and being completely

divorced from reality. Jesus was saying in Matthew don't be afraid of warfare or fighting in war, realize that war is a dirty business but do not fear it when it comes along. The Lord gave a command to all believers stating there would always be war, hot and cold, rumors and overt war, and his command was "DO NOT BE FRIGHTENED". He also has said to all believers "Fear not for I am with you". If the believer survives conventional invasion or bombing, either conventional or nuclear, he must remember, IF HE IS ALIVE HE IS STILL IN THE PLAN OF GOD. IF HE IS ALIVE THEN GOD HAS A PURPOSE FOR HIM AND THIS PURPOSE IS TO DO WHAT HE CAN TO STOP THE ENEMY AND KILL COMMUNISTS AND MOSLEMS AND COOPERATE WITH THOSE DOING SO IN ANY WAY POSSIBLE. The last thing this believer needs is FEAR. FEAR removes solutions and freezes thought and all solutions come by clear logical thinking based on principles of Absolutes in time of pressure. One cannot be frightened and use his brain at the same time because all of his accumulated metabolized doctrine is frozen and unusable when he is overcome by fear and has allowed his emotion to control his soul. When the believer finds himself alive then he MUST remember God has a plan and purpose for his life and there is NO EXCUSE FOR FEAR.

For the believer, failing in his relationship with the Lord is all he must fear and nothing else. The key and index to this concept of war is simply that as long as Satan rules this world there will be wars and war is the inevitable result of Satan's total colossal failure to administer the world which he rules. Satan started his failures with a Revolutionary War in Eternity Past against God, so what should be expected of him and his plan in ruling this world. Man was given rulership of this world at his creation in the garden and GAVE it over to Satan. Man will recover rulership of this world again and Satan WILL be removed from this earth and War will end at the 2nd advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Satan is not able to control the people of this world and the Old Sin Natures of people always gets out of line individually and very often collectively. It is interesting to consider that the only time in the history of the Human Race where War will be non-existent is during the perfect government and perfect administration of mankind in the Millennial Reign of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for 1000 years. People are idiots and more often than not live in some fantasy world thinking there can be an end to war in their lifetime. These kinds of people, being completely divorced from reality, also fail to realize that the only thing violent people respect is violence and force greater than they can or are willing to perpetrate. Believers must individually and collectively prepare for war and can, should and actually MUST use any method and any trick, deception or lie to win when in a Just War. The United States of America in the days of Theodore Roosevelt had a reputation for being tough and no nation would presume to interfere with or oppose the United States or its citizens anywhere in the world. Today the United States has a reputation which is laughable in the world and no one has any respect for her now. They burn the American flag and kill American citizens without repercussions whenever and wherever they want to because Americans have been propagandized into complacency by the concept of the Good of ALL Mankind. Americans have allowed weak minded politicians to denude the military so that it CANNOT and is very often not permitted to protect Americans abroad and when it is deployed its functions are interfered with by these same liberal, cowardly, weak, self important politicians. The only way to ever have peace in this world is to be prepared for war and only a vast powerful army is what impresses ambitious nations. Believers MUST take the realistic

view from Bible Doctrine that man is basically sinful and functions under Evil and is inclined to respect nothing but greater force than he is willing or able to produce. This is the only thing which controls crime and prevents war. The reality of life is that when any aggressive or ambitious nation understands that it would be in jeopardy of complete destruction or conquest if it initiates WAR, it is then far less inclined to attack others in war. All peace efforts in the Church Age and tribulation and even in the Old Testament Scripture times simply weakened the nation which was inclined to practice them.

War is Bonifide in History

Therefore it is clearly obvious that warfare is a bonifide part of history and The Lord, himself, even said Man WILL have it until he returns. To stop war the only method which is, has been and always will be, successful is to have UNIVERSAL military training resulting in a strong powerful military establishment. Under this principle anyone who wants government subsidies from welfare should be put in the military where all welfare monies should be routed. Anyone who does not qualify for combat should be put into support functions or first aid positions in the military. There is a time for war and time for peace as clearly stated by Solomon and even Tolstoy understood this and the Lord himself APPROVES of aggressive action by nations when it is for a JUST CAUSE. Knowing that war is inevitable, obviously, national objectives should always focus on being prepared for it. The true principle of Warfare is from GOD and Just Warfare is always from God. Those who are in the force defending the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, therefore, must be in a Just War and will thereby invariably receive the support of God. The Justice of God always demands that believers conduct themselves according to justice and this is impossible apart from spiritual growth because justice demands justice. In spiritual growth as the believer assimilates bible doctrine he is assimilating the “Thinking of Christ” (1Cor 2:16) and this is the reflected thinking of the Justice of God. Therefore, believers do not malign, gossip or judge other believers but give them freedom and privacy in all things. No one can provide others with the freedom to choose for or against The Lord Jesus, The Christ and Bible Doctrine if he is not prepared to WIN in warfare and maintain the freedom of the client nation. In ALL Just Warfare, Justice demands Justice and Justice WILL fulfill Justice.

There are times in life and history when it is wrong NOT TO GO TO WAR. Primarily these are the times when freedom is in danger and therefore are the times for Just War. Considering this principle, anytime believers in the United States of America can fight communism or islam then that is the time to go to war. While George Patton did not know the whole realm of Bible Doctrine in his Spiritual Life he was certainly right when he said the United States should have gone to war with Russia in 1945 and should have totally destroyed communism there. Because this nation did not do so when a Just War was right in front of it but instead turned from it, now America suffers the ongoing problems of Russian Communism. The United States did the same stupid thing by preventing MacArthur from moving across the Yalu river during the Korean War and destroying Chinese Communism when that would have been a Just War. The Evils of Hitler’s Germany were and are concentrated and intensified in Russian and Chinese Communism and Hitler was saturated with Evil and Germany under the Nazis was Evil but not nearly so much as Trotsky, Stalin, Mao and their brands of communism in Russia and China

today. The world would be entirely different today if the United States had gone to war under that principle of a JUST War to fight for freedom against communism. This country and the world as a whole has paid, and will continue to, pay dearly for that failure of America to fight communism in 1945. Today the Russians and Chinese are constantly physically testing the defenses of this nation and others throughout the world, waiting for the right time to destroy the United States. If it were not for the decision of the idiot Franklin Roosevelt to allow Russia into Germany when the United States had unilaterally conquered Germany, when Patton and American forces were in Berlin, Prague and Vienna, the American military would have saved Czechoslovakia and other East European countries from eventual Russian domination. The 3rd army under General George Patton was the fastest moving armored force in history, and Patton could have kept the Russians out and saved Europe from Russian communism. The United States did not function properly then and does not now have the good sense to understand what is a Just War. Since that time our government has been operating under principles of Evil and is immoral in both its foreign and domestic policies and has completely broken with the principle that Justice demands Justice. In the 1930's the principle of justice demanding justice was generally accepted and a part of how society worked but since long before the 1960's it is only ever discussed by those very few pastors who teach the word of God in an expository fashion.

The maintenance of peace by military deterrent is one of the most neglected doctrines in the Word of God. It is only Military victory which produces peace in the land of the victorious. It is battle and success in battle which brings peace and Americans are still to this day in the 21st century riding in relative peace from the victory in World War II. God himself has ordained peace through military victory and The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History in several ways and one which is through war and military victory. God protects the properly functioning client nation from crafty warlike nations functioning solely based on principles of Evil, such as the Russian, Chinese and Cuban communists and islamic terrorists. In communism their speech is smooth, appealing and appeasing while they are constantly preparing for the destruction of those they oppose. The Lord Jesus, The Christ overrules surprise attack and aggression from the enemy of the client nation and can accomplish through military function those things which become a deterrent to those who are using their military to enslave and rob other nations. Therefore, God uses the military in Just War to fight the Evil saturated military and the Evil saturated nations which are out of control. The Lord Jesus, The Christ inevitably always protects the righteous Client Nation, however and unfortunately, the United States of America is no longer a righteous nation and has been failing for a very long time as a client nation. The only protection this nation now has is a result of those very few believers who have pressed on and have reached [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and beyond, and are receiving their 5 temporal categories of Escrow Super – Grace blessings. He, The Lord, will scatter the nations who delight in war. ([Ps 68:30](#)) Those nations who hate peace and use war for conquest are always deceitful and should never be trusted and they all operate under Machiavellian principles and the only protection against such a nation like the Russian or Chinese communists or islamic terrorism is to fight them until they unconditionally surrender or are totally annihilated.

The Word of God clearly teaches that as long as people have Old Sin Natures, and they do and will to the very end of Human History, the only true restraint against the Old Sin Nature functioning in crime is capital punishment and the only restraint against nations functioning under Evil and going to war to conquer others is to defeat and destroy them with strong military functions. Therefore, Believers must always be prepared for war. A great client nation is a nation which, in every generation, whether there is war or not, all young men are trained in military functions. From this there is profit in life in every way possible for the individual and also to the nation. There is also the extreme importance of the Spiritual factor in the Concept of military function as is demonstrated in the importance of the prayers of the military to the Lord God as a deciding factor in time of war. Setting up a security system against all enemies is part of this preparation and this is essential using the factors in the Laws of Divine Establishment which involve setting up troop stationing and weapons distribution. In addition there cannot and must not ever be FEAR in the believer and he must know that the Lord, the Warrior HERO, will fight for him in battle and the wall of fire is always there to protect him. Therefore, it is clear that the purpose of Just War is for the perpetuation of national freedom and protection of fellow citizens, sons and daughters, wives, homes, property and country. Therefore proper preparation for war will prevent an attack by an enemy who always values their own lives over the value of the property they can acquire. Many times American warriors, military heroes, have been brought to shame by radical liberals, even to the point of some of them returning their medals and decorations and having regrets for killing the enemy in war. This is EVIL to the core and demonstrates clearly the incredible level of Arrogant Degeneracy and Reversionistic Apostasy in the people of the United States of America. The key for the believer, especially the warrior, is to never succumb to radical liberal idiocy, is having a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and never, ever, being ashamed of fighting for his country, NOT EVER.

The mature believer who has become the recipient of his Escrow [Super – Grace](#) or [Ultra Super – Grace](#) blessings directly from God is, in warfare, an extremely important factor in the military. When believers have made maximum temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God and have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God being recipients of these incredible Escrow blessings, they are described as courageous in battle and putting to flight the invading armies. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is protected in combat and he will be redeemed from the power of the sword. The believer in warfare having Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul who has reached the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, will have both BATTLE and MORAL courage and WISDOM and [Spiritual Common Sense](#) to anticipate warfare and always be prepared for it. Spiritually Mature heroes will DEFEAT the armies of those who invade their lands. No matter how great the disaster nor how much pressure historically or militarily there is in one's life, there must always be consciousness of the perfection of the Essence of God and the capacity, under the love for God, to appreciate it and function under it's umbrella. The dynamics of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are beautifully demonstrated by the state and function of the mature believer in time of war. Believers are commanded through Bible Doctrine, the Word of God, the “thinking” of Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)) to make war with wisdom. However, in the United States of America this is rarely done because

this nation has traditionally rarely embraced the true biblical concepts of Freedom. It is truly tragic that Americans do not have the corollary concepts of those things which must go with freedom constantly in their Norms and Standards, the strong, prepared and professional military having an attitude which unequivocally deters attacks from Evil saturated invading armies and perpetuates peace in any nation.

The Lord Jesus, The Christ the Lord Sabaoth

The Lord Sabaoth, The Lord of the armies, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, controls history and works on behalf of client or priest nations ([Ps 46:1-11](#)) who face military crises. The client nation is divinely protected as a national entity in which the spiritual maturity of the Believers is sufficient to form a pivot and fulfill the mandates for:

- Evangelism
- Custodianship, Preservation, Protection and Communication of Bible Doctrine
- Providing a haven for Jews and gentiles facing the attack of terrorism
- Sending ORTHODOX missionaries abroad and PROTECTING them in their journey

The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls history especially with regard to evil nations. ([Ps 55:2-23](#)) Evil nations are those which attack other nations who are at peace with them and also threaten others with terrorism. ([Ps 140:1-2](#)) The Prayers of the Believer should be against the attack of evil men and terrorism. The Bible reveals 3 principles of protection against attacking nations of this type: ([1Pet 5:7](#))

- The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls human history
- The Pivot of mature Believers forms a strong military to resist the enemy
- The strong military which is well prepared is to defend the national freedom and national interests at all times

The divine mandate and solution is given in [Ps 55](#). For the Jew in war, and for any client nation by application, [Deut 20:1-3](#) makes it simple. In time of any attack against Israel or any client nation in history, the system of God is simple. If the enemy is antisemitic or anti Christian or anti God, he is in danger of dying in this conflict. Codex III of the Mosaic Law explains that anyone who turns against Israel, and by application any client nation, for any reason will be destroyed forever. There were 3 categories of men in the armies of Israel who would advance in War:

- The Leader, the father of the first Jewish client nation, MOSES
 - He developed the army which preserved Israel against terrorism
- The Levitical Priesthood with a special message of encouragement for the armies
- The Prophets who added encouragement from Eschatology such as Isaiah speaking prophetically ([Is 37:6](#))

The Believer priest, as part of the Royal Family of God, in this Church Age can say to himself, “Hear oh positive mature believers, Do not be afraid, Do not panic, Do not tremble before the enemy”. The system which God has set up to handle this type of problem involves:

- Follow the commands from God which include NO FEAR, “Do not be afraid”:
 - This is the ultimate result of faithful, consistent intake of Bible Doctrine and recognizing that Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine is the only answer to the problems of military engagement, especially

revolution and terrorism.

- Avoid Boredom when there is NO action:
 - Be steady when faced with the enemy
 - Have control over your own mind and thinking
 - Have control of the weapons which you are carrying and in which use you have been trained
- Do not Panic
 - This ultimately depends on the ability to concentrate which develops from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
 - Concentrate when in battle and make sure you can handle the weapons you carry and intend to use
 - Courage and concentration with regard to weapons is essential for winning the battle
 - Panic is EMOTIONAL revolt of the soul and destructive inevitably leading to defeat
- Concentrate on your job
 - In a Squad
 - In a Platoon with its greater weapon delivery potential
 - In a Company which is well developed and where concentration makes it possible to deliver the land
 - In the battalion where leadership principles must exist in order to use what is needed to fight a larger enemy
 - In a brigade
 - In a division
 - In an army
 - In what ever group or unit is available in other services
 - In clandestine service and counter insurgent guerrilla warfare where concentration delivers it and is most essential
- Under fire
 - Focus on the use of the weapon NOT on self when in harms way
 - Focus on shooting the enemy not on the enemy's shooting back
 - When in danger allow a Personal Sense of Destiny to bring calm and steady the use of weapons
- Do not Tremble
 - Have physical control of one's body when facing the enemy
- Learn how to properly handle the weapons and take time to learn them well
 - No one is ever successful in battle unless they know how to handle their weapons well

The Believer, God and War

For the believer involved in the protection and defense of the client nation to God, in counterinsurgency, clandestine warfare and in conventional warfare, GOD will strike down the revolutionary organization IF the nation has a great enough pivot of spiritually mature believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ. God has authorized and will use clandestine counter insurgency, guerrilla and conventional warfare to defeat revolutionaries in a properly functioning client nation. He will use the honorable believer who has enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the

Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to recognize that clandestine war is just as honorable as conventional war. To save the nation, the people of the United States of America must learn the necessity of toleration of conventional war and also the acceptance of counter insurgent clandestine and guerrilla warfare functions and every level of deceit and despicable conduct involved in each. It is just as honorable and patriotic to lie, cheat, steal, kill in clandestine war as it is to kill, capture and destroy the enemy in conventional war. When clandestine war is evaluated it must be on the basis of Biblical Doctrine to be able to see it clearly. This type of war gives citizens the freedom to live normal lives without requiring their function being needed to win in clandestine warfare.

Very often flexibility demands that the home, clothing and lifetime of accumulated possessions be left behind and the individual believer be able to move out with what is in his soul to fight in the civil or clandestine war against revolution. Therefore, in WAR of any category, every believer must have 2 scales of value and must remember that his PRIMARY emergency equipment is not something he stashes or hides but what he carries within his own soul. His deliverance is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his own Soul. When adversity comes the believer must recognize when to switch to an adversity or warfare scale of values to weather the storm of civil war and revolution. He must have truth in one of three categories as Biblical Doctrine saturating the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. He must be flexible, but he cannot be flexible without being humble, and he has to be objective, but must have humility to be objective. Humility is freedom from any involvement in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#). He must be able to reach into his soul and apply the Essence of God, Plan of God and Logistical Grace [Doctrinal Rationales](#) by abandoning all material blessings and shifting from his prosperity scale of values to an adversity scale of values in order to survive a national crisis.

The functions involving counter insurgency may require one to become a mole in the enemy ranks. This is the most difficult thing to do in life, to position oneself to try to penetrate the highest level of enemy function and not be caught. It requires the use of a strong second scale of values for such adversity and one cannot shift to such an adversity scale of values unless he has one. He must have a maximum of Metabolized Biblical Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to make this the content to develop his Scales of Value and the absolute basis for the content of his thoughts. The unbeliever must be thoroughly saturated with the doctrinal principles found in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which support his nation's existence. Then with Bible Doctrine as the content of thinking it will be possible to exercise faith functions and make these thoughts operational. Prejudice produces inefficiency and it is stupidity and Self Righteous Arrogance in thought. Just as when believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ have personal problems and they must use doctrinal thought processes and faith functions to make their thinking operational so also in conventional, clandestine and guerrilla war the believer must function based on faith and with complete and total deception directed toward the enemy. ([9](#), [10](#))

All spiritually mature believers possess humility, flexibility and objectivity from the maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine resources in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In addition,

and most importantly, believers must constantly realize and keep in mind that changing circumstances in life do not change blessings which come from the Justice of God. The fact is that blessing from the Justice of God is always compatible with whatever the historical situation may be. Without the reverse concentration essential in the functions of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 Stages\)](#), the believer cannot adapt to his circumstances and cannot adapt his alternative scale of values to those circumstances. People who are normally courageous in normal situations tend to be impulsive in disaster and an impulsive person becomes stupid in disaster. As long as God gives the believer life and as long as he can think he must be [FLEXIBLE](#). He may even have to cater to the revolutionaries with flexibility and humility in clandestine or overt operations in order to penetrate, infiltrate or deceive them in order to destroy more of them. Killing the low level soldiers in a revolution is useless since when the revolution has been successful the leadership will, themselves, ultimately kill them off. When one can think and survive he will be able to get to more important people in the revolution and take them out efficiently. When God provides for the believer another day for his life during disaster situations **survival** is the issue and in warfare, he will be able to destroy a maximum number of the enemy in the Plan of God if he is patient and just takes his time.

To be able to function properly in intelligence, counter intelligence, insurgency and counter insurgency especially, one must be able to appear stupid or naive when in fact he is incredibly intelligent and perceptive. It is important to remember that arrogant people are impressed by sincerity. Therefore if arrogant people are impressed by sincerity the means of getting to arrogant people is to appear very sincere. Counter insurgency requires the greatest courage and greatest flexibility and objectivity. There are no written rules for counter intelligence nor for counter insurgency. The clandestine and counter insurgent warrior has to be extremely intelligent, very courageous and have great integrity in order to function successfully in counter intelligence or counter insurgency all the while being deceitful and totally underhanded.

Murder vs Killing in Battle

The incredible thing about a believer who has made Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is that he can be a great person in peace time and also a great warrior in time of war and he knows which is which and what to do in each time. Radical Liberals continue to propagandize the people with a FALSE and EVIL concept that a terrible thing happens when one goes to war, contending that men become killers and then remain so after war is ended. In murder, which is forbidden by God, there is always involvement of EMOTION OR PASSION in killing, but IN WARFARE KILLING IS TO BE WITHOUT EMOTION. A professional soldier is NEVER EVER a murderer being professional he does not even have any emotion with regard to killing enemies in battle. The better he is in killing the enemy the LESS emotion he has about it. This is what is important in being professional in military functions. There is to be NO EMOTION at all involved in killing the enemy ever. The professional soldier uses his weapons without emotion calmly coolly and with intelligent application and when he returns from war to peace time again there is no problem in making the transition BECAUSE HE WAS PROFESSIONAL IN HIS JOB OF KILLING WITHOUT EMOTION. The emotional rejects who come out of war may turn to murder or crime or wife beating but they were not professional in war and were most

definitely emotional during their killing of the enemy. With Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is never a problem making a transition between war and peace time for the advancing or mature believer. The Lord Jesus, The Christ said at one time to Peter, “put up your sword in your scabbard” and this is very often quoted and taken out of context and applied in an attempt to prevent people individually or the nation as a whole from engaging in self defense. Christ, here, was referring only to those who draw the sword in CRIME and that they would perish by the sword of CAPITAL PUNISHMENT under Law Enforcement. Be completely clear about this because this passage has nothing whatever to do with disallowing WAR and military functions and Jesus was talking about criminality being wrong NOT WARFARE OR LAW ENFORCEMENT OR SELF DEFENSE.

Understanding Fear

On the positive side the term fear connotes:

- Awe
- Respect
- Admiration
- Appreciation of authority
- Love as respect for someone or something
- Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as institutional virtue
- ([2Sam 23:2-3](#), [Neh 5:9](#), [Job 28:28](#), [Ps 19:9](#))

On the negative side fear is a composite of Mental Attitude Sins:

- Panic or passion in danger with a strong desire to escape danger, to run quickly from it
- An active feeling of:
 - Dread
 - Fright
 - Terror
- Apprehension
- Consternation
 - ([1Sam 17:11](#), [Prov 29:25](#))
- Fear is often a sign of reversionism ([1Sam 18:12](#), [1Sam 18:29](#))

Fear is prohibited under the principles of the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages)* ([Ex 14:13-14](#)) Believers are commanded to claim promises under the Faith Rest Drill Stage 2, to clear the soul of fear in order to be able to apply Bible Doctrine to experience. ([Deut 31:6](#), [Deut 31:8](#), [Josh 8:1](#), [1Chron 28:20](#), [Is 41:10](#), [2Tim 1:7](#), [Ps 3:6](#), [Ps 56:3-4](#), [Heb 11:27](#)) Therefore, fear represents a malfunction of Faith Rest so that when fear and Bible Doctrine coexist doctrine is neutralized.

Loyalty, Integrity & The Believer in War

There are 2 categories of loyalty in the equation representing some category of Honor so that “Integrity + Loyalty == Honor or Dishonor”.

- Integrity from Bible Doctrine + loyalty as a virtue == Honor
- Pseudo Integrity from Cosmic Dynasphere Principles + Loyalty as nefariousness == dishonor

Honorable Integrity is derived from the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of

Bible Doctrine and Loyalty is the application of that Bible Doctrine to any and all circumstances of life thus creating virtue. It takes concentration to learn Bible Doctrine and it takes reverse concentration to apply Bible Doctrine. It is the categorically derived [Doctrinal Rationales](#) which enable the controlling of any circumstances of life by providing for the drawing out of doctrinal conclusions in application. This means of controlling life's situations is the development of honor in life. Therefore, Integrity as the result of learning Bible Doctrine must be the source of Loyalty which is the application of that Bible Doctrine to life. Thus the Loyalty of application of Bible Doctrine to life is the virtue resulting in the development of HONOR in the Royal Family of God. When loyalty goes toward a person, any person, then integrity moves toward Evil and thus gets further into dishonor. If there is a conflict between true integrity and loyalty so that such loyalty is misdirected as a result of involvement in arrogance then such loyalty is not a virtue but is arrogance derived from principles of Evil.

Therefore the 2 categories of loyalty can be described as:

- Loyalty as righteousness, virtuousness, rectitude, nobility, incorruptibility which is loyalty from Metabolized Bible Doctrine under a Status Quo of humility resulting in application of the Doctrine through the reverse concentration of the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages)•
- Loyalty as corruption, wickedness, malevolence, nefariousness, malignity is loyalty to persons which are saturated with, or ideas derived from or functioning based on principles from Evil and involved deeply in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred or are persons who propose to function under Evil.

In the Interpretation of commands given during war, the only concern of the believer, as a junior officer, is to obey the orders using proper objective interpretation. The junior officer does not concern himself with whether the order was right or wrong but only with obeying the order correctly and objectively. Integrity is demonstrated in the officer who has correct application of Bible Doctrine to the situation. The officer, even when being reprimanded, must maintain his honor and protect his integrity above all else. He must be able to think under pressure and demonstrate moral courage in all situations. It does not matter how arrogant or emotional a command may be, it only requires obedience by the junior officer. As long as the command is not immoral nor in conflict with the standards of honor of the officer, there is never any reason to question the command nor to disobey the command regardless of the attitude of the one who gave it or the one to whom it is against. Therefore, believers as Officers must make their good decisions compatible with the integrity derived from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order to protect their Honor.

For an officer to obey any command which is counter to a general order in order to gain reward, promotion, decoration or favor would be a complete loss of honor. This would include a decorated officer, a promoted officer and an apparently successful officer who would thus have lost the greatest thing he had as an officer, his honor. He would have placed loyalty to a person over loyalty to his general orders and thus loyalty to principles of Evil over loyalty to Bible Doctrine. This temptation to have loyalty to a person who can promote one if one bends the rules a little is very often a great temptation to all believers. The Integrity derived from

Bible Doctrine always opposes loyalty from principles of Evil which inevitably results in dishonor. The officer who has humility will fulfill the principle of Integrity from Metabolized Bible Doctrine + Loyalty as incorruptibility with the proper application of Bible Doctrine resulting in Honor. It is the residence of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which establishes the principle of loyalty as a virtue. The practice of loyalty as a virtue is the application of Bible Doctrine to all situations, under the principles of humility with freedom from the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#). Humility, objectivity and flexibility avoid involvement with the Interlocking System of Arrogance and misdirected loyalty to false objects or people involved with or influenced by Evil or false practices. Loyalty to Bible Doctrine in humility will cause an officer to maintain his honor. In conditions of clandestine and counter insurgent guerrilla warfare where conventional military organization does not apply, these principles still apply but require a different set of Norms and Standards for the situation which may be at hand and an understanding of the organizational system in place for those special warfare functions.

What a believer thinks and how he functions in his soul is who he really is and what he really is and there is no mirror into which he can look and see the condition of his soul except that formed by Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Personal Honor must be retained in the soul despite all the pressures of life and in life one must lead the way with his soul not his body. Thought orients the soul to reality or unreality and the believer must be able to think in terms of reality therefore must have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. When a person emotes his way through life he will go in circles indefinitely. The problem in any organization where there is a hierarchy of authority is demonstrated by the officer corps of any nation's military where there is minimum of honor and integrity in the nation in general. This is the United States of America today. The result is an overriding infection of the people by the "Cover Your Ass syndrome". One of the great leaders of this nation who was free of this syndrome was Dwight D. Eisenhower along with his contemporaries Douglas MacArthur and George Patton. Today military high command bow and scrape to the secretaries of the military and many other civilians who oversee military budgets and functions. However, when men learn and function under the principles of Bible Doctrine they can maintain their honor and integrity under the greatest pressures from life in any area. Every officer must know that if he loses his honor that life has then become worthless. He must be flexible and know clearly that by living his life as unto the Lord and maintaining his honor and integrity he is doing the only thing he can under pressure. For him to do anything else would be to violate his own soul and destroy himself. The believer as an officer or in any position of subordinate authority must realize that in any organization there is always going to be hypocrisy and he must be able to apply the correct Bible Doctrine with regard to his superiors and his orders including, the doctrine of the total depravity of man as the result of the existence of the Old Sin Nature. Believers MUST always remember the Lord questioning Adam about his fall and how Adam, himself and his wife Ishah both suffered from the "Cover Your Ass syndrome". This "Cover Your Ass syndrome", passes the responsibility for failures on to others and at the same time implies innocence for self and that everyone else involved is flawed. Many times for believers, including Adam, the "Cover Your Ass syndrome" also blames the Lord for one's failures and flaws.

In a good system in a good organization there must never be any way or attempt to force an honorable individual or officer to reject his own honor and integrity. It is only by this means that good leadership is to be preserved. A strong sense of Honor is one important thing which a junior officer can communicate to his senior officers. It takes great flexibility and humility when in the highest rank to realize that one is wrong and then correct the situation immediately. The integrity and honor of junior officers or subordinates in any organization must be an impenetrable barrier to anyone trying to get a wrong thing done through a right person. The principle is: One should never tamper with the loyalty and integrity of a person who is properly oriented to authority and the principles of Bible Doctrine because trying to destroy virtuous loyalty and integrity in another person will bring on triple compound Divine Discipline. A solid principle to remember in life is: Not everyone who opposes you is your enemy and not everyone who is helpful to you is your friend. ([The Reluctant Sparrow](#)) Believers must constantly function under the concept and knowledge that “God makes war against the arrogant but gives greater grace to the humble”. ([1Pet 5:5](#))

The Man for the Crisis

The man for the crisis in any national or historical disaster will be a man of obscurity and have no prominence in the nation. He will not have any great public relations image and no human viewpoint thinking, no crusading efforts, to change things. Obscurity is needed for humility and believers must learn, as Bible Doctrine is assimilated, to develop humility in order to be ready for the crisis. ([1Kings 17:1](#)) It is the responsibility of the believer priest to function daily under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) and maintain consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in all situations without being concerned about his “public” recognition. This results in an accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it is cycled through the Soul forming a [Divine Viewpoint](#) and thus a proper Frame of Reference, Scale of Values and Norms and Standards and which is then applied toward God as motivational virtue, toward man as functional virtue with the production of Divine Good and toward SELF in construction of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#). The believer must not become discouraged when he finds himself in obscurity or in a situation which is incompatible with his own concept of self, thinking that God is dragging his feet regarding the plan for his life. Patience in the believer is developed as part of the Impact Virtues of the Functional Virtues of the [Divine Dynasphere](#) as the believer progresses through the Plan of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The believer who is God’s man for the crisis must be very flexible regarding the Will of God and be able to make instant decisions which do not always agree with his instincts. Flexibility comes from maximum spiritual growth from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is only truly found in Grace Orientated believers and is the opposite of Self Righteous Arrogance. Security in time of historical or national disaster OR national divine punishment is a part of the [Logistical Grace](#) provision from God to the Spiritually mature believer. The desperate times of disaster require flexibility and confidence in Logistical Grace which is totally dependent on the Integrity of God NOT on the ability of man.

Divine provision from God involves only the sovereignty, the volition of GOD, therefore, the system of Logistical Grace support is exceedingly simple. The uncertainty of logistical support can only come from focus on the various and changing natural phenomenon of life, which in fact God will use in Logistical Grace provision for believers. The truly incredible thing to watch is God operating through natural laws which keep on moving and following their course while these exact systems are being used for provision from God for all the needs of the mature believer in all situations. When a nation is saturated with religion it is the worst thing imaginable for that nation especially a client nation like the United States. Religion is Self Righteous Arrogance skimmed off from the principles of Christianity and distorted or directly from EVIL and then used by man in his efforts seeking the approbation of God. Believers who are in the Plan of God lack nothing because Logistical Grace is renewed every morning. ([Ps 23](#)) Logistical Grace provision in time of historical disaster demonstrates the faithfulness of God to the believer and shows that The Lord Jesus, The Christ definitively controls Human History.

When a major crisis comes a little at a time, as has been occurring in the United States of America for many decades, and the advancing or mature believer can see it coming closer every day, economically, politically and militarily, it very often puts many people into a panic. Doctrinal conclusions derived from the use of the doctrinal rationales developed under the Faith Rest Drill ^(5 Stages) put mature believers in control so that they do not, will not and cannot fear nor panic. One of the greatest lessons to be learned by the believer under Faith Rest is to wait on the Lord and trust his judgment. Believers MUST very often come to the end of their own resources before they can depend on the source of all resources. The principles involved are:

- Humility + Helplessness promotes Grace Orientation
- Human Resources may become exhausted but Bible Doctrine is always there
- Human extremes are God's Opportunities

The believer must always remember that the Justice of God can impute Logistical Grace support to the Righteousness of God in the believer while at the same time it is administering EXTREME Divine Discipline and judgment to the apostate, degenerate client nation. The SOURCE always remains the same and the Integrity of God may use many varied means to supply the believer's needs but the SOURCE is always the same. Therefore it should be clear that God has a plan and a purpose for the life of the believer who remains under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and GOD will solve the impossible problem for the mature believer every time.

Success in War

The client nation must have real gentleman OFF of the field of battle, however, once the war begins these same gentlemen must be willing to do everything and anything possible and imaginable to win. Nothing is off limits or prohibited in conventional or clandestine war with the clear exception of abusing civilian populations in conventional warfare. The only exception to this is when it is clear that the civilian population is clearly in total support of the enemy in Warfare. This includes what may be necessary when facing organized guerrilla warfare. NOT like the function of the American military in Korea or Vietnam or in the Gulf War in these Guerrilla type wars. During War when the battle is being waged if there is anyone still standing up they are to be knocked down and out and killed until the rest surrender

UNILATERALLY and UNCONDITIONALLY. The objective is to WIN and to win there must be the killing of so many of the opposition that they cannot any longer muster enough force to fight for any reason. This adds up to the fact that when believers serve in any military organization and are manning some weapon or weapon system designed to kill the enemy in mass, it is their responsibility to man that weapon in a cool, calm, detached, professional way and kill the enemy efficiently without emotion. If a believer kills thousands of the enemy then he has done his job as unto the Lord and that is exactly what the Lord expects from him at that time under those conditions and this is the correct application of the military image of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for the Church Age, the Age of Israel, and the tribulation as well. The attitude must be KILL and do so professionally and coolly, calmly and without emotion but effectively.

Then, a nation with a prepared military lives in peace and security. Military victory and proper military function is based on a victory of Mental Attitude. It is a myth that one must have combat experience in order to succeed in military actions. The believer especially must have the right Mental Attitude and Motivation from a Maximum accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and some level of TRAINING which is effective, meaningful training. It is a true fact and proven in all of military history that COMBAT EXPERIENCE IS MEANINGLESS and it is the training, mental attitude, discipline and leadership which counts combined with high morale and esprit DE corps at the time of entering the conflict. Good leadership and discipline with great training will offset any lack of combat experience. Consider the Devil's Brigade commanded by Robert Frederick. Observe the performance of American troops in World War II who, when commanders were killed, continued to function effectively as a result of lower level leadership assuming command, which demonstrated that combat experience is of absolutely no consequence with regard to success in battlefield situations.

The Importance of Bible Doctrine in War

The first thing a Christian should learn is his obligation to serve his country under patriotism in the military and help protect his nation as part of the Laws of Divine Establishment and part of the principles of Suffering for Blessing. (Ps 27:3-4) The basis for such service begins with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as the understanding and adherence to the Divine Institutions and Laws of Divine Establishment. Just War is moral and the United States Supreme court decision in 1969 that young men can refuse military service based on Moral Grounds IE. the immorality of war and killing, is based totally on EVIL. However, One's Relationship to the military should always be a matter of personal leading from the Lord. How and under what conditions the male believer joins the military is between him and the Lord and there are some cases when the Lord will NOT lead a young male believer into the military.

Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the only thing which can ever prosper in life and it is the key to the Grace of God and Plan of God. Therefore, Bible Doctrine is one of the most important things in warfare but the whole

realm of Bible Doctrine is only available to the believer. [Psalm 27](#) is the professional soldier speaking, King David, and the secret to the confidence of David under pressure in war is the whole realm of [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) saturating his Right Lobe of the Soul and his completed [Edification Complex of the Soul](#). However, any involvement in the Apostasy of [Reversionism](#) and Degeneracy of the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) literally destroys, erases, wipes out any Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There are 2 essential functions necessary to stop this Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins and the degrading of the Spiritual Life in Reversionism. The believer must consistently function using the [Rebound Procedure](#) and must become persistent in his Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). This will build up the Frame of Reference in the Right Lobe of the Soul and distribute Metabolized Bible Doctrine through all compartments of the Right Lobe of the Soul restoring or building the Edification Complex of the Soul. The cycling of Metabolized Bible Doctrine through the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul provides the [Divine Viewpoint](#) of life for the believer. This then eliminates any fear which could come to the believer as a result of the Divine Viewpoint providing stabilization of his soul from the completion of his Edification Complex of the Soul. Thus Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is dramatically important in every condition, situation, exigency of life whether it is pressure, adversity and disaster OR great unexpected prosperity.

This also applies to a somewhat lessor extent to the unbeliever who can learn, understand and adhere to the Bible Doctrine principles regarding the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions with the same results. The perpetuation of any level of Divine Viewpoint, Patriotism derived from the principles of Divine Institutions and Laws of Divine Establishment whether involving volition or nationalism, are not only part of the Christian Way of Life but a decisive factor in this Church Age, the intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict, for both believer and unbeliever. In this intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict the believer IS IN one warfare situation which is unseen and spiritual and in the United States of America in this 21st century he is on the very brink of another great war which will be seen and temporal. In both of these believers can only be completely prepared by the consistent daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, controls Human History and the destiny of a national entity through the function of spiritually mature believers and in his matchless and endless grace he can take a nation which is almost DOWN and OUT and restore it when the focus of a large number of believers is directed onto his Grace Plan. While the individual believer may be called on to fight in war for the freedom of his nation he must be cognizant of and constantly remember that the ultimate outcome of such warfare is completely in the hands of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The believer with a completed Edification Complex of the Soul is in the Plan of God to a maximum degree and part of the Plan of God revolves around a purpose for maximum utilization of that Edification Complex of the Soul and this may at times be WAR.

Warfare and combat have many shocks built in such as, killing people, imagining them as young people in another country with wives and mothers, etc. These things occur to all men

involved in War and it is extremely important to keep Bible Doctrine as the correct viewpoint and perspective in this situation and maintain the proper Mental Attitude in combat situations. The principle for the believer is no matter the size or level of effectiveness of an enemy unit against him, HE SHALL NOT FEAR! He must not second guess the value of his functions in killing the enemy. He must be confident and slam his combat problems into the hands of God. He must focus on the principle that being a member of the Royal Family of God, God has a plan for his life which He designed in Eternity Past and this will continue as long as his life is slated under this plan to continue and there never will be a time when anyone or anything in this world can take him out of this plan and this world until it is his time. The point is that as long as God's plan says the believer is to remain on this earth he is as safe in combat as he is when on a picnic. Therefore in combat he can and will have confidence, be objective in killing the enemy without fear and without remorse or guilt. Everyone has some level of fear but the believer must use Divine Viewpoint thinking from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine to overcome this fear in order to effectively fight in combat and win the freedoms for which he is fighting. With maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul the believer will build up to a maximum his moral courage and OVERCOME all fear with effective action. Therefore IN SPITE OF war and any enemy forces aligned against him, the believer will KEEP ON TRUSTING using the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages)•

God Prepares the Believer for Training

David was a shepherd and knew nothing of war but after having encountered and killed a bear and a lion which were trying to take his sheep he went and encountered Goliath the champion warrior of the Philistines, he then learned War. ([Ps 18:32-34](#), [Ps 144:1-2](#)) God teaches the believer to KILL the enemy in Battle and the bible explains that David's way was blameless because he KILLED the enemy in War. When one has been taught how to kill this has to be stimulated and controlled with extremely strong discipline and never controlled by emotion. **Ps 144:1** is a hand to hand combat verse which says that the Lord teaches the believer Hand to Hand combat and how to use the weapons of war. The source of this training is The Lord Jesus, The Christ which is where David got his ability in military leadership. **Ps 144:2** is a passage which explains that the Lord also teaches military leadership and the ability to plan The Tactics and The Strategy needed for victory in War. David started as a believer with maximum function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception thus maximum accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul THEN he learned tactics of war, fighting in combat with weapons and hand to hand combat and then he learned strategy for planning and implementing war. Therefore, God, with Bible Doctrine, prepares the believer for training and the progressions of military training and military life.

There is a necessity for training the believer to handle crises in life by consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation with Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Believers must prepare for life's crises by consistently studying Bible Doctrine BEFORE the crises occur under normal conditions. This puts Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that it can be drawn out and

applied to the crisis. This is what also must occur with military training, the principles of warfare are moved into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as technical information and therefore are able to be drawn on for application in combat and other warfare situations. Therefore, in order to have coordinated military teams from squad to battalion even army level requires strict and intensive military training. ALL military training must be conducted under normal life circumstances in order to properly prepare the soldier for the ABNORMAL circumstances of combat when he is being attacked and shot at. Much of what is to be learned by the soldier is not normal in civilian life:

- Close Order Drill – to bring instant obedience to commands, focus and concentration and ability to function as a team.
- Infiltration by 2 – how to conduct silent attacks and successfully kill the enemy.
- Squad Rushes – how to function as a small team.
- Moving toward the enemy to survive – never running away from enemy fire or hiding.

Training with LIVE ammunition is a necessity because it has been proven to be the best method of training and saves many soldiers lives, although at times some stupid, terrified recruit sticks his head up too high and it is shot off. This should never call for the cessation of this type of training since this individual would have gotten his head shot off in combat anyway because of his emotionalism and stupidity.

Mental Attitude in Combat

The Believer in Combat

Deut 20:4 is the promise to the Believer in harms way when he is fighting for Freedom and his client nation. This is part of the Faith Rest Drill ^(5 Stages), and the believer must remember, Military service and functions are honorable and killing in battle, when done professionally, is also honorable and whatever is necessary to succeed in clandestine and guerrilla warfare to preserve freedom and the client nation is also HONORABLE. (**Deut 31:6**, **Deut 31:8**) The most dangerous position one can be assigned in moving through combat areas near the enemy is the individual or group who is functioning as the POINT. However, the Believer must never fear any forward position in advance toward the enemy knowing that God is with him, The Lord Jesus, The Christ is with him at all times. (**Is 41:10**) Fear is Arrogance and an emotional sin and must be subjected to the thinking of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, therefore prior to military service the believer must assimilate a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There are 5 main categories of arrogance and emotional sins which will destroy the ability to protect family, home, loved ones and client nation.

- Fear
- Worry
- Anxiety
- Loss of Self Control
- Hatred

These result in Blotting out Bible Doctrine through emotional reactions and involvement in the

Interlocking System of Arrogance. This means the believer moves away from doing anything professionally or correctly in the function of arms and it results in:

- Anger
- Uncontrolled Violence
- Loss of professional ability
- Self Pity
 - This believer sits and dies somewhere thinking only of self
- Subjective Arrogance
- Reaction
- Development of a Guilt complex as a result of killing the enemy

The Believer must use the **10 Problem Solving Devices** to focus his attention on reality and the place of Bible Doctrine in pressure situations. God is perfect and has a perfect plan for the lives of all believers and because of his plan God has provided the power and means of overcoming all pressures and situations found in life in several categories: (**2Tim 1:7**)

- Get rid of Fear
- Get rid of Worry
- Get rid of Anxiety
- Get rid of Hatred
- Get rid of Self Pity
- Get rid of Reaction and Guilt
- Get rid of Arrogance
- Get rid of Ignorance and all other contradictions to the Plan of God

3 of the 10 Problem Solving Devices in the Plan of God are related to virtue love and the believer must be able to bring them to bear on every pressure situation he encounters especially in any form of combat:

- Personal Love for God the Father
- Impersonal Love for Mankind
- Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ

Believers must always remember that in war there is no contradiction with Impersonal Love for Mankind. When you are killing the enemy remember that they have the opportunity to choose to kill and to destroy and do all sorts of monstrous things to other human beings, and it is the responsibility of the believer to prevent this if and whenever possible. (**Rom 1:19**)

Combat vs Instincts

There are often many principles in the functions of life which are opposite to one's instincts, especially in combat situations. In combat one's instincts say he should either flee from the enemy trying to kill him or stay where he is protected by his surroundings and these are the PRIMARY BASIC reasons men die in combat. Contrary to all instincts the quicker one gets to the enemy the safer he will be and the final 50 to 100 yards before getting to the enemy are the safest places to be. The enemy at long range is cool and focused aiming and shooting carefully and when one sits still in 1 spot the enemy will eventually zero in on him and take him out and the same occurs when one runs away from the enemy. All human instincts and

emotions involved in cowardice tell one to RUN from the enemy who is trying to kill him. However, when you are moving rapidly toward him and getting close to him then the enemy gets nervous and loses his focus and concentration, but it takes MORAL courage and Battle courage, along with a lot of INTENSE training, to be able to do this.

Women in Combat

The woman is so emotionally oriented, having been created and designed as a responder, that it is impossible for her objectively and efficiently kill the enemy in combat. For the woman to do this she has to work up a high pitch of emotion and hatred in order to effectively KILL and this does not last and then after combat she goes through all the concepts of regression and regret. This is another pertinent reason for women to never be in combat units. This also explains what is wrong with the incredible GUILT reactions of soldiers coming back from combat, they are female in their souls and function under Emotional Revolt of the Soul rather than Rational Logical Thought from a doctrinal viewpoint whether that be from the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions or the entire realm of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul. Also, women should never serve in combat because they are designed by God as responders and have a supercharged emotional system which prevents the concentration needed for objective functions in combat. When men of fighting age become effeminate and act like women and become responders instead of aggressors or there are permitted a maximum number of homosexuals in a society or the men become adult children, then that nation's armies are degenerated, degraded and ultimately destroyed. These men are not amenable to the intense military training and discipline needed for them to function as a combat team and they inevitably get slaughtered in battle. When a man transforms his character to that of a woman becoming a responder, which is demonstrated by his standing around in a group and waiting to be introduced, he is USELESS. When he loses the concentration and aggressiveness of manhood and becomes effeminate and emotionally subjective about things then he will be killed in combat. This is the inevitable plight of the woman in combat.

War is for Adults

War Requires Stability and Concentration and therefore is for adults not children. ([Num 1:3](#), [Num 26:2](#)) According to the bible an adult, for military service and war, is considered to be a male beyond the age of 20. In addition war cannot be prosecuted effectively by a man who is "double minded", having his concentration on some aspect of his personal life and NOT combat. No man should ever get married until he grows up and matures and maturity is in part having a sense of responsibility and marriage requires responsibility. In combat a newly married man is double minded and thinking of his wife at home and not doing his job of killing the enemy. The double minded man is unstable in all his ways and warfare and battle demand the ultimate of concentration and focus. Also, one who has built a new house will be a double minded man unstable in all his ways as will one who has just started a new business. Effective tactics and battlefield strategies require extreme concentration to execute them effectively. A double minded man for any reason will result in his being careless and not

coordinating with his combat team and getting himself and possibly all of them killed. These men are not cowards but cannot concentrate in battle because of other things which are important to them constantly being on their minds.

War Requires both Moral and Battle Courage

When one goes to war, he must have battle courage which comes from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is derived from his Moral Courage. In war the soldier will see things he is not used to seeing at times but the Mental Attitude he is to have is “BE NOT AFRAID” and this is a combination of Moral and Battle Courage. Moral courage developed from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine is to be with the believer all the time while Battle courage derived from Moral Courage is specifically for the exigencies of combat. The believer has the greatest advantage in the area of battle courage because he knows he is in the Plan of God and God has a purpose for his life and he can be in the midst of battle being shot at from all around and yet he knows he is not going to die until God’s purpose for his life is completed. He understands that if he is going to be terminated right there he might as well do a GREAT job of killing the enemy, doing it heartily and as unto the Lord under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, so that it will count for DIVINE GOOD and be rewardable at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.

The importance of Mental Attitude in Warfare is clear because without a proper Mental Attitude and effective training it is impossible to come out of war Alive and Victorious. However, even with effective training a poor Mental Attitude can neutralize the training and this soldier will never succeed. It is proper Mental Attitude and NOT emotional reactions in combat which makes TRUE heroes. ***The Mental Attitude of a soldier must be that there will always be people in his nation whose freedom is more important than his life.*** The believer must know that he is in full time Christian service no matter what he was doing. The United States of America has a fantastic Christian heritage of freedom and that is the single most important thing which is worth fighting and dying for. **Deut 20:1** recognizes that WAR is a valid response to foreign aggression against one’s nation. The first correct Mental Attitude principle is that the BELIEVER MUST NOT FEAR no matter who or what is against him because THE LORD GOD IS WITH HIM. Cowardice is obviously a poor Mental Attitude and results from some level of FEAR which will invariably cause the body to fail in combat.

The soldier must be totally focused in combat and he must have dedication to the military to fight effectively. For the Mental Attitude to be focused for combat there must be Moral Courage and this is developed in the Right Lobe of the Soul and is sustained there by Spiritual Factors, the accumulation of maximum levels of Metabolized Bible Doctrine. When soldiers have a lapse of Divine Viewpoint Mental Attitude this destroys their Moral Courage and which destroys any battle courage they may have. Therefore, the primary source of proper Mental Attitude for the Christian is consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The believer who is a soldier must have the desire and motivation to LEARN to kill the enemy with whatever they

can find or have with them. It is not unusual to entertain some fear when entering combat and the soldier must be relaxed as a result of maximum accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of his Soul in order to overcome the fear. This means that prior to combat every believer must function under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine consistently and under the Grace Apparatus for Perception accumulate a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Soul and construct a completed Edification Complex of the Soul. This is where Character, Moral Courage and Battle Courage are developed. Then there should be application of this Bible Doctrine toward God with [Motivational Virtue](#) bringing an understanding of the Plan of God and that HE is in that plan until GOD, Himself, takes him out of this life. Then there can be the Application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine as Functional Virtue toward Man and circumstances of War recognizing that his job is to KILL the enemy in war without any compunction and to do so heartily as unto the Lord. The believer in war and in combat should be the BEST killer in his outfit and this is his testimony and witness as to the Plan of God for his life. The Lord is omnipresent, he is ubiquitous throughout the earth and searches out the advancing and mature believer to support him throughout his life especially in combat. [2Chron 16:9](#)

The proper procedure to be followed for all combat situations is to have the Communicator of Bible Doctrine come forth and speak to the troops because the key to successful military activity is a spiritual one. This is the responsibility of the Pastor Teacher or Chaplain to take men trained to win in combat and to encourage them building up their moral and battle courage. The believer must recognize that in preparation for combat, it is the LORD GOD he should focus on. Therefore, when a man, especially the believer, goes to war he is to SPRING FORTH into battle with courage and upon seeing the enemy with equipment and men which far outnumber his forces he SHALL NOT BE AFRAID OF THEM.

This is not referring to the soldier being apprehensive before battle having butterflies in his belly which is NOT SINFUL, wrong or cowardly. However, it is catering or succumbing to this feeling with emotionalism or irrational thinking which leads to cowardice. Upon confronting the enemy, even when outnumbered or out equipped the first thing the believer must do is push down his fear and proceed against them under the guidance and protection of the Lord. No one can ever maneuver or function in any way as a military organization when neutralized by fear. There must be a Moral courage which draws on the spiritual resources of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul is cycled through the soul and applied to the situation resulting in strong battle courage. When the believer is in combat he must KNOW that the LORD is with him and is not with the cowards who are still sitting at home watching their draft cards burning. When in combat his job is to kill the enemy and it is the Christian's responsibility to do so with great efficiency and as unto the Lord in the best possible way using anything available to KILL AS MANY OF THE ENEMY AS POSSIBLE. Thus, moral courage is described in the words of the communicator of Bible Doctrine and the officers and Battle courage is described as KILLING every enemy soldier.

War as Personal Divine Discipline

When individuals move themselves deeply into Apostasy, a lower level of the stages of Reversionism, God may provide WAR as a means of Divine Discipline for that person and this may result in his dying the Sin Unto Death. This was King Saul at the battle of Mt. Gilboa when he committed suicide by falling on his own sword because he was losing the battle. In Job chapter 10, Job is saying, he has had peace but now has WAR, he is now full of bitterness in the soul and the bitterness against him is renewed by CHANGES and WAR. When this occurs in the believer he is too cowardly to fight and is fainting in his soul and is saturated with Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. (Job 10:1, Job 10:17-18) Thus, War is a system of personal Divine Discipline for the believer who has not continued his progress in the Spiritual Life and this SOUL attitude of Mental Attitude Arrogance is disciplined by means of warfare. (Job 10:17-18) In the case of Job, he was generally not cowardly nor apostate but was under the extreme testing of Evidence Testing as a believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. He did slide temporarily into this mental state from the extreme pressure but eventually recovered and proved to be a fantastic primary witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial.

Divine Good Production in War

Divine Good is the basis for victory in the Angelic Conflict, (Rom 12:21) and the believer is left on this earth during the resolution of the Angelic Conflict for the production of Divine Good. This is the beauty of combat for the Christian in Just Warfare where he can be KILLING the enemy and producing Divine Good. This is the beauty of peacetime for the Christian where he can be witnessing for Christ and functioning in his peacetime occupation or profession and producing Divine Good. These both are the FULL TIME CHRISTIAN SERVICE of every believer and in it he can be producing Divine Good. (Eph 2:10) Divine Good production is a sign of stability in the believer no matter what his function may be in life. (2Thes 2:17) Therefore, Divine Good in combat for the Christian is to KILL as many of the enemy as possible. Those who are cowardly and fail to kill the enemy have only Human Good production if any at all. There are 3 necessities for the production of Divine Good by the believer:

- Filling of God the Holy Spirit
 - Therefore prior to going into battle the believer should use the rebound procedure to ensure he is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit when he kills the enemy.
- Epignosis or Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated to a maximum level in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- Edification Complex of the Soul completed in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

The moral of the story is that to function in the Plan of God you do not have to run around doing good deeds for mankind because sometimes you have to KILL THEM!

Deliverance in Warfare

In **Ps 144:2**, “The LORD your God will deliver them into your hands” means the Lord will do the fighting for the believer during combat. However, IF the believer is to be delivered in War his enemies MUST DIE. If the enemies DO NOT die he cannot and will not be delivered, the enemy will regroup, reorganize and reestablish his aggression at some point in the future to return to fight again. The only way to be delivered in warfare is over the dead bodies of the enemy who must be KILLED in the most efficient way possible. When young men go to war and come back alive and mentally stable it is ONLY because they have turned into EXCELLENT, BEFORE THE LORD, DO IT AS UNTO THE LORD, KILLERS. The soldier and strong believer who is any kind of a man will return from war with a lot of the blood of the enemy on his hands and a completely relaxed guilt free Mental Attitude and this is why the United States of America has been a FREE country for so long. God has a purpose for all believers in Military service and his plan for the life of each of these believers will go on in spite of any combat situations. As long as God has a purpose for the believer in this life, he, even as a soldier, WILL NOT, IN FACT CANNOT BE KILLED IN COMBAT. The only concern of the believer in combat is to ensure he is doing his job to the best of his ability as UNTO THE LORD and to be using his training, weapons and planning of tactics most effectively.

Believers are protected in warfare

The believer must never go to war unless he understands some principles of Bible Doctrine which must be stored in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. It is this Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul which can then be applied from the wisdom compartment in time of battle. The application is strengthened and facilitated by Motivational Virtue and **Functional Virtue** from the Integrity Envelope of the **Divine Dynasphere**. Therefore, the faster the believer builds to completion his **Edification Complex of the Soul** the more effective will be his function under the Plan of God whether in combat or any other pursuit in life.

As a result of the completion of the Edification Complex of the Soul, the believer has a Wall of Fire protecting him in both normal times and war. (**Job 38:21**) The only exception is if it is in the Plan of God for his life to end in battle then for the advancing believer this will be under dying grace and great fun and pleasure for the believer. Thinking that War is dangerous is a false perspective because the believer must understand clearly that WAR is no more dangerous than driving on the freeways of any major city or across the country on the interstate highways. If the Plan of God calls for him to engage in combat he is just as safe there as he is sitting in a Local Church in bible study or in his living room listening to a bible study recording. The principle and fact is that NO weapon formed against the believer will ever prosper and result in his destruction and he will be just as safe in battle as anywhere else in life. When the Plan of God calls for his life to continue and to have X number of days and even when those days include battle and combat he is just as safe in combat as anywhere else. The believer must clearly understand that the Plan of God is PERFECT and WILL go on and the Word of God will go on and GOD must vindicate his word wherever it is found, and the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe is in that plan and WILL be vindicated by GOD! The only responsibility for the believer soldier is to maintain consistent

function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and then apply the Metabolized Bible Doctrine gained from this to his functions in life in the military profession. ([Job 5:19-20](#)) The Lord is on continuous patrol throughout the whole earth to constantly protect the believer who has a completed Edification Complex in his soul. However, those who function consistently under Negative Volition toward God or Bible Doctrine will constantly have WARS. ([2Chron 16:9](#)) Therefore, it is the believer's consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception which is the basis for his deliverance and the perpetuation of his client nation. Because the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) is only available to believers, the KEY to the deliverance and survival of the United States depends primarily on the believer. It is the CHARACTER or Essence of God which causes a remnant of believers to escape the destruction of their nation which has come under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline. Therefore, God protects the believer in economic depression and catastrophe, War, Social destruction, Military service and threat of physical DEATH does not cause him to be afraid. Therefore Combat should never engender FEAR for any reason and the people who fear anything are stupid and totally lack Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul. Whether in normal times or when in war, the believer who has significantly advanced in the Spiritual Life or is in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will have peace and relaxation during his death ([2Cor 5:6-8](#), [Rev 21:4](#))

Deliverance, How Does it Work

Some 3500 years ago The Lord God Jehovah, the God of Israel preformed the most dramatic deliverance in Human History. There first was the provision of 9 plagues from God through Moses and Aaron to the Egyptians as a result of the LOCKED in Negative Volition of Pharaoh Amenhotep II refusing to grant freedom to the Jews in slavery to Egypt for 400 years. The Egyptians suffered incredible adversity during this time but the Jews who lived in Egypt in slavery were unaffected. Then the Lord God of Israel told Moses that he was to make certain preparations and that He, God, would deliver the 10th plague himself. In this final plague the first born of every person and every animal in Egypt was killed. The preparations the Jews were to make were a detailed explanation as to how they, and other gentile believers at that time, were to prepare a sacrifice and exactly how they were to mark their homes and eat the meat from the sacrifice. This was the first Passover for the Jews and it was designed to represent the Substitutionary Spiritual Death and sacrifice of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for all mankind and to signal the Angel of Death to PASSOVER the homes marked properly with the sacrifices blood. (It is extremely interesting to note in passing that the EXACT day of the Passover the 14th of April in 1441 BC was the EXACT DAY of the crucifixion of Christ on 14 April 32 AD.) The morning after the Angel of Death had done his deed the Jews were to leave Egypt. They had been enslaved for some 400 years at least 4 generations living in squalor with poor nutrition and excessive labor requirements BUT when they left Egypt the Lord provided for each of these believers PERFECT HEALTH and EXTREME Wealth. The route these 2,000,000 adult Jews and Gentiles took under the guidance of Moses, he under instruction from the Lord, took them between 2 mountains or ranges to the edge of the Marsh Sea the northern Red Sea which was at least 2 miles wide and impossible to cross. Here they were in effect trapped for the explicit purpose of testing their faith. They were unable to turn back since the Egyptians had decided to pursue them and Pharaoh had ordered 600 chariots with his army to pursue

and kill them all. In all of their trek out of Egypt they were guided in the day time in the desert with a cloud over them to shade them and guide them in the way they were to go and at night with a pillar of fire to light their way. They traveled day and night until they came to the red sea where they camped. When the Egyptians approached the Jews fell apart and were unable to use the Faith Rest Drill at all to claim the promises of God and then appreciate the logistics required of God. Instead they cried and blamed Moses. Then the Lord God gave Moses instructions as to what to do with his staff and the Lord then parted the waters and sent a wind to push back the waters and dry the sea bed along with the pillar of fire to guide them and dry the land before them. In addition the Cloud which protected them during the day enshrouded the Egyptians so that they were unable to see and unable to pursue the Jews during their crossing. The Jews then made it across the dried sea bed to the other side and safety and watched as the Egyptians in trying to pursue were trapped in the sea bed as the water was released and every last man and animal in the Egyptian chariot forces were drowned.

The believer must STOP and imagine seeing the Egyptian people suffer plague after plague without any Jews or gentile believers being touched by the diseases and the pestilence which were brought to the Egyptians. He must imagine also watching as 20-30 feet of water was held up on each side and the sea bed dried by the wind and pillar of fire and then walking across the area without even a drop of water touching one's foot yet being able to reach out and touch the walls of water. These demonstrations of the faithfulness of God should have been a great lesson for the Jews and they MUST be a great lesson for each and every believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ today. In [Ex 15:1-19](#) the Jews on the day after this deliverance sang a fantastic hymn to the Lord however they in fact did not actually believe what they were singing as was demonstrated later by their failure in their other testings. This joyous hymn was sung by all these believers immediately after the Jews had passed through the red sea and watched the Egyptians die there. The 2,000,000 adult believers and all their children and animals had been completely delivered and did not earn nor deserve it, having been in total panic and having NOT used at all the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#). The principles to remember from this hymn are:

- The Lord did ALL the work for these Jews and the Gentile believers WHO DID NOT DESERVE IT, v1.
- There was total and complete destruction of the Egyptian forces pursuing the Jews, v3-9.
- v9 provides one of the very few references to KILLING LUST of individuals and nations who function under the plan of Evil demonstrating clearly by the deliverance of the Jews and the rest of this hymn how the Lord God of Israel wants these types dealt with.
- v11-13 clearly provides that the deliverance was completely the work of the Lord and the Jews did not deserve it and it was a product of the faithfulness and the Steadfast love of the Lord in graciously and mercifully leading his people out of Egypt and delivering them from the Egyptians once and for all.

This historical account of the Exodus of the Jews from Egyptian slavery after 400 years of conscription MUST be understood clearly by all believers when they are forced into a situation of having to defend themselves or their client nation to God. It is the complete and total responsibility of GOD to provide LOGISTICS and to protect and to preserve the believer who is

consistent in using his Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine to advance in the Spiritual Life to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and move even beyond that point. What Moses told the Jews who lacked FAITH was to “Stand Still or Stand Fast and Watch the Deliverance of the Lord”. This does not mean that the believer should stand around and do nothing and wait for God to strike down his enemies. It does however mean that God will provide the MEANS for the believer to be successful in life and in combat when necessary and all it takes is FAITH. The believer must understand the promises of God and use the Metabolized Bible Doctrine principles resident in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul to support the promises and construct doctrinal rationales and then reach doctrinal conclusions and MOVE OUT in service to the Lord. When in combat the believer must understand how to use the weapons he has and use them judiciously, accurately and PROFESSIONALLY without emotion. David in facing an almost 10 foot tall giant of a man said to him, “you come to me with a sword, a shield and a javelin, I come to you in the name of the Lord, THE BATTLE IS THE LORDS”. Then David stood there in front of Goliath and waited for Goliath to do his best to try to kill him knowing the Lord would protect him. **NO!** David as a shepherd was skilled with a sling and used his sling with perfect stones to kill a bear and a lion which had tried to take some of his sheep. So David having rejected the armor of Saul and the weapons available there, walked down and searched the stream bed in front of Goliath and found 5 perfect stones. Have you ever wondered why he chose 5 stones when facing 1 Goliath? BECAUSE GOLIATH HAD 4 BROTHERS ALSO THERE WITH HIM AND DAVID WAS ANTICIPATING HAVING TO KILL ALL 5 OF THEM HIMSELF, ONE STONE EACH KILL. Totally Professional. As far as David was concerned he was just going to kill these giant men like he had the bear and lion and the Lord would guide his aim and protect and provide for him during the battle. Then David flung his first stone and hit Goliath right between the eyes and knocked him out cold and then took Goliath’s own sword and cut off his head. Always remember, in all situations especially in combat in war, “The Battle is the Lord’s”, so when it becomes necessary don’t just sit on your butt, but move out and fight for freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment for the client nation with absolutely NO FEAR.

Survival of the Nation

From the standpoint of Bible Doctrine and a passage of 2nd Samuel it looks more and more like the United States of America will never survive unless and until Americans are killed by the millions and then hopefully those who remain will have their faces pushed into the dust and finally recognize their enormous arrogance. Maybe, just maybe, in grace God will see fit to honor the existence of a few Jeshurun believers, and others who will come to their senses and choose to **Progress in the Spiritual Life**, and allow the United States to continue under his matchless Grace. The Justice of God has been for several decades giving the people of this nation the most shocking events ever to be imagined as a warning of their status quo regarding his plan. Unfortunately, it seems to have had very little effect on the thinking of the American people. Political arrogance and the general Arrogance involvement of the people has increased in the United States of America to the point that the people cannot any longer blame those in control of the government for the nation’s problems but must blame themselves and must

recognize that the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) has dramatically changed Americans. The Interlocking System of Arrogance has made an incredible difference in the citizens of the United States of America and this arrogance can be found in every facet of American life today. As disaster occurs and adversity increases more and more people will blame the president and congress and any form of government, national, state, or local for the difficulties. However, the individual must remember that elected representatives whom are blamed are still elected by the citizens (that is up until the 2020 election which was permitted to be stolen) and if the blame from the citizens is put onto one whom they have voted for then they, themselves, are the real cowards and the ones to blame. In January of 2025 this is the exact thing occurring in the state of California which is suffering from horrendous losses from wild fires. The people of this country have allowed several presidential and many local elections to be stolen by subversives and have made no great public outcry about it. The true weakness of the American people today is beyond imagination and completely beyond comprehension.

Americans have elected to government service men and women who are inadequate for normal functions and completely incompetent for disaster situations. Unfortunately the actual problem today is that the Interlocking System of Arrogance is so prevalent and prominent in the society of this United States that the people of this country are not by any stretch of the imagination prepared for the disaster which must inevitably come to this country. There is such poor leadership in the high echelons of political, spiritual, judicial and military organizations, all who are functioning within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, that there seems little hope for the nation to continue. In fact this has been becoming much worse since several of the presidents have been sifting out those who are devoted to their OATH of allegiance to the United States Constitution. The only real hope for the nation is that believers must remain under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine in order to enter the ranks of the now grossly shrunken pivot of mature believers and all citizens MUST return to the understanding of and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which is the only remaining stabilizer of the nation.

Protection of the Nation

Within the concepts of the function of the military establishment it should be obvious that war is constantly inevitable and a nation must be organized for war and this correct organization is through the military. Under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#), pertaining to [Divine Institution #4](#), Nationalism, all national freedom comes through military victory. In military principles, any army to be successful must have discipline, which in fact is essential for success in anything in life, especially in military functions. It requires great discipline of troops to function under the overriding chaos of combat. The rule In WAR is always, “When in doubt, ATTACK”! 2 factors are involved in protection of national sovereignty and freedom:

Spiritual factors – which are related to The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History Directly through his essence and through the number of Mature Believers in the nation.

Laws of Divine Establishment factors – whereby The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History indirectly as well through the adherence of a nation to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and especially proper military establishment

functions.

Individual citizens in a nation, MUST be physically armed and these are the ones who are to protect the nation from criminals, invaders and irresponsible government. Gun control legislation is based on the actions of idiots and never MUST be allowed to reach the point of gun confiscation being passed. The Gun is a tool for self defense and if it is legislated out of the hands of those who would need it for defense and control of tyranny then the people are enslaved and the tool is completely useless. Legislation for such reasons or on the basis of the perceived desire or need of a very small percentage of the people, is EVIL in its source and nature. However, one of the primary reasons nations lose their freedom is the abject failure of their military on battlefields. The other is failure of the government system regarding the military in peace time being able to maintain their preparation for war because of lack of civilian support. The Military is a professional organization that always functions under the abnormal circumstances of war and combat but still has to be prepared for it in normal times of peace else they WILL loose battles when they occur resulting in defeat in war. Such defeat always means loss of life, freedom, property, privacy and everything for everyone in the nation and results in one form of slavery or another. Therefore, the failure of the military in any case means and is a result of failure on the part of the people. Those in the military not amenable to discipline will always fail and this reflects lack of self discipline in the general population. It also demonstrates lack of flexibility and no ability to meet tough situations in life and history, which must come with the ongoing change in the circumstances of history.

The United States of America has neglected to go to war when it should have and has gone to war when it should not have done so. This country does not have a clear policy or understanding of what it means to be a “Nation under God” with regard to its timing as to when to go to war and when War is Justified and when it is NOT. World War II was a right and Just War and it was right to destroy communism immediately but the United States did not, and it is right to destroy islam now but it will not. Had the threat of communism been removed at the end of World War II there would be a much better situation in the world today and the United States would have most likely remained #1 on the world stage for a very long time to come. Today the United States is not even in the running of superpower any more and is a total farce in the world and the worst thing is that the world knows it. America is on the same par as England today as a 3rd class nation and is about to completely fall apart.

There are principles of morality in war which dictate that there is a time to go to war when it is a Just War and if the cause is just then God will support the war effort for the client nation. Draft Dodgers, slackers, deserters, those who speak out against the war and discourage the military are sinful before the Lord and if they are believers, in any of these categories, they should use rebound for this sin and then keep moving WITH THEIR MOUTH SHUT. When it is time to go to war, when young men are faced with the fact that their country is involved in war and they refuse military service, it is sinful and against the Will and Plan of God to NOT fight as an individual. It should also be considered treason and executable as a crime against the nation. The president at the time of this lesson, Carter, and Obama for another 8 years pardoned sinful Evil people, draft dodgers by Carter and Terrorists by Obama and today

government service criminals have been pardoned by Biden. If everyone had followed the lead of these draft dodgers and deserted to other countries or fomented terrorism against this nation's system, there would be no nation today and all of the American freedom, which is based on military victory and military functions, would have been totally lost. Obama released the leader of ISIS, a strong moslem terrorist group, and consequently the United States has had to face him again in battle. Where would this or any country be if the terrorists of the world knew that after a few years in prisons like Guantanamo Cuba, they could be freed as Obama freed them? This is the principle by which God treats nations where justice demands justice. Many Self Righteous people, sticking their nose into other people's business, have used this passage at the end of [Num 32:23](#) to try to bring others into line but the only sin actually mentioned here is that of one being a yellow cowardly deserter and refusing military service in time of war.

Universal Military Training

The principle of universal military training is an essential requirement in a legitimate nation and demands TOTAL national conscription. ([Num 1:2-3](#), [Num 26:2](#)) This is the ONLY reason for taking a census of the people and everyone 18 years old or above should be mustered into armies. The Jews had universal military training and when they abandoned it the result was that they went down as a nation into slavery and this is demonstrated in the book of Joshua and during the Assyrian crisis. ([Ps 89:15](#)) The only reason in the bible for avoiding military service, or combat service is the man being of unstable mind, as is a newly married man or one who has just built a new house or started a new business, but this is NOT permanent. This was ordered by God and logically so since 1 year with a woman is not long enough to get tired of her but long enough to still be madly in love with her and thus the man will be stimulated to be a better soldier than others, having something personal for which to fight. Each generation must have training in war under the principle of universal military training in any client nation. Based on this principle, some of the great warrior tribes which opposed the Jews, were allowed to remain in the land after Joshua went into and conquered the land in order to test and keep the Jews sharp in the realm of military service and function. ([Judg 3:1-2](#), [Num 1:2-3](#), [Num 26:2](#)) This had to occur in order to test and keep prepared all who had not been in the wars of Joshua so that all would be properly taught war. Any time there is any extended peace it is because a great victory has been won just as the United States did in World War II but this does not mean there should be reduction of military preparedness, ever. Military service is a noble profession and an occupation which every generation of men should desire and must learn in order to protect their homeland.

Universal in the concept of universal military training actually means EVERY MALE no matter his physical condition must serve in the military. If he has some physical handicap, then he can serve in logistics or office support functions and if women want to serve then it should be in logistics or office support or in first aid support where they would best be placed NOT EVER in combat units. There must also exist in the national entity a professional staff of capable officers who are prepared. There is often a question about or often people reject the principle where Jesus proclaimed "you will have wars and rumors of wars until I return". The principle behind this is that each generation must be trained for war in actual combat. This is bible

doctrine from scripture and the ministry of God the Holy Spirit telling the people of the client nation United States how stupid they are in the military policies of this nation. The American Military does not have actual combat training and when combat training is attempted to be simulated and someone gets hurt or killed during training, immediately the radical liberals emerge and write letters to congress who thereby force the military trainers to back down to garrison duties and engage in no effective Field Training Exercises.

Military training is useless and neutralized when the men of a nation are arrogantly degenerate and reversionistically apostate being full of Emotional Revolt of the Soul, Black Out of the Soul, suffering from Reverse Process Reversionism and are addicted to drugs or antagonistic to authority. Victory in war does not depend on numbers or mere courage ONLY, and strong discipline and training will help insure it. The Romans owed the conquest of the world to constant military training and exact observance of DISCIPLINE and unwearied cultivation of the arts of war. In Rome as in our nation today the people had acquired more and new types of luxury and pleasure and wanted less to know about military training. It was then that they lost the concept of constant training and finally abandoned it totally. When a military organization gets set in its ways, stagnates in its functions, it will inevitably be destroyed and history has proven this repeatedly. This is one of the greatest failings in the United States and American military leadership invariably adopts the systems of military function of any nation which has historically failed.

The decadence of a nation is always reflected in their military. Believers never, at any time in life, can get involved with lust, self centered arrogance, ignoring the rights and authority of others without great adversity being the result. This also applies to the nation in general and specifically to the military establishment and its functions. Once the army is defeated on the battlefield by a hostile force then the citizens of the nation are vulnerable to any type of violence. The United States lost in Korea and Vietnam and then in the 30 plus years culminating in 2001 were constantly subject to varying degrees of foreign and domestic terrorism with the final destruction of the World Trade Center Towers in New York City. The United States of America is now clearly in the situation of totally failing as a client nation and therefore awaiting defeat by the Russian or Chinese communists or even being overcome by islamic terrorists. Believers should study what the Russians did to Germany after they moved in to such places as in Koenigsberg and Berlin and basically all over Germany and east Prussia etc. It is an awakening to engage in the study of the “Rape of Nanjing” whereby a whole Japanese army was given leave to do what they wanted to do to the population. The only reason Americans have not been involved in these terrible things of history YET and are not completely helpless and vulnerable YET is because of the United States military forces which had been very effective in our history in protecting this nation up to this time AND because nations fear the citizens of this nation who own and know how to use effectively all sorts of weapons.

Fighting for Freedom in the World

This is most often the United States sticking its national nose into other nations failures and troubles. In many places Americans have gone to fight for “freedom” they find themselves in places where God is punishing the people for rejection of truth as in Korea where Presbyterian missionaries had been doing a fantastic job but their efforts were being rejected. God thus clobbered the Koreans and America of course got in the way of this Divine Discipline with its Self Righteous Arrogance. This same ARROGANCE has made the national policies of this country stupid and the nation in general has failed to keep in touch with any spiritual thinking. Foremost, the United States must never send its military into defend a people whom God has decided to destroy. The simple means of clarification of this function can be discerned by looking at where the missionaries have gone and what the response has been to the Absolute Truth of the Gospel, but generally the American government has chosen overall to reject the functions of missionaries and in their place emphasize the functions of the State Department in foreign concerns.

God always punishes for rejection of truth, both the Laws of Divine Establishment along with the Divine Institutions and all aspects of Bible Doctrine. As a client nation to God the people in control of the United States should have recognized honorable allies in Taiwan, in South Africa, in Rhodesia, in Samosa and Iran under the Shaw, etc., and unconditionally supported them. The people in the government of the United States of America and the people who have elected them into those positions, are locked into Self Righteous Arrogance and Crusader Arrogance, thinking that the United States must be the police force of the world along with attempting to solve the social problems in this nation with legislation. Both the foreign and domestic policies in this country reflect this Self Righteous Arrogance and Crusader Arrogance which has developed since long before 1945. THIS CLIENT NATION WILL BE, IN FACT IS BEING, JUDGED FOR IT. The people, especially those in government service as a whole MUST develop an “emergency” scale of values and get into humility under Bible Doctrine principles to be used by the Lord in this ongoing time of national disaster. The United States of America has been interfering with God’s judgment of other people throughout its recent history and the nation is paying for it now.

Vietnam was a chance for the United States military to develop and refine the functions of clandestine and guerrilla warfare and organize the type of military needed to defeat communism anywhere. This could have been done using Vietnam as a perfect field training exercise for moving the American military forces into an entirely new concept of warfare which would have kept terror off the streets and kept hijacking of planes to nothing while putting criminals, both domestic and international, where they belong, into the ground. The United States Military could have developed a system that would be able to defeat communism wherever it would raise its ugly head in the world. The military training system should have organized schools to learn sabotage, espionage, infiltration, hit and run guerrilla tactics, deception, torture, extreme dirty warfare, assassination in the killing of key personnel, etc. Make no mistake these things have been done but never organized into a system of warfare and still to this day there is no system and no policy or plan for fighting with or against this type of war. Winning in direct confrontation of the enemy is way too expensive in both material and personnel to be used in

today's world of subversion and terrorism. The United States military must learn to defeat communism through clandestine and guerrilla warfare and use the strategies of deception, lies, blackmail, intimidation, assassination, etc. *This is the same principle by which the client nation to God must fulfill its function of world wide missionary efforts. Missionaries must evangelize natives and train them to reach their own people.* This is also how ***American military must be developed, to indoctrinate and train indigenous peoples to fight for their own freedoms. The primary functions must involve clandestine and guerrilla warfare and then train the natives of the country to go back and counter attack their enemy of communism.*** This was demonstrated in the phenomenal tenacity of the "resistance fighters" of many of the European nations in World War II. The United States should have brought Koreans, Vietnamese, Germans and Poles to the United States of America to train them and send them back to counter attack the Russian and Chinese communists and Nazi socialists in their own countries.

The administration of this nation has been looking through the rose colored glasses of the Arrogance of Ignorance in guiding the nations policies for many decades. It is clearly apparent that the "Indigenous Strategy" is the secret to success in fighting communism. Just as the converted natives must learn to evangelize and teach Bible Doctrine to their own people so when freedom is threatened, they must learn to combat the evils present by using the principles and function of clandestine and guerrilla warfare. People in a country who want freedom must be trained to fight for their own country and their own freedom. If the United States had picked out 50,000 South Vietnamese and trained and equipped them and sent them back to fight communism the war in Vietnam would have ended quickly and there would not have been 50,000 American casualties. Instead the American political and military organizations tried to convert the Vietnamese into American soldier lookalikes instead of converting them to communist lookalikes and sending them back to fight their true enemies. Clearly this most certainly is what is now needed to combat the ongoing revolution occurring in the United States of America in this early 21st century if this nation is to continue as a client nation to God.

Justified War in Far Off Places

The Question to be Answered: Should Americans fight in other countries, other parts of the world, for the protection of this country? The principle is that a strong, legitimately functioning nation cannot stand around and wait for enemies to come and try to take their nation but MUST go to other areas where they are trying to conquer other weaker nations and destroy them in a preventative war. Sometimes an establishment oriented nation has to move away from its own land in order to defend it and, in fact, that is a GOOD IDEA. Therefore, fighting War outside of one's own nation is VALID to preserve the freedom in that nation. One cannot wait for an enemy to invade his nation but should attack them hard where they live far from his nation when their intended aggression becomes apparent. Therefore it is RIGHT and JUST to cross the water and go to another part of the world to fight for the defense of one's own country. Therefore, the men in uniform who fought in the south pacific in World War II and in Korea and in South Vietnam and in the Middle East were and ARE fighting for FREEDOM here in the United States of America. This is also why the Chinese have systematically infiltrated the United States from the southern border so that THEY can fight in

the United States for the benefit of their country. HOWEVER, this infiltration and intention is not to defend their country but for CONQUEST and is therefore NOT a situation of Just Warfare. Americans fighting wars in other countries were and ARE JUST wars because the communist and moslems are vicious, evil, rotten monsters that should be totally eradicated. This is true whether they are Asiatic, Arabic or Russian and when Americans must go to them to fight in war they should and MUST kill as many as possible as fast as possible in order to have some semblance of peace in this nation at this time. ([Num 32:5-8](#), [Num 32:14-17](#), [Num 32:20-23](#), [Num 32:31-33](#))

National Destruction Begins

Arrogance divorces individuals and groups from reality as is clearly demonstrated in the United States of America since the end of World War II when considering both its current domestic and foreign policies. As the majority of people in the United States of America have become more arrogant they have lost track of the fact that there are millions of people who are criminal and commit crimes and must be summarily dealt with. It is in disaster that these criminals come to the front by killing innocents, plundering, pillaging and destroying personal property. Observe the facts of the past 20 years and the riots and pillaging of the nations cities. In the United States of America in this early 21st century whenever people gather together there is obvious arrogance in these groups which are in fact in most instances MOBS. The more time the public spends in arrogance the closer they get to becoming animals. One outstanding indication of local or national arrogance is when homosexuals are given any recognition by local or national government. Also, this is clearly indicated when criminals are given greater rights than the law abiding citizen or Law Enforcement officers who basically now has no rights.

Establishment principles revolve around freedom. Freedom is destroyed unless it is placed in the environment of Authority and therefore Authority must always come before freedom. When these are mixed up as in the United States today the nation runs the risk of destroying itself and being removed from the family of nations all together. The only stabilizing factor in the United States of America today is the few remaining functions of this client nation and the American Constitution both which are being totally violated. The Lord Jesus Christ Controls Human History and regarding nations his 5 cycles of divine discipline ([Lam 1:1-13](#)) reflect this principle. This Divine Discipline for individuals and nations can occur in several ways:

- **Directly** through his deity where the system of direct Divine Discipline is for those who function in humility.
 - Individually for those who sin as a humble person they receive discipline directly from God for leaving his plan.
 - For the client nation in Humility it is directly through the 5 cycles of divine discipline to that nation which are also directly from God again for leaving the Plan of God. ([Lev 26:14-38](#))
- **Indirectly** through and as a result of ongoing overt violations of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

- **Permissively** by allowing Evil nations to exist such as communist Russia, Cuba and China and islamic controlled moslem nations.
 - God often uses a powerful Evil nation or group to destroy a client nation when the client nation no longer can function in humility but is saturated and immersed in the Interlocking systems of Arrogance.

In the Beginning

When a client nation enters into a time of national crisis and disaster and faces great adversity there is only one way it can be delivered based on 3 principles:

- The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History
- Spiritual leadership must communicate Bible Doctrine principles and issues and the only deliverance is from the Lord
- Believers must grow in the Spiritual Life to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#)

The destruction of normal sexual functions as in phallic idolatry type of activities, such as the promiscuity and sexual arrogance and degeneracy prevalent in the United States today, destroys authority in the military, education, judicial enforcement of law, business, etc., and this destroys society through the degeneration of the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#). This is not just the act of fornication as a personal sin but a structured system which destroys the norms and standards of the soul related to the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#). This was part of the original and ONGOING plan of communism to subvert and conquer the United States of America. Once these standards have been destroyed it results in an overriding permissiveness in the whole of society. In the United States of America the congress of the United States is supposed to pass laws which are ONLY designed to protect a citizens life, volition, privacy and property including businesses from crime and to define crime with regard to these factors to protect the lawful citizen. When a legislative group in arrogance and under Scar Tissue of the Soul believes the Lie of the policy of Evil and thinks that they can solve the problems of society by legislation then the nation is on its way out of history. These kinds of laws in effect say that a person must be nice to certain individuals or groups of people because of these laws and must do good things for the “underprivileged” lazy, good for nothing, leeching scum of society. In effect these types of laws destroy the honor the nation by saying people must be nice to SCUM, White, Black, Yellow or Red skinned people who contribute nothing and demand everything from society. Scum as a category is therefore related to Old Sin Nature functions and is ABSOLUTELY NOT a racial categorization. In society there will always be scum and the government CANNOT solve the problems of society by passing laws to help the scum or appease the 1% who are degenerate or apostate. Because the system of government in the United States of America has followed generally the principles of the Constitution of the United States (until the last few decades) the legislature has been hindered with an inability to go forward with some laws so to circumvent this hindrance they have appointed bureaus such as OSHA, BATFE, HEW, EPA, etc., to make RULES which function as LAW outside the constitution. The bureaus then organize an enforcement arm and at times give them weapons for enforcement and these bureaus write regulations which are not law passed by the congress elected by the people and they put stiff penalties on these regulation violations and in effect make these law until someone or some business proves that these regulations are unconstitutional. This results in a whole set of petty tyrannies which build a

secure barrier between the individual citizen and the true law through a series of very Evil bureaucracies. This could not work except that the norms and standards of the Stream of Consciousness of the Souls in the general public have been destroyed and replaced by permissiveness which results in a vacuum of expediency. Thus, when a nation begins to fall like the United States of America is proceeding to do today, the people live in a time of social expediency where in the name of trying to make people equal those in charge of the country force the development of guilt complexes and various categories of degeneracy and apostasy in the individual in order to place the nation under a system of tyranny which in effect destroys all freedom. The people of these United States in general, no longer have the norms and standards needed to truly appreciate what freedom is, what it requires and that it is a principle worth fighting and dying for. This is historical crisis related to the Evil in Government which has been developing in the United States of America since after World War II up to this present day.

Principles of the Cycles of Divine Discipline

- Obedience under the authority delegated from God is the first principle which must be followed
- Freedom especially Free Enterprise goes hand in hand with client nation functions in Human History and must be protected
- Failure of protection from Crime, violence, terrorism, must be avoided
- Continued function in the Arrogance Complex results in intensification of all personal and national discipline because “God makes war against the Arrogant but gives grace to the humble”. ([Prov 3:34](#), [James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#))
- Loss of Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions functions in the nation must be avoided

The warning of the first 4 cycles always precedes destruction of the nation and this was the function of Jonah going to Nineveh to evangelize the Assyrians. ([Ez 31:3-18](#)) Client nations with a maximum number of people in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance will not perpetuate truth through missionary activity but will perpetuate degeneracy through spreading of arrogance under a governmental system such as state department functions and thus cause the entire world to enter a state of degeneracy. God will never allow the entire world to become arrogantly degenerate but will first destroy the instigating Arrogant Nation completely. Some pertinent historical examples include the Hurrians, Hittites, Amorites, Canaanites, Assyrians, Nazis, and hopefully soon the Russian and Chinese communists and NOT the United States of America.

National Discipline

Collective, National Apostasy always precedes divine judgment and it always weakens the military of a nation then God judges the nation with War. When the Jews became apostate there was not even 1 spear or shield found among 40,000 Jews in their military. They chose to engage in Phallic Idolatry from their consistent Negative Volition toward God and Bible Doctrine and as a direct result then found themselves in a War. God provided them with severe national Divine Discipline and they were caught totally unprepared for War. {Sounds

like the historical status of the United States of America and Warfare} Therefore, the more political and religious liberalism spreads throughout any nation the more liable that nation is for Divine Discipline. ([Judg 5:8](#))

When there is collective apostasy in a nation the women have destroyed the Right Lobe of their Soul and have arrogant egotistical thinking and a myriad of Mental Attitude Sins and walk around with arrogant posture flaunting their beauty. Many times the men also have their Right Lobe of the Soul destroyed because the women lead them astray but obviously this does not infer that the men are innocent of all involvement and that this is involuntary on their part. However, the point is that any man who follows any female who bats her eyelashes at him loses his manhood and he is no longer a MAN and is completely useless in combat. When this apostate nation is invaded by a foreign military there will be universal torture and rape of the women during the administration of this 5th cycle of Divine Discipline. ([Jeremiah](#)) These arrogant women completely lose their glamour when they become the victims of an invading army and this can be clearly understood if you could talk to any woman who survived the invasion of Nanjing or Koenigsberg in 1945. The Russians raped and tortured 30,000 women in 3 days and the only way these women could escape was to dress as men and cut off their hair and cover their faces with mud. ([Is 3:16-26](#)) During invasions, the women who try to dress seductively and display all the glamour of their clothing, makeup and jewelry to appeal to the invaders will discover that those who rape them will then simply kill them. The women will be heard screaming as they would during the birth of their first child and all they can utter is “woe is me” after being raped multiple times. This is what inevitably happens in warfare to the women in an apostate nation like the United States of America. ([Jer 4:19-31](#))

Women should encourage the men they love in their preparation for war and during war and when in combat and should never attempt to be assigned to combat units during war. Women should never write to men or contact men when they are in combat on battlefields and never communicate anything to them which could disturb their thinking and turn them into a coward because the purpose of their fighting on any battlefield is to protect the women and family they have left back home. Women must always have courage with regard to their men though they may not ever see them again and must never send them off to war weakening them with emotionalism. It is a complete breakdown of the structure of marriage and family for the man to remain at home while the woman goes to war and this is the status of some families in the United States of America today.

When there is collective national apostasy, there is a breakdown in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a result of development of Emotional Revolt of the Soul in reversionism which leads to cowardice. From the Negative Volition toward any aspect of Bible Doctrine, which begins reversionism and enters the individual into Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins, there is the eventual development of Emotional Revolt of the Soul and breakdown of the function of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This results in failure of the Right Lobe of the Soul to produce Moral and Battle Courage which instead produces or results in the inability to under pressure which is cowardice. Therefore, in times of pressure and antagonism the Right Lobe of the Soul, which when

saturated with principles from Bible Doctrine functions to produce Moral courage and Battle courage, when Negative Volition exists toward any aspect of Bible Doctrine it results in Cowardice instead. ([Jer 4:19-23](#))

The United States fought in Europe, the Pacific, Korea, Vietnam, the Middle East to keep the enemy OUT OF THIS COUNTRY and any people who cater to and support the enemy like Jane Fonda and the Kennedys should be shot as traitors and why people like the Clintons, Obamas and Bidens should be right their beside them. Any person who caters to the enemies of the United States, marches against WAR, riots against ROTC units or marches in opposition to the war of Israel against the Palestinians should be EXECUTED immediately as a traitor. These should be shot down just like the enemy is shot on the battlefields along with any who engage in desecration of the flag and any government officials who give permission to people to abuse the freedoms of speech and assembly by marching against war and the government. In war traitors should be shot down in their tracks even within their own nation because, especially today in the 21st century, the enemy is not all out on the battlefields of other nations. The enemy within a nation must be searched out, controlled and put out of function OTHERWISE what is in [Isaiah chapter 3 & Jeremiah chapter 4](#) will occur in this nation. Heroes will be dead because they will be defeated on the front lines of combat and the cowards will run and hide while the women are being raped and tortured by the invaders. This is inevitably what happens when the military is degraded and it is the politicians who are the CAUSE of these situations occurring.

When war occurs there will be extreme excruciating agonizing physical PAIN and extreme soul pain as MENTAL anguish where the Right Lobe of the Soul screams in cowardice. This occurs in the civilian caught in war and the soldier who has succumbed to battle fatigue who is on the verge of a total mental breakdown in psychosis because he has heard the sound of the trumpet of the enemy attacking again and again in battle during WAR. This mental breakdown is what causes total defeat by the enemy and this occurs because BELIEVERS in every dispensation are FOOLS and have no comprehension of Bible Doctrine and lack the ability to produce Divine Good. The principle is that the land of the apostate nation is thereby returned to the condition it was in when Satan was thrown off of the earth just prior to the Angelic Conflict Trial and this is the catastrophe which befalls the nation Defeated in Warfare. When the enemy is heard to be approaching everyone in the cities will flee because they are all cowards and for spoiled women, who no longer have men to fight for them, there is absolutely NO protection.

When a client nation has to look for allies to survive they are no longer depending on the Grace of God. The United States of America has not been invaded since the war of 1812 with a very few small exception until this 21st century where the invasion is not of a military nature but one where literally MILLIONS of non citizens are constantly invading across our southern border to leach the benefits which remain of American prosperity and establish the means of internal subversion by other nations and thereby bring about its destruction. It is for this reason that many foreign nationals invade in this way to subvert every aspect of this nation's functions to bring it down and prepare it for external conquest. As a result of the soft nature

of the current invasion and the lack of any real military action or overt military invasion of this nation the American people do not understand this War and focus on Doing Good for these invading foreign nationals here and throughout the world instead of focusing on national security. The Idea of using the Military for doing good in situations where God is judging EVIL in other parts of the world is IDIOTIC. Believers and this nation as a whole must recognize that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls history and the Supreme Court of Heaven is constantly judging evil nations and this client nation MUST stay out of it. It is very difficult for believers let alone unbelievers to see Human History from the Divine Viewpoint apart from understanding a maximum amount of the Word of God. To this time in our history the only thing which has prevented invasion in this United States of America from occurring is a small pivot of believers who have reached Spiritual Maturity. In addition it is the continued function under the Laws of Divine Establishment regarding universal gun ownership by the people. However, now, at this time in history, the pivot no longer exists and the government exercises greater and greater control over gun sales and ownership. It is extremely tragic when terrible disaster is needed to bring the people in the client nation to God back around to Bible Doctrine but this is what obviously has been occurring in the United States of America, but with very little success. The book of [Lamentations](#) describes the terrible devastation of Judah's towns and Jerusalem after the successful Chaldean invasion. [Ps 119](#) describes the horrendously terrible situation of the young men and women who marched from Judah to Chaldea and their attitudes at that time. ([Lam 1:1-13](#))

&&&&

Historically, people become enslaved because they, themselves, destroy the system under the Laws of Divine Establishment which protects their freedom and accept instead the system of a mad leader saturated with power lust. This is what makes a people vulnerable to slavery. When one resents some level of authority he is rejecting the whole system of authority which is what makes it possible to possess anything including freedoms at any level. The destruction of any establishment based system is terrorism, insurrection, revolution, etc., and it is based on true EVIL itself, most often resulting in or from some form of violence. *The ability, humility, common sense and wisdom of not trying to destroy **the system** is what the believers attitude must be when they are involved in any counter insurgency functions to protect or restore the legitimacy of their nation.*

The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and he uses Mature Believers, world rulers and governments to accomplish his will in Human History. He uses great rulers and great governments and also Evil or Anti-Establishment governments as well. He uses whatever is needed in his plan to control and direct Human History. Therefore, there are NO accidents in Human History and no nation rises or falls accidentally and many nations rise, not because they are great, but because everything around them is corrupt, degenerate and apostate and as a result the corruption falls away. For the client nation to God, historical or national catastrophe is not only Divine Discipline to that nation but acts as a warning of the potential of total destruction to that nation and other nations as well. The question on the minds of believers today is how long will the United States of America survive into the future, near or far? However, no matter what happens to this nation historically the only thing which counts in history is the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of

Consciousness of his Soul. The United States of America has been experiencing the progression of the 1st 4 cycles of Divine Discipline from God and is on the verge of ending the 4th cycle and entering into the total destruction of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline. What awaits the United States of America is clearly detailed in [2Kings 8:12](#).

God uses completely incompetent and terribly arrogant people to discipline any nation in and saturated with national arrogance. He often uses a combination of greatly incompetent people in civil or temporal authority positions and a totally competent spiritual leadership. God uses these available competent spiritual leaders in order to enable him to provide the necessary Divine Discipline to cleanse the nation but, at the same time, maintain the survival of the client nation. It appears that when great competent spiritual leadership does not exist in the client nation this is foretelling the destruction of that nation when it is under the cycles of Divine Discipline. There must also be great humility in the spiritual leaders to support the remaining advancing or mature believers in the nation. In addition when God wants to execute severe Divine Discipline on the client nation, as occurs during the 4th cycle, He will through Jesus Christ controlling Human History and having put a LEASH on opponents to the client nation for a time, then when he takes the leash off, these nations, functioning under Evil, will attack and this will be the Divine Discipline. At this time in American history this country is under a covert attack from China, Russia and Islam with varying levels of covert and overt tactics as infiltration and terrorism in this nation. Then at the point of becoming engaged in overt warfare a lot of people will be punished and many will die and business and economics will suffer greatly. When this nation feels they are out from under all the problems connected with their degeneracy they will then be disciplined by God by means of those nations who oppose them historically. Historically no client nation ever gets away with anything. If the United States of America survives *it must and will get extremely serious intensive Divine Discipline* and there will be unimaginable suffering to cleanse the nation of the degeneracy factors involved in its ongoing decline. However, when the client nation is under the interdiction of intensive Divine Discipline the ONLY people to come out on top are believers who have made Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The only thing for any believer to ever regret, especially at this time in the history of this nation, is neglecting Bible Doctrine for a single day. Bible Doctrine MUST BE the most important thing in the life of the believer and doctrine which may be hard to acquire in normal times because of a lack of qualified teachers will be infinitely harder in national crisis or historical disasters.

However, how things progress historically does not EVER hinder the divine promotion of the mature believer nor the divine prosperity imputed to him as well. As a prime example of a degenerate nation the United States of America has been in the throes of the cycles of Divine Discipline for many decades in fact very intensely even since the end of World War II. Because this nation is under Divine Discipline it MUST have MORONS in high administrative places and today they are present in the greatest abundance of all of this countries whole history. People in this nation will not know hurting as individuals or collectively as a nation until national discipline reaches an intensity not before experienced here. Under the 4th cycle of Divine Discipline a nation often reaches a point of maximum pressure but is still intact as a nation but clearly on its way down and out. The United States of America in 1969 was already in the 4th

cycle of Divine Discipline. This was the most critical period of the national life span of America and it would have been very easy for the United States to enter into the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline and total destruction at that time. It is also very easy for the nation to return to prosperity and blessing under God's economy through development and use of the Problem Solving Devices and Edification Complex of the Soul in a large enough number of Mature believers. It is my firm belief that this nation received a reprieve from God based on the Positive Volition expressed by literally hundreds of thousands of believers between 1970 and 1990.

Every generation determines its own course and no generation can leave a heritage for another because the YOUNG people in any generation decide for themselves which way their generation and their history will go. Generations with respect for authority and law and order will become great generations. The most clear cut example is the generation just prior to World War II which were totally different in their attitudes toward authority, nationalism, patriotism, honor and integrity than anything observable today even since the early 1960s. This resulted at that time in the greatest organization in all of history from 1941 to 1945 in the form of the United States Army. To this very date in the 21st century this is the reason that America has never been attacked by a major power successfully. However, in the United States of America today, moving this nation closer every day to ultimate destruction, there is currently occurring as an ongoing progression:

- Race war
- Rises in crime
- Very unstable economy
- Very poor attitude toward authority
- Clandestine Insurrection
- Guerrilla Insurgency

The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must never think himself as indispensable to God. He must appreciate his place in the Plan of God WITH ALL OTHER BELIEVERS who respond to Bible Doctrine because these will be the ones who save the nation. What preserves the nation or inevitably causes its downfall is the individual believer not who may be president nor who is irresponsible in government. Whether the client nation stands or falls depends on the daily attitude of each and every believer toward Bible Doctrine. The believer's attitude toward Bible Doctrine and his consistency of Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is the only thing which is Essential for the perpetuation of the client nation. In the United States of America today the men in the military are no longer supported by the pivot of mature believers in the nation nor is the nation as a whole supported by a pivot because the pivot has shrunk to non-existence and only a small cadre of Mature Jeshurun believers remain. The most tragic thing in a client nation is for the personnel in the Military and Law Enforcement to NOT be supported by a pivot of mature believers. For the believer, it is Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which is a duty to the Lord for the advance in his plan but this is also the greatest support which can be given to those functions which maintain freedom. It is very difficult if not impossible for the believer in any status of early spiritual growth to fully understand the repercussions of his failure to

advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and help maintain the pivot of a client nation.

The Punishment of the Nation

The radical liberalism which developed from the late 1930s in the United States of America was and continues to be so fantastic it is destroying this nation with a stumbling block of iniquity. Some of the responsibility for the fall of the client nation lies with the false prophet the liberal pastor and all those who are believers who continue to follow him. Before the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline comes there always will be a total economic disaster in the nation. In national or historical disaster the pivot of Mature Believers is the key to survival for the nation. However, this is not to infer that they bring exception to and exemption from divine punishment for their nation. There are 5 cycles of Divine Discipline and the pivot of mature believer only protects the nation from the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline which is total destruction of the nation. The pivot cannot and will not prevent severe Divine Discipline and punishment for the nation which is saturated with the degeneracy of Arrogance and the Apostasy of Reversionism. The nation under this Divine Discipline will suffer economically, militarily and from disease where large segments of the population will be destroyed and there will be great misery in that land. Therefore, the pivot cannot and does not give insulation against the misery and suffering from Divine Discipline in the form of the cycles of Divine Discipline. In the United States of America for many decades there have been social disasters, military disasters and defeat, economic disaster and also natural disasters such as earthquake, hurricanes and tornadoes along with both natural and man made disease. God often punishes through natural disaster phenomena such as hurricanes, tornadoes, fires and earthquakes and when the sweet friendly federal government comes along and uses tax money to recompense everyone who suffered during those disasters then there is no Divine Discipline but that discipline is set aside and builds up and adds on to itself for a future time. This is the government providing “stimulus payments” to every person in the United States because of their mandated restrictions for people to remain in their homes and the closing of businesses as a result of a false panic caused by the purposeful release of the American funded CCP Wuhan Virus of 2019 during the international Military Games in China at that time. When this government tries to pay for damage from any natural disaster, to recompense the disaster victims, the warning is not there for these people, then God takes other much more serious measures so that the government cannot interfere with the warning. It is from Evil motivation that a government interferes with Divine Discipline and this causes God to provide more intensive Divine Discipline as a warning where the government cannot interfere.

These national disasters are supposed to be a catharsis for the national entity because the degenerate, apostate and reversionistic people MUST be removed for the nation to survive. Great misery in the nation is guaranteed when the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, and the 8 stages of Reversionism saturate the national entity and the majority of the citizens. Economic, social, medical, national, military and natural disasters will continue occurring and these will be disasters where the federal government cannot interfere and the punishment is then able to be administered and thereby cleanse the nation. There will be additional and greater military disaster because of

the folly regarding national policies for the military. In a client nation to God, a draft for universal military service is not even debatable because the word of God commands that there MUST be a draft where every male must serve in the military WITHOUT REGARD FOR ANY DISABILITIES. This has to do with the means for protection of the freedom and the guarantee of security for the nation from enemies and also because it creates a maturing process for the MALES in the nation. This maturing process is related to authority orientation and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution principles as a means of protection from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the apostasy of reversionism for both believers and unbelievers.

In this nation, at this time in its history, the fact must be faced that there may be a strong reaction to the clandestine guerrilla revolution which is occurring in this 21st century resulting in the formation of a dictatorship. The Formation of a Dictatorship is never a good thing even when there is installed an enlightened dictator because it inevitably means a great deal of violence and killing. In the formation of a dictatorship there may occur a great deal of lawlessness in the name of change but any valuable change must be brought about in a lawful way unless God brings in the change. The only true good which could come from this reaction and attempted coup DE tat in the United States would be to solidify the patriotism of the people who are solidly establishment oriented to oppose it and ultimately destroy the revolutionaries. When God does bring in dramatic change such as in the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline it is fair and legitimate and from his justice and in so doing he often wipes out whole populations. All effective change in the national entity especially the client nation must be done under the function of establishment law, under PROPER authority not tyranny. When this does not occur the nation brings itself closer to greater intensity in the cycles of Divine Discipline it is experiencing. Every time there is a riot and people are killed and property destroyed there should be proper use of authority and even legitimate Law Enforcement violence to immediately stop riots. The issue is any person involved in a mob in a riot who is taking another's property must be STOPPED and the use of even lethal violence is legitimate. The property of lawful citizens MUST be protected at all costs even the cost of the life of those stealing it. When this is not done properly, as has been the case in the rioting of the past several decades, it is not just ruining a merchant but also putting all freedom in the nation on the line for destruction. The true issue governing this situation and all criminality is that every person has a right to their personal property and government is primarily designed to protect it. The change brought on by "power politics" destroys human freedom by attacking establishment authority, personal privacy, personal property and free enterprise. The problem today in the United States of America is that there are be a lot of people worth killing and a lot who should be in jail and others who should be running the show but none of these things are occurring and the government has totally failed in its function. However, tyranny cannot be solved by its replacement with another form of tyranny in revolution.

There are organizations in this nation acting like NAZI storm troopers even back to the 1970s and much more so today including DHS, ATFE and FEMA and the myriad of intelligence organizations such as the NSA which persist in spying on the citizens of this nation instead of protecting their privacy. There has been a whole world outside the United States of America

who envy the United States and they tell us that the people in this country have no right to live the way they do while others in the world suffer. These foreigners covet the prosperity of this nation has had and want it and now are taking it ILLEGALLY in the form of non-citizens being GIVEN benefits by bleeding heart American liberals just because they have sneaked in to this country illegally and now live here.

Surviving the Punishment of the Nation

Believers today may find it difficult to move into combat situations having been under conditions of relative quiet for prolonged periods but believers must understand that they are in the midst of the greatest war in creation, the Angelic Conflict. This is a spiritual conflict which cannot be seen but often is directly experienced. In recent years the United States has won no wars and has done nothing right in securing national freedom and in this early 21st century it has compromised with both communism and islam repeatedly and its internal social status is one of degeneration bordering on total anarchy. There is and has been an ongoing destruction of all which is held dear in this country and that which our forefathers had fought and died for. However, Believers belong to a great battalion of spiritual warriors and in this dispensation of the Church Age are part of the great royal priesthood and royal ambassadorship for Christ. Because of this status quo and having a desire to preserve and protect the client nation United States of America believers MUST reach and hold the status of **Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God** and become recipients of their own Escrow **Super – Grace** blessings from God. This is, for the royal priesthood, is normal living when he reaches and holds the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. It is God's objective in time to bless the mature believer in the midst of the Angelic Conflict and whether he is living in a time of prosperity or any adversity or disaster in history. Those believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God WILL BE delivered from the greatest disasters of their times and in this deliverance they will glorify God. God always pours 6 categories of Escrow Super – Grace blessing onto the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this blessing includes deliverance and prosperity in times of adversity or disaster. Believers in the time of this nations decline who love their nation and its constitution which provides the structure of establishment freedom in this republic and its gallant and glorious history under great adversity, cannot help but express that love in the very special declarations of Divine Viewpoint. As always the solution to the problems in this client nation has been and continues to be consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine by the individual believer who persistently moves toward and through Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. It is also the persistence of understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions (Bible Doctrine Principles in themselves) by both believer and unbeliever. However, when the nation falls, there will be survivors and there will be much less pollution from degenerate apostate people and false prophets or incompetent leaders with their false priorities and policies because only those with a completed Edification Complex of the Soul and a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will be delivered to survive. This is Bible Doctrine which must be available in a believer's Frame of Reference which is saturated with divine Norms and Standards so that this person, even in captivity, will never compromise the word of God. This is what will occur during and after the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline for the remnant of mature believers if this

nation completely falls. The 5th cycle of Divine Discipline destroys everything except the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which forms The [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) in the mature believer. The Edification Complex of the Soul is the destruction proof bomb shelter in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. To survive the total catastrophe and destruction of a national entity it takes a shelter on the inside and the strength of soul which has the filled Edification Complex of the Soul in the believer who has reached the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The generation which exists during the destruction under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline must learn from history that the only way to survive the destruction of a client nation is to have inner resources from the filled Edification Complex of the Soul and that God has ensured that this information is permanent in the Word of God. ([Ps 119](#))

God honors the pivot of mature believers during this process of Divine Discipline by NOT destroying the nation or preserving these believers and by providing these individual believers the security and blessing related to the Afortiori system under the Plan of God and Essence of God [Rationales](#). There are 2 principles which must work together to bring order out of disaster and restore the client nation's status:

- Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Soul of the individual believer
- Effective and functional military establishment

IF the United States of America goes through the disasters described under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline the primary question the believer must ask is “WILL I BE ALIVE ON THE EARTH”? The believer must be able to answer as to whether he would be able to number himself with Noah, Daniel, Job and other historical characters in such a disaster? Believers must possess a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and have a completed Edification Complex of the Soul at the time of any disaster the world can throw at him. The reality of life for the believer is that there is no way that he can be taken from this life if he were like Noah, Daniel or Job. No matter the fight, nor war situation the believer carries in his mind his own protection from the fortification of Bible Doctrine in his own Edification Complex of the Soul. *The one problem of having a completed Edification Complex of the Soul is that sometimes this believer becomes so confident, dogmatic and safe with it that no one understands the way he thinks and often do not take him seriously.* Even during the simplest of pressures, let alone great national or natural disasters, it is a crazy feeling to see others falling apart while the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God feels safe, confident and dogmatic about his position. People resent this and will resent the believer who has it just as they resent dogmatic teaching of doctrine and those with dogmatic opinions.

The privilege and right of every believer under divine provision is to advance from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God forming the pivot of mature believers and then by means of the collectively formed pivot to save the nation. The pivot of mature believers are unknown and unnamed and unheralded believers who reach Spiritual Maturity and who have become INVISIBLE HEROES. ([Heb 3](#)) It is through these believers that the nation can be perpetuated apart from the power politics of assassination, violence, revolution, confiscation of property and intrusion on the privacy of

lawful citizens. Therefore, believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ have the key to the nations problems and yet they very often ignore the solution which is personal individual advance to Spiritual Maturity. “Pivot Politics” offers solutions to the nations crises without any tampering with human freedom. The Pivot of mature believers breaks no laws, sponsors no violence, or assassinations or terrorism or crime or revolution, they confiscate no one’s property and do not intrude on any human privacy but turn the world upside down through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of their own Souls.

Solutions for Crises and Disaster

The problems which occur during life demand solutions which can be attempted as solutions from Human Viewpoint, Society, Government functions, Public Opinion, and Self Righteousness or as solutions derived by using Divine Viewpoint from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The dominating solutions in the United States today are found in the Self Righteous, government oriented solution categories. This trend in a society is why communism can take over so easily by allowing or causing citizens to stick their noses into other peoples business in Self Righteous Arrogance. The problems of life exist as both personal and collective difficulties. Because invariably man cannot solve his own personal problems he tries to compensate for this failing by attempting to solve the collective problems of a given society or national entity. This is the source of the development of reformers such as Susan B. Anthony, Kerry Nation, Martin Luther King, and many others. Their personal lives are failures and they cannot handle their own personal life problems so their only compensation is the arrogant function of trying to solve the problems of society.

Historical or national disaster is always related to collective Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine. The believer’s preoccupation with any disaster results in his personal involvement in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) with the resultant fear and intimidation in his life, self centeredness, self pity, self righteousness all which inevitably result in a distortion of his perception of the facts of contemporary history. The believer must not be preoccupied with disaster but view it from the light of Bible Doctrine because preoccupation with disaster will inevitably ignore the Essence of God, Plan of God and Logistical Grace Support provided by God. Any time one over reacts to disaster and gets stirred up emotionally so that he wants to personally do something about it he has lost track of the Plan of God rationale. The real difficulty for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is that he can see things which need correcting, especially in this United States of America today, and then may overreact and start crusading to try to correct them and THIS IS WRONG. God knows these disastrous things will happen and there are reasons and purposes for them in his plan and if God has not destroyed an area or removed a nation from history the only job of the believer is to not be distracted from Bible Doctrine into power politics but to continue with personal spiritual advance moving into pivot politics. The believer must never overreact to anything and lose control of his life or cognizance of the fact that he is still in the Plan of God. Solutions to disaster for individual believers do not ever involve killing people or doing things their own way in life. Believers who understand historical trends and the failures in their nation have the right to be incensed but not to become so involved in overreaction that they put themselves into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The believer in a disaster

situation must focus on the fact that since he is still alive then he is in the Plan of God and under the Logistical Grace support of God and behind the Wall of Fire from that support. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance will never enable the believer to discover his purpose in the Plan of God in disaster. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance destroys the function of reverse concentration and even though the 3 basic doctrinal rationales have been inculcated, the believer cannot apply them. Reaction against EVIL is normal but over reaction makes the believer vulnerable to Arrogance and intensifies the problems.

Pivot Politics vs Power Politics as Solutions

The 2 categories of solutions for collective or national problems in this life at any level are:

- Pivot Politics = the divine solutions for life
 - Uses Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit to derive the basic doctrinal rationales to apply to any and all pressure in life.
- Power Politics = the human solutions for life
 - Uses Human Viewpoint from the influence of Evil by the involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres to attempt to solve the problems of life by human efforts.

Pivot Politics requires [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and [Metabolization of Bible Doctrine](#) and accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It always adheres to the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment, freedom and free enterprise and advocates the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions in society. Pivot politics always advocates following the law and using procedures which do not interfere with anyone's freedom, privacy or property and which do not overthrow legitimate authority. As long as a person does not violate legitimate criminal law, as designated by the Laws of Divine Establishment, he should have the freedom to do whatever he wants without someone else telling him what to do.

Power Politics inevitably involves crusaders who come along and try to say that they have a better idea as to what everyone should do in their personal lives and thus try to superimpose their concepts on others. Crusaders are nosy people and have no concept of freedom in terms of privacy. Power politics is the satanic solution to the problems of man and always tells people what they should and can do because those in charge purport under Evil to know better how to run the lives of the people than they do themselves. This is the essential concept of social action as practiced by the national council of churches and communism under socialism. Therefore, power politics is social action intruding on the privacy of others in the name of the greater good. Their overriding idea is that more people will live better because of the rules they want to put in place. Many believers become distracted from the Plan of God and the doctrinal rationales which are to be constructed when using the [Faith Rest Drill](#) (5 Stages) and thereby become involved in power politics, socialism, communism and welfare state functions. Inevitably, power politics means change by revolution or some form of national radical surgery.

The believer in understanding what to do under the pressure of national, natural or historical

disaster must realize that:

- The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History
- There must be a spiritual leader for the crisis
- There must exist or be developing a pivot of mature believers

Believers must know the Will of God and therefore must know the Word of God. When action is needed and before action takes place there must be preparation. The believer must learn how to think in various pressure situations and how to use these thoughts in disaster. Disaster, catastrophe and crisis are designed to focus the believer's attention on the only one in life who can solve the problems of life. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and uses spiritual leadership to bring the solution which is spiritual power, not the Evil of demonic power, to the thinking of the people. Behind any spiritual leadership which is manifest are the thousands who make it to Spiritual Maturity and they are the basis for the perpetuated existence and prosperity in the client nation. For deliverance of a client nation it is essential for the people to understand the true issue that only God can preserve and bless the client nation and therefore God must have a spokesman and his job will be to communicate the Divine Viewpoint. To represent God this leader must be free from arrogance and not take credit to himself. He must be very well prepared, totally focused on doctrine and must have great courage as:

- Moral courage from his thinking of Divine Viewpoint
 - The Plan of God rationale from stage 4 of the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages)
- Physical courage for his actions on behalf of God using the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages)
 - The Logistical Grace rationale
 - Afortiori Rationale
 - Essence of God Rationale

The Basic Doctrinal Rationales:

These and all [Doctrinal Rationales](#) are to be drawn out of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the individual believer in situations of pressure, crisis or disaster:

- **Logistical Grace** – God is in fact REQUIRED to provide all the needed support for life on this earth, even in suffering and disaster, so that the believer can advance in the Plan of God during his life.
- **Plan of God ([1Kings 19](#))** – In Eternity Past, God, under the Divine Decree and His Foreknowledge, put each believer into his plan so that as long as the believer is alive God continues to have a plan for his life as part of the Plan of God.
- **Essence of God** – God is Perfect in his character and attributes thereby guaranteeing the perfection and validity of his Plan, Promises and the Rationales derived from Bible Doctrine.

The underlying principle of Bible Doctrine is that God is perfect and has provided a plan, therefore, the plan is also perfect having come from God himself, but it is historically completely surrounded by imperfection in creation especially the Cosmic Dynaspheres of Satan. This plan is perfect, even considering that believers who are in the plan are imperfect and will fail constantly, because the Integrity of God is the only real issue in the plan. The Plan of God is fool proof and believers generally are the fools for which the plan compensates. It is

impossible for God to be unfair or unjust and the Justice of God has never failed to be just or fair in even a single case. Therefore, the fact that the believer remains alive and breathes and has preserved Bible Doctrine, food, shelter, transportation and clothing is ONLY the result of God sending logistical provision from his justice to the Righteousness of God which HE imputed to each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This is the dogmatic absolute truth for each and every believer whether he is in a situation or time of Prosperity in his nation or abject disaster and catastrophe. Any of these considerations or combinations of these can be applied to any personal or collective testing in life to overcome the pressures. It is the testing side of suffering which is most common to the believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and for strengthened support he may want to add:

- Afortiori – as a Doctrinal Rationale which is a Latin term meaning “With Stronger Reason”. It is a system of logic using comparison and a conclusion compared with another conclusion or a recognized fact of doctrine which is inferred as being more certain and in fact inescapable. It revolves around the principle that because God did the greatest and most difficult thing in providing for the salvation of man it is therefore far easier for him to provide for the believer’s support in this life in any and all situations. If God can do that which requires greater effort then he can do that which requires less. ([Matt 6:28-30](#), [Rom 5:8-10](#), [Rom 5:15-16](#), [Deut 33:27a](#), [Ps 48:14](#), [Lam 3:21-23](#), [2Cor 9:8](#))

The solutions for all pressures and crises in life therefore involve the use of the Faith Rest Drill

(5 Stages):

- Faith Perception takes the perceived and understood Bible Doctrine and accepts it making it Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul used to construct the Edification Complex of the Soul and ready for application to any situation in life
- Faith claiming a promise from God removes the ‘fear panic ploy’ and stabilizes the thinking of the believer when the metabolized Bible Doctrine promise is extracted from memory and used to calm the thinking
 - Cowardice is the inability to think under pressure and fear removes any possibility of thinking while Courage is the ability to think under pressure and for the believer is thinking based on principles of Metabolized Bible Doctrine
- Faith recalls under reverse concentration principles of Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and adds this information to stabilize the claimed promises
- Faith takes the combined promises and principles of Metabolized Bible Doctrine which he recalls under reverse concentration from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and forms these into one of many [Doctrinal Rationales](#) to understand and reinforce the believer’s position in the situation
- Faith then causes this believer with doctrinal rationales at his disposal to reach great doctrinal conclusions and thus control the situation

As long as the believer remains in pivot politics and uses the Logistical Grace, Plan of God and Essence of God rationales in Faith Rest it is impossible to intimidate him.

The considerations for the effective use of the Faith Rest Drill and Bible Doctrine Rationales:

- The solution to all disaster is and always has been in the mind of God.
- The solution to all disaster is and always has been prepared in and is a part of the Plan of God from Eternity Past.
- Believers are and always have been in the mind of God and thus the Plan of God from Eternity Past.
- Therefore, God has always know and planned for each and every situation and circumstance of the life of each and every believer and when disaster strikes this is the ground upon which he can make personal application to all situations.

The application of the Essence and Plan of God in time of disaster, tragedy and catastrophe must include knowledge that the believer has been in the mind of God since Eternity Past. He must know that from Eternity Past God has put him into his perfect plan and whether he fails or succeeds in the plan, the plan will go on and the believer will remain alive until his part in the plan is completed. Believers must come to the understanding that whatever he does will not ever determine the outcome of the Plan of God because it is only what God does that makes any real difference. Furthermore in the Plan of God failure at any level does not in any way hinder the plan's progress and it will go on with or without the believer. Therefore, the Plan of God will run down and smash the believer or pick him up and carry him on. Therefore, the outcome of the Plan of God depends not on any believer but ONLY on who and what God is and believers are only here to enjoy life while living under the Cosmic Dynaspheres of Satan, thus to glorify and please God. I like to think of this in an analogy to having a puppy dog and raising him to be an adult dog, sometimes incorrigible and sometimes extremely pleasant and lovable. Face it with honesty raising and caring for a dog is a pain in the neck, feeding and cleaning up after them and exercising them, bathing them, training them, etc., but they give great pleasure in providing incredible unconditional love. This is the same reason God tolerates mankind. Some are bad and choose to live eternally in the Lake of Fire. Some provide incredible reciprocal love for God and this gives him great pleasure. Woof Woof!!!! Therefore the life of the believer must be focused on the Lord and what he can do to please Him and he MUST understand that the only thing which can please God is for the believer to advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or beyond. Believers are therefore in the mind of God from Eternity Past and also the Plan of God from Eternity Past and can either go along in the plan for Divine Discipline for their failures or undeservedly benefit from the blessing provided as a result of their spiritual advance in that Plan.

Status quo of the United States

The problems facing the United States today include the possibility of overt international and guerrilla civil war in this country, extreme economic depression, tyranny or dictatorship, times of great lawlessness and these are all on its doorstep, NOW! The believer must be prepared for any and all of these with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Soul and must be able to function and can use whatever weapons are at his disposal to protect self or the nation as a whole. Therefore every believer must be able to face disasters of many kinds whether personal or collective disasters with the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. As has been clearly demonstrated in the past 100 years of

American history, change does not solve problems and a change of administration, the party in power, etc., is not going to solve the problems in the United States of America today. There is no legislation which can solve these problems and if every law passed since 1932 except the Taft-Hartley act was rescinded today there would only be made a 50% improvement in the American legal system. The problem is that the people are stupid and do not even remotely understand American history and their representatives are trying to legislate the country into the Garden of Eden. Change only brings in a different group which abuses the same power that the first group abused. In itself, change cannot and will not ever solve any problem since it is part of power politics. People unfortunately are always trying to change the exteriors of life and thus constantly buck the system but the reality is that the American people need to stay with the American system of national authority under CONSTITUTIONAL law and avoid becoming anti authority because there is no problem in life which can ever be solved by destroying authority.

Solution to National Decline

The Salt of the Earth principle regarding the pivot of mature believers is the only solution for a declining nation. It is the total saturation of religious legalism in the nation which always neutralizes the dynamics of Christianity. The only hope for the declining nation is not in the government but is ONLY a spiritual hope or solution. The spiritual hope is in the teaching of Bible Doctrine every day by every properly oriented and prepared pastor who must be consistent in studying and teaching and this key, found in Ephesus, caused the Roman empire to last an additional 400 years and is the only hope for the United States of America today as well. This is the only thing which will build a PIVOT of believers who reach **Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God** and as a result of receiving their 5 categories of temporal Escrow Super – Grace blessings, preserve a declining nation. To preserve any nation there must be a pivot greater than 1% of the population. There MUST be a return by the general population to a clear understanding and adherence to the principles of the **Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions** and for believers a return to consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine.

Under the Grace Plan of God, there is a “final hour” deliverance possible for every declining nation just prior to it being removed from history but this is ALWAYS focused on a spiritual solution. The people of the nation must resist involvement in the apostasy of reversionism and the degeneracy of the **Interlocking System of Arrogance** and when necessary fight to total exhaustion for this deliverance. Believers must be prepared to fight simply BECAUSE they are believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and they must reject the propaganda stupidity and pressure from the politicians, religious liberals and revolutionaries. The true solution for any declining nation is for the people collectively to develop and complete an **Edification Complex of the Soul**. Therefore the only true solution for the person who has made **Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God** and has become part of the Royal Family of God is to recognize the importance of Bible Doctrine and engage in consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of it.

Prayer as a Solution to National Problems

Prayer is a great and powerful weapon and Prayer as part of the function of believers in fellowship can deliver a nation from total disaster. [Joel 2:17-21](#) is a command to pray in time of calamity or national disaster and this is to be intensive prayer. By means of the Grace of God, and because of this type of prayer, God provides a way to deliver his people, the client nation, from disaster. The the believer must have knowledge of doctrine to pray for the nation and he needs to approach God on the basis of GRACE so that God must then answer on the basis of his character not on the basis of who and what the believer is. NEVER whine to God about problems but face the facts and simply ask on the basis of Grace and His provisions for all believers.

A Sample Prayer for Deliverance

I recognize that I do not have the right to even ask for this and I recognize that this nation has no right to exist as a nation and it has violated every precept of Divine Institution #4, Nationalism, in your plan. I have personally failed in every way a person can have failed BUT I am not asking on the basis of my failure or success nor on the basis of the success or failure of this nation. I am asking on the basis of who and what YOU are, You are the God the Father who designed the plan and sent the Son. I am asking on the basis of the Son who satisfied your Righteousness and Justice, your Integrity or Holiness and therefore as a result you do not have to treat me in righteousness or I would not even be here uttering these words, nor do you have to treat me in justice or I could not stand up for even a moment and say even “father”, but you can and have always treated me in Love based on your Nonmeritorious Grace and you cannot treat me in any other way. Solely on the basis of that I am asking this that you deliver this nation and this people. Deliver these people and this nation because of who and what you are and because it is not right for the heathens of the world to be able to say “Where is their God”. There are believers in this United States of America today and you have a plan for these believers and even though we have no right or reason to come to you having failed in every way, your plan is the only thing of importance and as believers we function in your plan. Provide all believers in this nation another opportunity to understand and realize the importance of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and the unbelievers again with a lucid presentation of the gospel of Christ, in order that they might have opportunity to make a decision for or against these things. Deliver us because of your character and allow the world to be in awe of your character and Grace.

On the basis of appealing to the Character or Essence of God, God is free to do great things for all believers because his love is able to reach believers based on the His propitiation as a result of the completely acceptable and satisfying Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross and as a result his Love is constant and stable. God has done in the history of the world and in our history as individual believers great things and will continue to do great things for us so long as we persist with consistent Positive Volition toward his Bible Doctrine.

Revolution, the People & The Lord

In every ORGANIZATION, including the Local Church and even the entire population of a nation, there are those who are able to be ACTED UPON. They are the cannon fodder for any revolution. The only thing which is needed to initiate the revolution is a leader or mastermind who can foment the rebellion, and these all operate under Power and Approbation lust trying to gain control of the organization. Once the flag of revolt has been raised there are many people who will rally around it and defy any existing authority whether it is functioning under the Laws of Divine Establishment principles or not. These are the dupes and all have different motivations and reasons for joining in revolution and generally these are completely selfish. The mastermind in revolution against the Laws of Divine Establishment organization must be someone who Satan can use, who is whatever the situation demands, Shrewd, Sweet, Clever, Ruthless, etc. This mastermind must be able to work on the multitude who are generally fickle and must know how to stir them up and once he has fanned them into a white hot frenzy he also has to know how to use this aroused state in these individuals to accomplish the overthrow of existing authority. His false principles, which in fact are systems of propaganda, show him in the light of appearing to be contending for and seeking what is right for OTHERS. This is the facade that the mastermind of a rebellion uses while needing to have some righteous cause to get the dupes excited and the rebellion started. The common front or gimmick for rebellion and revolution is very often Human, Common or Equal Rights. This sounds good to the people, who in their Self Righteous Arrogance and Self Pity consider themselves to be being unjustly treated in some way, and they generally will fall in to the rebellion joining with the dupes to be used by the leaders as a weapon in the rebellion or revolution. There is no such thing in this world ruled by Satan as “human rights” except those which are provided under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions given to mankind by God. There is also no such thing as ‘EQUALITY’ among people because no 2 people are ever born, live or die equally. The only basis for TEMPORARY equality in this world ruled by Satan is through Regeneration and positional sanctification or positional truth at the moment of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. One of the great gimmicks in the ‘human rights’ and ‘common rights’ propaganda is that the revolutionary leaders always propose to “BETTER the situation for the common man”. However, they do not, will not and in fact cannot better the situation for the common man and there is, in reality, NO WAY to better the situation for the common man except through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Regeneration. ONLY GOD can provide a better situation for man who is born into, lives under and dies under a system designed and operated based totally on the false principles of Evil by Satan. It never has been and never will be possible to better any situation under the Cosmic Dynaspheres of Satan’s System of ruling this world. Inevitably, when Satan touches anything the only one who gets any advantage is Satan himself and temporarily those who serve him and they do use human rights gimmicks. The false issues regarding those in authority or control, which the revolutionaries are antagonistic to, which the masterminds in rebellion or revolution always expound upon include:

- Personality flaws of the leaders they oppose

- Human Rights and / or Equality as the gimmick system
- Negative evaluation of performance records of leaders they oppose

Insurgency using both clandestine and overt guerrilla war tactics leading to overt revolution against a national government which functions, though even poorly, under the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions is initiated by the Arrogance of power and approbation lust of CRIMINALS. These criminals want to change the situation in a society to make their criminality easier to engage in and to satisfy their lust for power over or recognition by the people whom they invariably seek to control. They appeal to the arrogant pseudo intellectuals among the students and faculty of both institutions of higher education and also today in secondary educations systems as indicated by Debray (23) in his “Strategy for Revolution”. They use a systematic propagandizing of people in the masses of the middle and lower classes of working individuals to brainwash them into following by proposing a better society under their idea of pseudo equality while relegating freedom to the trash can. The pseudo intellectuals refuse to commit the time and effort in focus and concentration to understand and assimilate the complex principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and, especially for the apostate believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the whole realm of scriptural orthodox Bible Doctrine. Instead they expend their effort to learn the simplistic principles that are espoused by those who promote the EVIL of insurgency, revolution and terrorism. No matter the origin of the philosophies of revolution and insurgency they ultimately boil down to VIOLENCE as the only means to change another’s ideas and that Violence must be used to change those who do not agree with the ideas of the revolutionaries. Consider that this is the underlying evangelistic basis for islam, the self proclaimed religion of “peace”. The concepts that these revolutionaries follow, for the most part even today, are that political parties and programs matter very little to them. It is the ARMED clashes the fighting against establishment forces which is most important because they believe that the from these armed confrontations political beliefs would emerge. They function on the idea, “Destroy first, see what happens later”. (11, Pg 28) Even today in this 21st century the revolutionaries whether clandestine or overt focus their intentions on the use of some level of violence during their demonstrations as looting or destruction of property, to change the establishment order of things.

However, most often, a little power stimulates the lust for MORE power so that those who are in the lower echelons of an organization see opportunity for personal advancement or aggrandizement when revolution begins in that system and willingly move toward it. They see opportunity to exuberantly engage in the rebellion as potential leaders of it. This is the status quo of the people in the various levels of the democratic political party in the United States and the people in control of the media systems as well. They have inordinate ambition and desire for ego stimulation from approbation received from the people praising them for their efforts on behalf of the “less fortunate”. They are, in fact, operating under the lust system of their Old Sin Nature. To start a rebellion or revolution there must be some apparent or pseudo righteous cause and very often this gimmick has something to do with a distortion of some aspect of Individual Rights leading into the myth of Equality. This is the EXACT thing which Martin Luther King got the blacks in the United States all wound up about. In each and every

situation like this is in reality a rebellion against God were the facade or front or basis for it involves Individual RIGHTS. This is the whole underlying focus of SOCIALISM which constantly makes issue of and talks about HUMAN RIGHTS but is completely and totally anti God in every way. Socialism undermines the Divine Institutions and distorts or negates the Laws of Divine Establishment and is antagonistic to the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Under socialism MAN does things for man's benefit while under the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, GOD is doing things for man's benefit which he cannot earn nor deserve and which man can add nothing to; Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Socialism always pushes for the "greater good for the greater number" but the whole concept of lack of stability in "human rights" is best view through the looking glass of Man having his very own Old Sin Nature, basic selfishness, inner lusts, tendency toward personal sin and degeneracy, Etc., and that he MUST be held responsible for his own decisions.

In general, man truly knows very little about human rights unless he has reached [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and has maximum [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There is an incredible amount of phony activity in the realm of human rights, especially today in the 21st century, and much of this is falsely pushed by the National and World counsel of churches as part of the communist agenda or the agenda of islam. The people who talk constantly about human rights are most often only interested in personal advancement and they view this human rights agenda as the gravy train which will bring them even more power and control of others. This is difficult for the average person to see as the facade for some organization to gain more POWER. In revolution or rebellion there are trouble makers who are fighting God's Order of things, under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, and trouble makers are always trying to get themselves to the top. These are the ones who try to satisfy their own power lust and often speak loudly about the violations of the common rights of others in order to advance self. ***Much of this is based on the false ideas revolving around EQUALITY. No 2 members of the Human Race are EQUAL in any way, NONE are born equal, NONE live equally, NONE die equally and no one can be made equal and no one can make others EQUAL.*** The only true but temporary equality in the Human Race occurs at the very moment of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. All the legislation, social action, revolution and social rebellion, to make the lot of people in life better, is doomed to failure because this is the devil's world, ruled under the IMPERFECT concepts of the Cosmic Dynaspheres, and it is impossible to make people in any way equal under an imperfect system. The individuals who to shout loudest for Human Rights are simply trying to get into a position of power so that they can RULE and be greater than and have more "rights" than these others, whom they propose equality for.

This is a common pattern in human history and in the French Revolution the people who shouted loudest for brotherhood, liberty, equality, fraternity turned right around in a horrendous reign of terror and guillotined people from every walk of life not just the nobility. Soon after this began each group was fighting the others and it was one incredible holocaust. It did get rid of the Bourbon dynasty but it brought in the guttersnipes who could not stand the power and fought among themselves so much that there was 20 years of war and finally, out of this, came some level of stability under dictatorship. This is the possible picture of the

future of the United States of America as we look forward in this 21st century. The same thing has occurred over and over again with communists where the people in power were corrupt and the people who wanted the power were equally corrupt. There was a change in power in 1917 in Russia after which one of the greatest blood baths in history occurred for about 30 years. Josef Stalin, a bank robbing criminal to begin with, murdered about 25 million Russian people. Again this same thing occurred in China and again under the Chinese communists people even today are still being persecuted and murdered and their grand total of executions in one way or another exceeds 125 million people. NOW! THE PEOPLE IN THE UNITED STATES MUST WAKE UP because what happened in Russia in 1917 is now happening in the United States of America 100 years later beginning in 2008 on to this very day and it keeps getting worse and worse. The complete irony of the reality of this is that the current Russian President, Vladimir Putin has expressly told the people in this country publicly that we are following the pattern of the Bolshevik revolution which occurred there in 1917 and that from his perspective IT WAS WRONG FOR RUSSIA AND IS WRONG FOR THE UNITED STATES. This clearly proves the axiom that you cannot change STUPID!

This trend began in the United States of America with the outcry for equality and human rights which started about the same time as the Russian revolution with a short interim for World War II but came back with a vengeance in the 1960s when the bible lessons from which this manuscript is derived were being taught. Any person with any discernment at all can see clearly that the people who shout loudest for human rights trample them the hardest when they get the power to do so. Labor Unions are another good example and these along with all the other hypocrisies seen clearly in the United States are generally completely ignored by the people. The people must begin to see that the solutions to man's problems are NOT found in REFORMATION but are only found in REGENERATION as a result of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. It is only The Lord Jesus, The Christ who can solve the problems of man and the problems in this nation and people MUST wake up to this. Therefore, revolution is not only an index to national apostasy, degeneracy and client nation failure on every front but it destroys all client nation functions which are to be under the environment of freedom. Revolution is always anti-God and anti-establishment creating the illusion of freedom while destroying freedom. When a group or organization gets out of fellowship in mass like the people in the United States are today, or are in opposition to the systems put in place by God, and some have leadership or authority positions and are malcontent, they want to take over immediately and this results in civil war or overt rebellion in that organization or nation. God requires faithfulness from every person to whom he gives administrative or leadership responsibilities and those in control of any organization up through any level of any national government must remember that they are answerable DIRECTLY to GOD.

From the standpoint of Bible Doctrine and a passage of 2nd Samuel it looks more and more like the United States of America will never survive unless apostate and degenerate Americans are killed by the millions and then hopefully the believers who remain will have their faces pushed into the dust so hard that they will finally recognize their own huge Arrogance. Maybe, after this disaster, just maybe, in Grace, God will see fit to honor the existence of a small pivot or the remnant of Jeshurun believers and the others who would come to their senses, and allow

this nation to continue under His Grace Plan. The Justice of God has been giving the United States the most shocking events ever to be imagined. Political Arrogance and collective Arrogance has increased in the United States of America to the point that those who control the government cannot any longer be blamed because the people must blame themselves and must recognize that the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) has changed Americans. The Interlocking System of Arrogance has made an incredible difference in the citizenship of the United States of America and its degeneracy saturates every facet of American life. As disaster occurs more and more regularly, people will blame the president, congress and any part of the government, national, state, or local for their difficulties, however, the elected representatives whom are blamed are still elected by these same people and if one blames someone whom he voted for then he is the coward. The people of the United States have elected to government those who are inadequate for disaster, or these same people have ALLOWED THEM TO STEAL the government. The true problem in reality is that the Interlocking System of Arrogance is so prominent today that the people of this country are not by any stretch of the imagination ready for any level of true unsolvable disaster. The United States has such incredibly poor leadership in high echelons of both its political and military organizations, all who are functioning in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, and this has been becoming worse since some of the presidents have been sifting out those who are devoted to their oath to protect the constitution. Therefore it is imperative that believers remain focused under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and remain in the ranks of civil and military service to form a pivot of mature believers, the only remaining stabilizer for the nation.

Revolutionary Leadership

Behind most revolutions and conspiracies is ONE smart person and as long as the revolutionaries or conspirators listen to him things go well but if he is lost the revolution is most often destroyed. The trouble with a humble man serving the arrogant leader of a revolution is that the leader eventually assumes that he did it all and that he does not need the humble man. No matter how much Bible Doctrine one has learned if he walks into the Interlocking System of Arrogance he becomes instantly stupid and eventually ignorant of all Bible Doctrine. No believer can use any doctrine he has learned when he is within the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The true secret to greatness is humility and the secret to destruction of all greatness is Arrogance. This country has incredible greatness potential but it has produced very few truly great men in its history because of an overriding national Arrogance. Arrogant people cannot use their own talent or ability to get through life but they must depend on others because their vanity has destroyed or neutralized their positive assets. The further one gets from the Laws of Divine Establishment authority system the more difficult it is to determine what to do and since revolution starts with Arrogance, a complete rejection of all authority, the revolutionaries inevitably move to violence and a reign of terror results BECAUSE OF Arrogance. Revolutions are easy to start but difficult to perpetuate because when they are perpetuated by violence they inevitably fail or must, in order for them to survive, revert back to the Laws of Divine Establishment Modus Operandi. Therefore, in time of pressure and adversity the Arrogant are helpless, therefore, if one finds himself helpless in time of personal difficulty it is most often because of underlying Arrogance. The arrogant individual must depend on the counsel and wisdom of others who at the very best are in a state of

humility and in the very worst are forming a mutual admiration society to foment some level of revolution.

Revolution and the People

When people choose revolution over their establishment leadership it dramatizes the ineffectiveness of public opinion. In these cases the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) combines with strong delusion to convert the fabrications of revolutionary propaganda into violence and destruction. Revolution cannot ever divorce itself from violence. The primary failure of revolution is demonstrated by the FACT that revolutionists MUST use violence against their opposition because they cannot logically and rationally reason with an opposition. IT MUST ALWAYS BE REMEMBERED that “the voice of the people” in the general population, public opinion, is generally just a voice and is definitely not part of the Plan of God. The general population of any nation is susceptible to the flattery of propaganda and deception from conspirators and revolutionary leaders and cannot know or be part of the plan of God as a result of being saturated with Arrogance resulting in strong delusion ([2Thes 2:10-12](#), [Matt 13:37-38](#), [James 5:19-20](#), [Heb 3:13](#), [1Cor 15:34](#)) and therefore, believe the LIES of the Satanic Evil involved in revolutionary propaganda at face value. The general population of a nation, when saturated with Arrogance, cannot comprehend the divine nature of the Laws of Divine Establishment or the Divine Institutions and the necessity for their continued function in order to maintain human existence. They do not comprehend the essential of freedom as the key to evangelism and the purpose for the existence of man and they easily fall prey to the Evil of socialist and communist propaganda. In the United States of America in 1980 this nation had the same situation which had occurred in France at the time of their revolution. The situation today is vastly worse because the United States has the infiltration of peoples which are not American from Vietnam, Korea, China, the Middle East, Mexico, Central and South America. Etc., which are degrading all aspects of the status of this country. These people do not understand in any way FREEDOM except regarding what they can get without any effort on their part from this government of liberal idiots. The ongoing revolution here in the United States of America has been organized by government administrators at every level to use all these People in a systematic way to cause a forced change in this government and violence has been and will be a greater and greater part of it.

Advice given during revolution, when distorted by a lust for power and revenge, will fail and any good advice will never be incompatible with common sense derived from Bible Doctrine. Whenever advice is given during revolutions to start a reign of terror the revolution will of a certainty eventually fail. In revolution, or any organization, when a leader loses control of the people whom he leads he has lost whatever his cause represents or his objective was. The greater the cause the Greater the Discipline required and the greater the order which must be maintained and this is a paradox in revolution since revolutionaries reject ALL authority. Revolutions which break down into reigns of terror inevitably go backward and totally fail as a result. During a reign of terror when the revolutionary army engages in rape, theft, murder and are permitted to do whatever they want against the helpless population they have invariably set themselves up for defeat and it is their lust for violence which will bring inevitable destruction upon them. This is in fact what occurred in the pursuit of the Jews by

the Egyptians during the initial stage of the Exodus. The Jews were trapped at the Marsh Sea part of the Red Sea between 2 mountain ranges and the Egyptians pursued them with the intention of killing all 2,000,000 adults and all the children as well. They were saturated with a killing lust and did not even consider the ramifications of the passage through the red sea if the waters did NOT remain open for them. This is also true of any military organization who ceases to function in a professional way and abuses helpless civilian populations so that when they go into battle they have completely lost the character needed for courage in combat. Inevitably they become cowards and are defeated and in fact they actually lost the field battles when they went against the helpless people in the civilian population. They cause themselves to become objects of divine judgment through the principle that pillaging and unrestrained violence in any army shows a defeated army. Once revolution or invasion occurs there will be no Law Enforcement agency to protect the freedom, privacy, property and lives of the law abiding citizens in this client nation United States of America. Even today as the United States sits at the very edges of revolution it takes great character, honor and integrity to remain in the Law Enforcement profession. The day will come when the people will desperately call for the men in Law Enforcement and they will not be there because of the revolution. This points to the idiocy of the people who support legislation designed to force registration and ultimately make it easy for confiscation of Firearms from the civilian population and want to “defund” the police.

Race & Religion in Revolution

Whenever race rears its ugly head as an issue in a nation it does so because the ones who issue the race cry are totally saturated in Arrogance. Whenever a group of people take themselves too seriously and demand for themselves, as a race or as a people grouped in any other way, some level of special treatment, this is truly Arrogance. The people which make an issue of self because of race are locked into Arrogance and ready and waiting to be exploited by revolutionaries. This is clearly demonstrated by the conflicts arising from the brown and black communities from the early 60's until now. Under the United States constitution to make an issue of race and to demand rights which are not earned nor deserved nor worked for and to claim discrimination because of race, is total Arrogance and this simply drives these people into the status of CANNON FODDER for exploitation in revolution. These were the people in the Martin King marches in the 1960s and the Black Lives Matter demonstrations of the 21st century. This principle is also very true of white trash as well but since they are not keenly aware of any plight of their antecedents they cannot make an issue of race. Many revolutions are started based on race or religion and moslems start revolutions on the basis of their pseudo religion. When they demanded rights in India and were given freedom by the British, at least 1,000,000 moslems died within 30 days. Race and religion are constantly exploited by revolutionists who don't care about either and just want power over others. These are the riots and “demonstration marches” here in the United States of America on behalf of the Palestinians who are being fought by the Jews to preserve Israel in the 2020s. This is Antisemitism at its worst and a complete lack of understanding of the position of the Jews in the world and especially the middle east. Once Arrogance is added to any perceived slighting related to race or religion the first loud mouthed rabble rouser to come will bring destruction to the area. When the 2nd civil war, which is certainly coming, begins in the United States of

America within her borders, it will be the result of race rioting, demonstration marches and revolution. If a nation is to maintain itself it must meet the violence of revolution whether the cause is religion, race or any other perceived social injustice with greater violence and totally destroy it. The lack of this kind of response to ongoing rioting and guerrilla revolutionary tactics has been and currently continues to be the greatest failure of the United States in the early 21st century. Unfortunately, in efforts to destroy the revolutionaries, many innocent people inevitably get hurt. However, from the perspective of the Justice of God, He often uses revolution to punish many people involved inexorably in apostasy and degeneracy. Whatever capabilities or abilities an individual or group may have, when involved in revolution they are neutralized by their residence in the Arrogance systems. The United States of America since before the 1960's has suffered collective involvement as a whole nation in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) and it is just waiting as a flash pan of powder for some spark to set it off. The United States of America is on the brink of either overt revolution, a 2nd civil war or foreign invasion and the people have become excessively hypersensitive and have totally lost the ability to laugh at themselves because they have lost ALL objectivity, flexibility and humility.

Violence in Revolution

Violence when used in revolution is a key to its initial success because it instills fear or terror in the individual citizen therefore terror is one of the overriding keys to revolutionary insurgency. See the book, "The Terrorists, Their Weapons, Leaders and Tactics" Christopher Dobson and Ronald Paine. (11) Revolutionists try to make murderers heroes and convince the public their cause is good. This is the basis for the suicide bombers of Islamic terrorism. Idealists (Crusaders) + Criminals + Psychopaths all under the influence of political thinkers who preach that violence is needed to make the world better for the masses produce the propaganda and organizational hierarchy of revolution. Revolutionists proclaim that colonialism is wrong when in fact it was one of the greatest things to happen in the entire history of the world, bringing great evangelism and missionary functions to "3rd world" nations and in fact is the underlying method for the distribution of missionaries from client nations to the heathen nations of the world. The "new" terrorists derive their motivation from the psychology of regaining self esteem. See the book, "[Blood, Brains and Beer](#)" by David Ogilvy. (25) Ogilvy served in counter insurgency and counter intelligence for the British in World War II and noted that Joseph Stalin started clandestine warfare against the allies even while they were delivering billions of tons of military supplies to the Russians in World War II. Although it was not as totally apparent as it is today, even in World War II, the American press put freedom of press before national security and played into the hands of the clandestine efforts of the Russian state.

Thought & Decision in Revolution

When the revolution becomes involved in a reign of terror, which inevitably results from the overthrow of the principles of establishment, the revolutionists become incapable of thinking. Arrogance is the environment of mediocrity and the passive debilitation of thought. Thought and decision require humility, objectivity, flexibility combined with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine principles in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This can be in the form of the

content of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions for believers and unbelievers both or the detailed Doctrines of the Word of God for the believer. It is never that the revolutionary staff lacks talent, ability, intelligence or mentality but their potential wisdom is invariably neutralized by their involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and their being under strong delusion. ([2Thes 2:10-12](#), [Matt 13:37-38](#), [James 5:19-20](#), [Heb 3:13](#), [1Cor 15:34](#)) Knowledge is the only environment for effective thinking, therefore, Metabolized Bible Doctrine is needed for any proper thinking by both believers and unbelievers involved in clandestine or guerrilla counter insurgency. Unbelievers must function based on the doctrinal absolute truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and any involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance can destroy either. One can only have thoughts which he personally understands and thus he must have in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul the vocabulary and categorical compilations of Biblical Doctrine or Establishment principles of Absolute Truth for effective planning and decision making. Because knowledge is the environment for thinking, the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine, including the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions, IS the environment for effective decision making. In a revolutionary counsel which is bound to the overthrow of the Establishment and most likely rejects Bible Doctrine there can be no long lasting effective decisions. When one makes choices on the basis of Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment truth he continues to possess the freedom to make more and greater choices. If one makes decisions on the basis of Arrogance in the environment of ignorance he limits and reduces his choices and rejects good plans and eventually comes to disaster. Arrogance at any level therefore can destroy a business, team, or an entire nation as a result of bad decisions, changes in policies, reactions to feet of clay, etc. Decisions based on the Arrogance of Ignorance result in running out of choices so that nothing is left for the individual especially the believer but Divine Discipline and the [Sin Unto Death](#). It is inevitable that those involved in the development of conspiracy, violence, and revolution eventually run out of decisions because they have destroyed their own freedom of choice. They have therefore, destroyed themselves from their own free will where their choices are based on involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and this person always rapidly runs out of choices. These people never take responsibility for their own choices and the result for those who abandon honor and reject Bible Doctrine is a dim and foreboding future. Therefore it is clearly obvious that when revolutionists run out of thoughts for forming plans by which they can win, they must resort to violence where they will become greater losers and suffer horribly before they die. Communism uses the nonviolence of socialism to destabilize western freedom based nations in order to inject communism into their governmental systems and then enforce compliance with VIOLENCE.

Divine Perspective on Revolution

The Bible is Anti-Revolution and there is no place for revolution in the Plan of God nor in the Economy of God. Revolution is the function which Lucifer engaged in to begin the Angelic Conflict in Eternity Past. The fact is that neither history nor the word of God ever justifies Revolution. Revolution requires Mobs which are never justified regardless of the cause they may espouse. Mobs cannot think and totally lack objectivity and anything accomplished by a mob is NOTHING because it is based in Lawlessness. When human power and privilege are

monopolized by a few, the majority of people become oppressed and their freedoms and opportunities are severely limited even to the point of overt slavery. Men and Resources cannot ever be effectively exploited apart from Freedom without some reaction by those being exploited. Often this reaction is violent taking the form of Revolution but this never actually achieves anything worth while. The reality is that anything achieved by revolution could have been achieved WITHOUT revolution. This is the Anglo-Saxon Heritage of the United States of America. This is illustrated by comparing the French Revolution of 1795 with the reform bill of 1812 in England where changes were accomplished in England through parliamentary procedure while in France they were attempted through Mob violence. Mob violence Failed and Parliamentary Procedure became a permanent part of English History. Thus the truth and reality of the principle that the End DOES NOT ever justify the Means. However the animalism of communism says that the End justifies the Means of accomplishing the end, and if they have to kill huge numbers of people to accomplish world conquest that is acceptable and justified. (25, "[Reflections on the French Revolution](#)", Edmund Burke)

The principle which makes revolution madness is that for a people to break sharply with their past is to court instability, insecurity, uncertainty therefore madness and this madness leads to national trauma. Just as the sanity of the individual lies in the continuity of his memories so the sanity of a group or a nation lies in the perpetuation of its past under [Divine Institution](#) #4. Revolution requires the function of MOBS lacking thought or sanity and Mobs are neurotic in their functions therefore they invariably operate under VIOLENCE. Revolution is a violent overthrow of POWER, a system of government, within the Establishment Principles of Divine Institution #4. To clarify, in American History the War of 1775 and following was NOT a revolution against the government of England, it was a War for Independence as a result of not being given equality of parliamentary representation. This resulted in Tyranny and tyranny inevitably leads to a war for Independence from the tyranny and that is NOT a revolution. If there are not significant changes in the operation of the federal government of the United States of America in this 21st century the United States may become involved in another War for Independence.

The Communist Revolution of 1917, The French Revolution of 1795 and the Chinese revolution are great blots on the Escutcheon of History. The French Revolution properly came to a sudden halt in the way in which ALL mobs must be handled with legitimate overwhelming VIOLENCE. At the time of these bible lessons in the 1960s, there were people in mobs LOOTING established businesses, it began to occur again over and over in the beginning of the 21st century and continues to this very day with uncontrolled mobs looting, killing and destroying personal property. These were and are uncontrolled because the people in authority in the Law Enforcement and governmental segments where it was occurring did not enact the needed VIOLENCE to control them. These governmental people did not have the MORAL COURAGE to do what was right and what was needed then in the 60s and now again in the 21st century. Mobs and 'Marches' or 'demonstrations' are ILLEGITIMATE functions under the United States Constitution where citizen's Grievances must be redressed with petitions formulated by groups in non-public gatherings. The looters and mob demonstrators should be SHOT and KILLED on the spot just as Napoleon did in France to end the Revolution there.

Domestic administrative policies have been so weak and vacillating for DECADES that the only way to recover from this vacillation is to take a VERY FIRM hand to Shoot Down and KILL Looters and MOBS and thus stop the traitorous activities of disgracing the flag, ridiculing of the Military and Law Enforcement, burning of Military buildings and recently burning Law Enforcement vehicles. The only way to stop these things is to SHOOT these people down in their tracks and arrest a few people who are apparent leaders and put them in prison to be tried and then, without appeal after conviction for treason, execute them publicly. ALL illegal aliens today must be either hunted down and deported to the worst places on this earth or evangelized and given the option of military service under INTENSIVE military training and cultural indoctrination, to become a citizen.

In revolution the Lord and People are NEVER on the same side. Revolutionaries are anti-doctrine, anti-establishment and under Strong Delusion ([2Thes 2:10-12](#), [Matt 13:37-38](#), [James 5:19-20](#), [Heb 3:13](#), [1Cor 15:34](#)) and accept the propaganda of the revolution as truth. The revolutionaries are best described by involvement within the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) and being under strong delusion from Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and / or the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Arrogance is weak and always vulnerable to deception and deceived into believing the LIE of Satan's Policy of Evil. The arrogant person is vulnerable to any deceptive approach which complements his Arrogance. This was Ishah (Eve) in the garden of Eden in conversation with the Satan possessed serpent. It is the flattery of deception which overcomes and defeats one under the Arrogance of Ignorance in revolution. There is a dramatic demonstration of this in the ineffectiveness of public opinion where the Interlocking System of Arrogance combines with Strong Delusion Negative Volition to convert the fabrication of revolutionary propaganda into violence and evil. Revolution in any nation can be a success when Arrogance and strong delusion saturates the officer corps of the military or Law Enforcement causing them to follow the revolutionaries. The only defense one has against strong delusion and revolutionary propaganda is the ABSOLUTE TRUTH of the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, and the total content of Bible Doctrine.

Revolution & God

Therefore, God never approves of revolution nor those involved in it nor of conspiracy and those involved in it. ([Numbers](#), [Is 31:6](#)) God uses the Arrogance of revolution and of revolutionary leaders to destroy the leaders and the revolution. Arrogance destroys itself so that whatever comes to Arrogance by way of disaster is the result of involvement in that same Arrogance. The underlying principle is that those who live by Evil ultimately then die by Evil and this describes what happens to revolutions, any form of conspiracy and any function where the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the motivation. {The antithesis of this for the positive believer who advances to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is that Those who Live by GRACE Die by GRACE, the last opportunity of God to Bless the believer in his lifetime.} This demonstrates that the system of Arrogance adopted by one inevitably results from Evil and this Arrogance and Evil destroys the person who chooses them. Therefore, the Justice of God administers punishment through the environment of the Evil created by the Arrogance of men under Evil. Revolution is motivated by Evil and Arrogance so that [Crusader Arrogance +](#)

Criminal Arrogance == Revolution. No one becomes involved in Revolution or conspiracy or seeks revenge or destruction of another except by involvement in Arrogance as a result of choices from their own personal volition. Motivation for this volitional function is the influence from the Lie of Evil and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Volition makes choices for Evil and Arrogance until these build up terrible results and thus cause volition to run out of choices. Those who create disaster for others inevitably bring disaster on themselves so that this is true of conspiracy and revolution and the result is that Revolution eats her own children.

In the client nation which has a strong remnant of mature believers, especially when a sufficient pivot exists, and because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History through these believers, the hard corps revolutionaries are the ones who WILL die. No good ever comes from rejecting a legitimate Laws of Divine Establishment government and participating in conspiracy against it. Freedom can only exist under the Laws of Divine Establishment oriented authority of a legitimate government, whatever the category of government may be. Military victory in battle provides freedom for the nation but it does not resolve the problems in the nation and it is the function of government after battlefield victory which determines the true results of battlefield success as positive or negative for the nation.

The Believer's Perspective in Revolution

Courage, which is the ability to think clearly under pressure, for the believer, comes from Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. However, it is possible to learn Bible Doctrine and fail under the pressure of national crisis or disaster. There is no guarantee that having learned Bible Doctrine one will succeed in applying it during catastrophe or disaster. Very often, adversity, pressure, disaster or catastrophe often result in a BELIEVER becoming a coward while the unbeliever demonstrates great courage. However it must be clearly understood that in both cases COURAGE comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine which for the believer is all categories of doctrine from scripture while for the unbeliever it involves only the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions needed for proper client nation functions. Many believers with Metabolized Bible Doctrine have been cowardly, confused and disorganized because when outside pressures come their emotion dominates the soul in Emotional Revolt of the Soul. Believers for a very long time have been indoctrinated by liberal theologians to think that Christianity is sweetness and kindness to everyone at all times because of miss applications of “turn the other cheek” concepts from scripture. The historical reality of the true function of the Christian in all types of War and counter insurgency is that the Lord Jesus, The Christ is LORD OF THE ARMIES and he alone in 1 night killed 185,000 Assyrian troops. It is The Lord Jesus, The Christ who will return with the sound of the trumpet and completely decimate the earth removing all unbelievers prior to beginning his reign in the millennium. The thrust of Christianity in social environments is to be through Impersonal Love where the Christian simply allows others the FREEDOM to think, say and do what they wish. Christianity is orientation to reality not sweetness and light and only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which stimulates Divine Viewpoint thinking can bring courage when it is applied properly under pressure. When one's own emotion floods the thinking processes of the soul, Bible Doctrine is useless and this

results in cowardice, fear, resentment, etc. Emotion blocks thinking and greed, fear, cowardice, hatred, etc., are all emotions. The difference between fear and courage is the ability to think under pressure. It is erroneous to think that courage is lack of fear because in reality courage is possessing fear but being able to properly think under that pressure and thus continue to function effectively. Therefore courage requires something with which to think such as the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment or the whole realm of Bible Doctrine. Either will produce common sense when exercised vigorously under even simple pressures.

Hatred like fear results in emotion dominating the soul and stops the thinking processes. If one has involvement with the sin of hatred it produces negative emotion which blots out thinking so that people who hate cannot think with regard to the object of their hatred. Jealousy is not only a part of Mental Attitude Arrogance but also negative emotion, all which blot out thinking as well. No believer can think, concentrate or apply Bible Doctrine under pressure when negative emotion dominates the soul and all negative emotions are produced by living in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is an intertwining of various Arrogance functions so that there develops a conditioned reflex where emotion will flood the soul whenever one tries to think in normal times or under pressure or even in circumstances of unexpected prosperity. The courage from thought under pressure is the Modus Operandi of the last 4 stages of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 Stages\)](#). Claiming the Promises of God from the bible results in setting aside negative emotions of fear, cowardice, hatred, jealousy, bitterness, implacability, any and all other Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude sins from the Interlocking System of Arrogance, so that the soul is stabilized and thought can resume. This results in the reassertion of thinking which must dominate the soul. In the first stage of Faith Perception, faith uses concentration to assimilate, accept or 'Metabolize' Bible Doctrine into storage areas of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In Stage 3 of Faith Rest faith uses reverse concentration to extract from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul principles of Bible Doctrine to ADD to and strengthen the promises from scripture which have been claimed. Stage 4 of Faith Rest uses reverse concentration for developing, from Metabolized Bible Doctrine which is stored in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, categorical systems from which doctrinal rationales for application to the situation can easily be extracted. The believer must be able to use this Metabolized Bible Doctrine from his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to determine when to shift from the normal scale of values for day to day life to the disaster or clandestine or guerrilla counter insurgent scale of values to survive and restore the client nation. Along with consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ must be the believer's first priority on both of the dual scale of values. In Stage 5 of Faith Rest, when the doctrinally derived rationales are applied then doctrinal conclusions are available to enable the believer to completely control the pressure situation. Knowledge is the environment for thinking NOT EMOTION therefore, through knowledge of Bible Doctrine the believer will be able to meet any situation and handle any pressure. In addition, Bible Doctrine is the environment for making good decisions therefore, the believer must be able to think and apply Bible Doctrine and make the right decisions. ([Prov 29:25](#), [Ps 56:3](#), [Ps 56:11](#), [Heb 11:27](#), [Deut 31:6](#), [Deut 31:8](#), [1Chron 28:20](#), [Is 41:10](#), [1Cor 2:5](#), [2Cor 5:7](#))

Anatomy of Revolution

In times of national civil unrest there are 3 categories of people in the client nation to God:

- The General Public == Uncommitted, generally confused people regarding the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions
- Hard Core revolutionists == The conspiracy authors and revolution fomentors
- The Incorruptibles == Individuals uncontaminated by anti-establishment, anti-God or anti-Doctrinal concepts and propaganda

These last 2 categories of people both live according to principles and will die defending their convictions. The incorruptibles are never converted no matter the personal consequences because they are inculcated with the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions or all aspects of Bible Doctrine. They are incorruptible because of their application of Absolute Truth, especially Bible Doctrine, to every situation. However, success of any revolution demands that the general public must be trapped in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is DEGENERACY and they must be under strong delusion with Scar Tissue of the Soul and then converted and wielded as a weapon for the revolution. ([2Sam 15, 16, 17](#))

The Principle of Revolution:

Approbation lust seeks power by the destruction of the freedom, rights, privacy, property even the life of others. Individuals are revolutionists to the extent they reject the principles of privacy, property, freedom and the rights of others. Revolution is the original cause and a satanic device which began the Angelic Conflict by which Satan sought rulership of the angelic creation and now seeks to win the Angelic Conflict and avoid the Lake of Fire judgment from God. Satan wants to establish a perfect environment under his Cosmic Dynasphere systems and impose his will over all mankind but he cannot find anyone to rule under his system apart from revolution, radical liberalism and anti-establishment concepts and functions. Revolution is both anti-authority and anti-establishment and thus is Anti-God. Socialism as an initiator of revolution ALWAYS destroys all aspects of freedom. Socialism REQUIRES excessive taxation to bring all people to the same economic level under a system of pseudo equality. Freedom, however, neither manufactures nor guarantees equality in the Human Race hence Revolution always uses its own freedom to destroy ALL freedom through social engineering, activism, socialism, and civil disobedience. Consequently, socialism and environmentalism are 2 of the greatest systems for destroying freedom. The inspiring personality, which can motivate people to follow under socialism or environmentalism, can also possess power over people as a result of the influence of Evil on him and them. ([2Thes 2:10-11](#)) All Loyalty to power under Evil contradicts the biblical principles of Integrity, Honor, and Virtue. These deceptions and distractions are resolved by the believer in making Bible Doctrine Priority #1 in his life. ([John 8:32](#))

The word of God does not ever justify revolution, ([Rom 13:1-5](#), [1Pet 2:13-14](#), [Num 16](#)) and again, in American history the war of 1775 was not a revolution with an overthrow of establishment principles and the government of England. The American Colonies had

establishment principles set up in their colonial governments and this was being suppressed by England and they fought for their independence from England. This is exactly what is occurring again today by the government of Washington DC suppressing the establishment functions of the 50 states. Revolution always involves lawless mobs which cannot think and cannot achieve anything compatible with the Laws of Divine Establishment as demonstrated by the Sea-poi, Angolan, Russian, Chinese and French revolutions. The only way to stop a lawless mob is to kill as many as possible especially the leaders. This was one of the greatest things ever done by Napoleon when he opened fire with artillery on the lawless mob in the French Revolution. Revolution infers ongoing involvement in the apostasy of reversionism and the degeneracy of Arrogance and thus connotes a lack of Bible Doctrine. ([Is 1:3-5](#), [Is59:13](#)) Revolution is anti God, ([Is 31:6](#)) and always opposed to God and nothing good has ever come from any revolution. Revolution is caused by the failure of proper function of the individual's Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, ([Jer 5:23](#), [Heb 3:14-15](#)) and always involves reversionistic Emotional Revolt of the Soul. Individual or collective jealousy as part of Mental Attitude Arrogance is a primary motivation in revolution, ([Is 11:13](#), compared to [1Kings 12:19 + 2Chron 10:19](#)) where there was incredible jealousy in the Northern Kingdom of Sumeria OF the Southern Kingdom of Judah resulted in revolution with split Israel. Jealousy as the most vicious Mental Attitude Sin causes the soul to resist bonifide authority and reject the Laws of Divine Establishment principles and keeps the individual off balance and unhappy all of his life. It is the communication of Bible Doctrine which is designed to stop revolution, ([Ez 2:3-10](#)) but heathenism, as a result of revolution, brings on human degradation. ([Rom 1:19-32](#))

The Old Sin Nature & Revolution

The Old Sin Nature is always the instigator of unrest in any nation. Evil, the plan and policy and function of Satan, when it influences man always results in Sin, Crime or Human Good production and often exerts its influence as a result of involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres especially the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Revolution is the quintessential result of that Evil. Crusader arrogance provides motivation and justification for all forms of unrest and rebellion. Criminal Arrogance provides leadership for all forms of this same unrest and rebellion and as a result of the influence of Evil forms into revolution. In every organization no matter how good or how effectively structured it may be, there will always be dissatisfied people, the "malcontents". It is these dissatisfied people who functioning under the Arrogance Skills provide the power for revolution. Evil gains great power when public opinion arrogance rejects the concepts of establishment authority orientation and substitutes 3 things on an individual basis:

- 3 Arrogance Skills
 - Self Justification
 - Self Deception
 - Self Absorption
- Interlocking System of Arrogance entanglement
- Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred entanglement

Criminality especially in revolution inevitably involves:

- Irresponsibility
- Zero authority orientation

- A Basic sense of Insecurity expressed in violence.
- A volatile temper
- Boredom.
- Recycling Arrogance skills
- Lying and Living the Lie of EVIL

Public Opinion & Revolution

In any group if the group is wrong about any one thing they are wrong about everything especially in HISTORICAL crisis. Public opinion can put pressure on politicians but it cannot ever make decisions to solve problems therefore, when public opinion makes a decision it inevitably results in some level of violence and mob action such as the French or Russian revolutions. Public opinion is stupid, useless, weak, cowardly and vacillating no matter how smart the people in the group may be because, inevitably, when people come together in a group they ALWAYS move toward the lowest common denominator of intelligence and function. Public Opinion Arrogance and Old Sin Nature Lust create a power structure which some demagogue inevitably comes along and snatches up. This power has no virtue, facts, nor reason and becomes a weapon forged from the strong delusion of the people. Therefore, it is ONLY absolute truth orientation from Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which provides the protection that public opinion can possess against revolutionary arrogance. Thus, Public Opinion includes Unbelievers and Believers amalgamated under this public opinion power. Therefore, it should be clear that Crusader Arrogance + Criminal Arrogance == Revolution. Crusaders are the motivation and justification for revolution while the Criminals provide the leadership for revolution and Authority Arrogance in the general population provides the power for revolution. ([Prov 17:11](#), [Ps 64:4-5](#)) It is very often Strong delusion which sucks the general public into revolution. ([2Thes 2:10-12](#), [Matt 13:37-38](#), [James 5:19-20](#), [Heb 3:13](#), [1Cor 15:34](#))

Public opinion cannot be relied on for anything because it is always relative thinking. Civilians must not ever enter into any type of violence because of public opinion. Public opinion is mass emotion resulting in mass hysteria. Vocs Populii Vocs Dei is FALSE and the opinion of the people En Mass does not mean anything. The true issue is integrity and wisdom from Metabolized Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment perspective. Therefore effective leadership must possess integrity and wisdom along with doctrinal viewpoint or viewpoint based on the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Leadership does not require perfect moral character since all people have and use their Old Sin Nature however it is integrity and an understanding of the necessity for freedom which are essentials. Today the media promotes public opinion in an effort designed to cause the people to accept tyranny and give up their freedoms little by little. The client nation cannot vacillate between the 2 contradictory opinions of Human Viewpoint vs Divine Viewpoint and remain as a client nation. The 5th cycle of discipline is inevitable if the thinking in the client nation does not change. Public opinion is a voice stuck in the throat and it cannot change anything any time in a historical crisis. Public opinion results in the Self Righteous Arrogance and Self Justification for government bureaucrats to change things without going through legislative functions. Therefore, public opinion is one of the most meaningless events in history.

Mobs are formed in response to public opinion and they are always destructive and used by revolutionaries to overthrow establishment power and authority and the mob is the most vicious evil thing for a person to become involved with. Public opinion always contends that there is no absolute or eternal truth and that everything changes and therefore is RELATIVE and to hold dogmatic conviction is to be narrow minded. Public opinion purports that to stand on principle is bigoted and it demands the teaching of both opinions for any questions which should always be presented without any indication of right and wrong or without applying any system of morality to them. This has resulted in the infiltration of Evil into education and society in general and has opened the door in the United States to Marxism, socialism, communism, welfare state functions, degenerate sexual practices, etc., so that scientific determinism replaces the Divine Viewpoint from Bible Doctrine. Change being considered as progress is another pattern of public opinion which inevitably upsets establishment principles and functions and destroys freedom in the name of supposed improvement and the greater common good. Giving up freedom because of emotion surrenders common sense to Evil. By this means freedom is surrendered for the greater good and the tyranny which is forged is greater than any other tyranny possible. It has been the public opinion in the United States of America which has resulted in America giving many foreign nations over to communism and to have or allow the majority to determine what is right or wrong is a false premise upon which the false value of public opinion is placed. Majority rule is a technique for making decisions and it is rule by force rather than by principled law, and always results in the decisions being based on the lowest level of understanding of principle from the lowest level of intelligence.

Failure of Public Opinion

The solution to all national and personal problems resides with the individual and with personal opinion rather than the confusion of public opinion. Thus the importance of [Pivot Politics](#) where the believers attitude toward Bible Doctrine and his motivation in the Plan of God ([X+Y+Z](#)) and his advance to Spiritual Maturity are the basis for perpetuation of freedom and the status of the client nation. When under national disaster, from the administration of the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline, in the client nation, the spin off of negative believers is ultimately destroyed through the [Sin Unto Death](#) while the pivot of mature believers or the remnant of Jeshurun believers no matter how small is generally delivered. Thus Historical and National Disaster destroys the reversionist while delivering the mature believer giving pivot politics a fresh start to restore and preserve the nation. No client nation can survive without dominance of the Divine Viewpoint of pivot politics and for this dominance to occur there must be the occasional purging of the degenerate and apostate scum which occurs with Divine Discipline. Generally speaking the Pivot of mature believers always survives and if the pivot is large enough the client nation is delivered either through or from the historical crisis. If the pivot is too small to support the client nation in historical crisis, or only a minute cadre of Jeshurun believers exists, the nation may be destroyed but the remnant of believers will be sustained. Thus the responsibility of the individual believer is clearly elucidated, so that as the believer's Spiritual Life advances through the Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the nation will be sustained or delivered BUT if believers collectively fail in spiritual advance they individually and personally will be responsible for the destruction of their nation.

Therefore, the pivot is much more important as a group of citizens of the client nation and the only basis for deliverance from disaster NOT from the human standpoint but from the divine standpoint. The deliverance of the client nation results from The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History *through or by means of the Pivot of Mature believers.*

Public opinion cannot solve the problems of life either through its collective voice nor by the personal genius and talent of its individuals. In fact, public opinion is the greatest hindrance to the expression of individual genius. Public opinion has no opinion when confronted by the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The true issue is what citizens think INDIVIDUALLY not in groups or masses expressing emotionally motivated public opinion; ONLY individual thinking truly matters. The question which should always be considered regarding the individual is does he think in terms of satanic propaganda and false doctrine or in terms of Divine Viewpoint and Absolute Truth? Every individual human being and especially every believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ has a mind and can think and must decide whether he will think Truth from the GRACE of God or Lies from the EVIL of Satan. Day by day he will become a student of Bible Doctrine or a disillusioned sucker for Satan's propaganda. This is what has occurred systematically in the United States of America for going on 100 years and the true issue is WHAT ARE BELIEVERS THINKING? Compromise in thinking intensifies the problem and guarantees the dominance of the Lie of Evil and power politics and whenever compromise exists it must be challenged by thought not violence or change.

Revolution Defined

By definition Revolution is the forceful overthrow of principles and functions detailed under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, (not just a government or a political system), by the people under that system. This overthrow, by the use of violence against such established authority, results in a fundamental change in an organization, a constitution, or a Government and its purpose. It is a form of Evil, detailed under the principles of Satan's Cosmic Dynaspheres, fomented by conspiracy formed in secret to overthrow the established authority and / or government of any organization or nation. The USA was born from FREEDOM through MILITARY VICTORY. The declaration of Independence properly expressed in writing the American colonies grievances, which were ignored by the King and Government of England which motivated the war against England to establish the independence of the American colonies in their own governance. It was not done in secret, it was not designed to overthrow England and her governmental system, IT WAS NOT A REVOLUTION.

In revolution the secret plans of the conspirators is the called the PLOT and the means of carrying out the PLOT is the INTRIGUE. These both result from the antagonism of Evil toward the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. ([Prov 17:11](#)) All revolution is Anti-Establishment, therefore, since the Laws of Divine Establishment are from God, revolution is Anti-God. ([Jer 5:23](#)) Effective Pre-revolutionary activity is always the Key to successful Revolution, this is the basic status quo of the United States of America today in pre-revolutionary conflict. It is usually the unrest of the people, often the result of inordinate oppression or more often their saturation within the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the

process of reversionism, which terminates in the destruction of the nation by God using the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline. ([Is 1:2-5](#)) In a legitimate Government system, any organizational system for that matter, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions provide a correct balance between Authority and Freedom. The American Constitution provides for the United States to have a Legitimate form of Government but the nation as a whole had drifted far off course from following it. The Principles of Freedom are:

- Freedom without Authority is Anarchy.
- Authority without Freedom is Tyranny.
- Therefore, when the balance of Freedom and Authority is destroyed it inevitably results in anarchy or tyranny.

Evil of Bureaucracy

In any government form Bureaucracy is never acceptable because it is always irresponsible and not answerable to the ones who put those in charge of the government into their positions. Bureaucracy is only answerable to the tyranny which forms it and perpetuates it. The rules it makes are not legitimate laws of government and in the constitutional republic of these United States they are total violations of the supreme law of the land, the United States Constitution. The governmental system of the United States of America is based on 3 houses under a system of Checks and Balances which checks and balances have been completely set aside today. As an example of one of the myriad of bureaucracies in the United States the Internal Revenue Service constantly steps outside the system of laws and says an individual is guilty of tax violations until they have proven themselves innocent. THIS is Tyranny and it is not limited to tax violations in this society.

Propaganda in Revolution

[Power Politics](#) to achieve its goals uses peace, love and equality propaganda to sway the masses of people to the side of ‘change’ or revolution. Reflect on the campaign and administration slogans of the Obama administration for 8 years in the United States. This keeps the ignorant people from any deep thinking by appealing to their emotion. Peace, love, change and equality are used in an effort to overcome the desire of the people to have freedom because freedom demands thought under which self determination and responsibility functions. Self Determination cannot function on emotion which is in fact only designed to appreciate freedom. When the propaganda of peace, love, change and equality does not work then under power politics there is a reversion in that system to violence, terror, assassination and revolution which are vicious functions based in Evil which always contend that the end justifies the means. Consider the 2 or 3 unsuccessful attempted assassinations against Donald Trump in this 21st century. This is demonstrated by the world and national council of churches and their statements about terrorists and their rights. Therefore when people think and resist the propaganda of peace, love, change and equality the power politic reverts to terror and tyranny to suppress them.

The subtlest aspect of modern warfare, is the manipulation of populations based in part on the use of propaganda and psychological pressures along with Terrorism. However, the opponents to or victims of these aspects of modern warfare generally refuse to respond with similar

systems to counter the insurgency. Victory in modern warfare by either the insurgent side of the defending side requires the unconditional support of a population. According to Mao Tse-Tung, if this doesn't exist, it must be secured by every possible means, the most effective of which is **TERRORISM**. Modern Counter Insurgent warfare is against an armed clandestine organization whose essential role is to impose its will upon the population. Victory will be obtained only through the **COMPLETE** destruction of that **ORGANIZATION**.

It is historical crises which clarify the differences between pivot vs power politics because historical crisis sets up a clear line of demarcation. Unless the natural or national situation is hopeless there is no real historical crisis. Often, especially recently in the release and reaction of the world to the 2019 CCP Wuhan virus, the United States and other world governments created the crisis in order to get the people to surrender freedoms. Those in control of the American government now continually contend that in order to solve a national problem people must surrender their freedom and rights, which have been given to them by God and protected by the United States constitution. The people are to have no fear of loss of freedom, because the government contents that it will return these freedoms after the crisis is resolved, **BUT THAT NEVER OCCURS**. This was clearly demonstrated in the pseudo gasoline shortages in the 1970s, after the 2001 terrorist strikes in New York, the Pentagon and Pennsylvania, and with the false propaganda regarding the CCP Wuhan Virus of 2019. The definition of **STUPIDITY** is doing the same thing over and over and expecting a different result. This is the status of the PEOPLE of the United States in their view of the beneficence of the federal government. A true Crisis means that there is no apparent or obvious solution to the problem. In any crisis there will be antithetical solutions, some from pivot politics, some from power politics. Every crisis must clarify the solutions in terms of antithesis with one presenting as black and one as white. The solutions must be clearly demarcated as one good and one bad. Inevitably true historical crisis finds power politics incapable of coping with the situation so that the crisis is intensified because of irrationality and confusion of those involved in exercising power politics.

COMMUNIST “BLUEPRINT FOR WORLD CONQUEST”

On a dark night in May, 1919, two lorries rumbled across a bridge and on into the town of Dusseldorf. Among the dozen rowdy, singing “Tommies” apparently headed for a gay (Fun Evening NOT homosexual) evening were two representatives of the Allied Military Intelligence. These men had traced a wave of indiscipline, mutiny, and murder among the troops to the local headquarters of a Revolutionary organization established in the town. Pretending to be drunk, they brushed by the sentries and arrested the ringleaders; A group of thirteen men and women seated at a long table. In the course of the raid the Allied Officers emptied the contents of the safe. One of the documents found in it contained a specific outline of “***Rules for Bringing about a Revolution.***” It is reprinted here to show the strategy of materialistic Revolution, and how personal attitudes and habits of living affect the affairs of a nation.

COMMUNIST “BLUEPRINT FOR WORLD CONQUEST”

Communist Rules for Revolution

(Captured in Dusseldorf May, 1919 by the Allied Forces*)

- **Corrupt the young, get them away from religion. Get them interested in sex. Make them**

superficial, destroy their ruggedness.

- **Get control of all means of publicity and thereby:**
 - Get people's minds off their government by focusing their attention on athletics, sexy books and plays and other trivialities.
 - Divide the people into hostile groups by constantly harping on controversial matters of no importance.
 - Destroy the people's faith in their natural leaders by holding the latter up to contempt, ridicule and obloquy.
 - Always preach true democracy, but seize power as fast and as ruthlessly as possible.
 - By encouraging government extravagance, destroy its credit, produce fear of inflation with rising prices and general discontent.
 - Foment unnecessary strikes in vital industries, encourage civil disorders and foster a lenient and soft attitude on the part of government toward such disorders.
 - By specious argument cause the breakdown of the old moral virtues; honesty, sobriety, continence, faith in the pledged word, ruggedness.
- **Cause the registration of all firearms on some pretext, with a view to confiscating them and leaving the population helpless.**

*NOTE: The above "Rules for Revolution" were secured by the State.

Freedom & Revolution

Revolution uses freedom to destroy freedom, whereas the Laws of Divine Establishment never divorce freedom from Authority and Law. The Laws of Divine Establishment are the basis for the legitimacy of any form of Government which establishes authority and law to protect FREEDOM. The Laws of Divine Establishment emphasize Freedom and Self Determination, and INEQUALITY in the people of the nation. Revolution is anti-establishment, anti-law, anti-authority and emphatically ANTI-GOD, whereas, freedom GUARANTEES Inequality in any system and is designed by God to protect the individual's Life, Privacy, Property and VOLITION this latter the key to resolving the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. Totalitarianism or Socialism are attempts to destroy freedom and provide Equality, which is an impossibility. In one's spiritual life he is free to revert to the status of unbeliever activity or advance to maturity and glorify God. This is INEQUALITY. All of mankind has this freedom to resolve the angelic conflict or NOT. With this freedom believers can have God's perfect happiness regardless of their status quo in life or REJECT it for one's own form of Self Induced Misery. Equality becomes the lying propaganda of the revolutionist seeking to gain power and control over the masses of people by exploiting their arrogance, strong delusions, and lust patterns.

In the Absalom revolution his own son undermined King David's authority as one of the greatest kings of all time. International Standard Bible Encyclopedia, Vol II, Pg 797, Sect A (ISBE): "In estimating the character of David it is generally allowed that he is the most gifted and versatile personage of Israelite history, that he is surpassing in ethical greatness and general historical importance, only exceeded by Moses, that he completed what Moses began, that he created out of Israel a nation and raised it to its highest eminence, that in spite of all his human frailties he was genuinely a pious man, an ideal ruler, a lover of righteousness and peace and the only man of his age who appreciated Israel's destiny". ([2Sam 15:1-6](#)) The

Couriers in this passage were Absalom's agents of Intrigue, his Hard Core of Revolutionaries (2Sam 15:1) who were given transportation by Absalom to undermine the status of David's Government. Absalom needed 3 Things in order to effect a successful revolution against David:

- The kiss or acceptance of David and return to Status Quo Prince, ([2 Sam 14:33](#))
 - This made it possible for Absalom to use his position as prince with David's authority as King and then undermine him for revolution.
- Agents
- Transportation for his agents.

Absalom was already a criminal having engaged in the destruction of the barley fields of Joab to force Joab to get David to accept him again. Revolution is ALWAYS a combination of Criminality and Crusader Arrogance. The criminality of revolutionary tyranny is exemplified by the estimation that Leon Trotsky murdered between 25 and 50 million people in Russia and Mao Tse-tung over 100 million. Absalom placed himself in a strategic spot to initiate propaganda against David, while his agents moved over the land creating discontent among the people. He then made personal contact with the malcontents of the land who came with a grievance for the King and then used these people and their discontent to stir up the fervor for revolution. The aspiring and attractive personality who can motivate people possesses incredible power over people. Absalom used this indirectly to undermine and destroy the government under David. For revolutionaries to destroy a government, they never attack the leaders, but they attack the Establishment Law and Jurisprudence systems and destroy them first and the government then will fall. Consider the theft and fraud perpetrated in the 2020 presidential election and what was NOT done to resolve the criminal acts involved in it and then the continuing efforts to prosecute Mr. Trump for false involvement in insurrection. To enlist support for his revolution Absalom gave pity to the malcontents and allowed them to talk about themselves and their grievances using their involvement in the arrogance skills. In allowing them to use their Arrogance Skills he won them over and further deceived them. He exploited instability in the people, by being friendly and showing pseudo compassion.

The Hypocrisy of Pseudo Compassion

The malcontented individual is always happy to talk about himself especially to someone in power. That way he can go home and tell his friends that he spoke to some one in power thus promoting his own self image. By showing he was sympathizing with those people who were attempting to go to the King's court with grievances, Absalom undermined the Judicial system and the Authority of the King. Israel's Judicial system, like the system in the United States, is supposed to have operated on the tenets of the Laws of Evidence and hearsay was never allowed in the courtroom (it is Gossip one of the 7 worst sins before God). Expressing sympathy for criminals is demonstrating pseudo compassion and will destroy a nation just like it is destroying the United States today, it undermines the law of the land. There are 2 major characteristics which make a person a revolutionist, Crusader Arrogance and Criminal Arrogance. Power Lust creates a lawless person which creates the Criminal while Approbation Lust creates the Crusader. Lawless people find it easy to sympathize with others and out of their lawlessness the weapon of revolution is forged in the people. True issues and principles are submerged by entangling themselves and the people in Emotional Revolt of the Soul and

deep involvement in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#). In this way the hypocrisy of false concern and pseudo compassion for others is very often the mechanism for stealing power from legitimate authority. Absalom used this false concern for others as his hypocritical method of gaining power over the people to use them for his revolution JUST AS Obama, Pelosi and Biden, *to name but a very few*, have also done in the 20th & 21st century United States of America. The malcontent who constantly is seeking council from others is demonstrating that he has not deployed the [Problem Solving Devices](#) onto the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul for his own problem solutions.

Compassion & Revolution Hypocrisy

Compassion is a feeling of deep sympathy and sorrow for another's suffering and misfortune accompanied with a desire to alleviate their pain and remove its cause. ([2Sam 15:4+5](#)) There are 3 categories of compassion operational in both believers and unbelievers:

- Genuine – the exhibition of kindness, sympathy, tenderness, humanity, mercy and clemency directed toward others as a human virtue.
 - Also commiseration, tenderness, long suffering, forbearance toward others as a result of the believer fulfilling his Spiritual life under the function of the 3 [Spiritual Skills](#) with emphasis on the Problem Solving Devices deployed on to the Forward Line of Troops of the soul.
 - The Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Grace Orientation ([Ps 23](#)), Bible Doctrinal Orientation, Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind are Problem Solving Devices all related to Compassion
 - Compassion emphasizes the Divine Initiative of Antecedent Grace of Eternity Past and the precedents for the Christian Way of Life from the example of the Hypostatic Union of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.
 - Compassion involves personal functions such as evangelism, the spiritual gifts of helps, intercessory prayer, personal motivation for giving, which are part of genuine compassion and a christian virtue which is a part of the function of the Spiritual Skills.
 - Genuine Compassion cannot be legislated and when this is attempted it destroys freedom and results in a pseudo compassion and misuse of compassion leading to activism, tyranny, crusader arrogance and revolution.
- Pseudo – which plays a great part in Revolution and is a system or weapon for the manipulation of people.
 - The criminal element in revolution having power lust uses pseudo compassion as a system of flattery, propaganda, manipulation and development of guilt in others, so they will make decisions which are irrational under Emotional Revolt of the Soul and join into the revolution.
 - Pseudo Compassion is a system or weapon for manipulation of people through:
 - Use of Conspiracy, as in revolution
 - Use of or function of human good as in Activism
 - Creation of guilt as in socialism.
 - Use of the functions of political power to achieve political objectives contrary to freedom.

- Pseudo compassion can destroy a nation when used by the arrogant and ambitious individual to launch a revolution.
 - These are the individuals who are generally involved in functions under the Arrogance Skills, especially #3, Self Absorption.
- Misuse – also plays a part in Revolution and results from functions under Pseudo Compassion.
 - Misuse of compassion involves the wrong or improper use, and misapplication of compassion resulting from the hypocrisy of false concern for others and their problems.

Protection from Pseudo and Misuse Compassion is in the properly functioning Judicial System based on honor and integrity. This system then provides EQUALITY BEFORE THE LAW, which is the only equality mechanism compatible with freedom. Therefore, Absalom's plan, and the plan of every revolutionist, strikes at the heart of the system in undermining the legal judicial system of the nation. While Absalom is really a criminal he pretends to be a crusader. This has been the situation and condition within the United States of America today and the incredibly poor performance of the judicial system especially in rooting out the fraudulent actions involved in the 2020 general election. In honorable, virtuous judicial functions in any nation there should be no sympathy nor emotion, pseudo compassion, nor any unjustified violence toward the criminal. The laws of evidence should apply only and by placing himself outside of the "rules" or laws of society the criminal relinquishes his rights and once convicted before these laws of evidence the criminal retains absolutely no rights. Pseudo and compassion sympathizes with criminals forgetting the victim and steals power and authority from the law and SETS THE STAGE for Revolution. Wrong people destroying the right system in Government are the most subtle criminals in human history, deceiving the population and destroying even the discerning people. To avoid revolution the Right Government demands the Right People for Right Action and Function. The principle is that Wrongs cannot be righted through more Wrong Doing, and this is the formula of activism, civil disobedience, and Revolution. The Law enforcement and the Judicial Professions have nothing wrong with them in that they are a right system but today they have a great many wrong people involved in them who lack the HONOR and INTEGRITY necessary to properly carry out their functions. I recall watching a 1950 TV episode of "Perry Mason" where Perry reserved the option of refusing to represent a client whom he did not think was honest and honorable. The wrong people in these professions even up to the judges on the bench of the United States Supreme Court, must be thrown out of the professions and gotten rid of to preserve the freedom and proper function of this client nation to God. The Judicial and Law Enforcement systems should function at all times to protect freedom, privacy, property, and Life and must not be discarded as socialism and tyrannical communism would do. The penalties for people in the professions which are to support and protect freedom who violate their responsibilities should be EXTREME. Those who control and then abuse the system MUST be severely punished but the system must be retained intact. Perfect government need not be reinvented by revolution since it is described in the scripture's Bible Doctrines and is based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions developed by GOD to protect and preserve Mankind in history. Perfect government must only be judiciously followed at all costs.

The Right System, the Wrong People.

Therefore, all revolution begins by successfully undermining the authority of good Law. Respect for the law by the people must be destroyed to pave the way for any successful revolution. The right system is Good Law which is based on Codex 3 of the Mosaic Law and involves the establishment and following of very strict Laws of Evidence in determination of criminality under all aspects of the Laws of Divine Establishment. Good Law is also demonstrated by the United States Constitutional Government of the early years of this nation. There is nothing wrong with the law enforcement or the legal profession functioning as guardians of freedom and protectors of property, privacy, unrestricted volition and life, however, there are abuses of both the courtroom and law enforcement today at every turn. These abuses should and must be severely punished. Wanting to set aside the policeman on the beat and judge on the bench is wanting to destroy freedom since it undermines the authority of the Laws of Divine Establishment. ([Rom 13:10](#)) When abuses of the system of law are used to abolish the system itself then the forthcoming revolution inevitably destroys personal freedom and replaces it with tyranny. When the system is right and wrong people abuse their authority in administering it, the system should be preserved but the administrators should be removed and SEVERELY punished having abused and misused the trust of the people who have allowed them to run the system. This should be applied to both the judicial system in its entirety and also to the 3 houses of government in this nation today. When there is destruction of a good judicial system or legislative system it will inevitably be replaced by some form of tyranny such as socialism or communism. WAKE UP! This is not a new concept, Absalom engaged in judicial abuse to undermine the judicial system of Israel and the authority of the King, his own father. ([2 Sam 15:3](#)) Revolutionary propaganda always implies that the judicial system is wrong and the people therefore need a new system to replace it and help them. In the United States in this 21st century this is the cry by left wing revolutionists to “DEFUND the POLICE”. As a result of these things and the government sponsored infiltration of illegal alien criminals into the country, crime has dramatically and inevitably increased. Absalom used confusion and a backup of court cases to overthrow the system using hearsay and gossip as evidence. Absalom flattered criminals by implying they were innocent and as a prince son of the King and a part of the establishment government he thus began to destroy the judicial system. The principles involved are:

- Flattery fed to crime condones crime
- Condoning crime destroys the judicial system
- Destroying the judicial system creates anarchy
- Out of anarchy comes revolution

Slander and propaganda are a means of gaining power in a revolution. ([2Sam 15:10](#)) When the crowd shouts it drowns out the thinking of the people who then will dumbly follow the revolutionists assuming that the propaganda of the revolution is truth. People often of their own volition, being social butterflies, are stupidly attracted to revolutionists and proud of their friendship or association with them. Very often these people are so stupid that they are led into a revolutionary trap not even knowing that a revolution is occurring. Many people gravitate to Idealism and Human Good and fail to recognize the dogmatic principle of [Jer 17:5](#).

Cursing by Association is real and believers are only protected from such things when they function under the Spiritual Skills. When an individual chooses a friend or engages in a close association with another and this other makes decisions for him, then those decisions become his decisions with him being responsible for them. This is the ultimate destruction of the dupes who follow revolutionists. This is big business which puts its trust in socialism and CATERS to labor unions which inevitably cause is destruction. All issues, controversies and difficulties must be resolved on the basis of Virtue from principles of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions for the Unbeliever. In all cases extrication of oneself from bad situations is much more complicated than implication into them and people are most often delivered from very bad situations because of what they avoid. All arrogant people are users who reject the principles of the Word of God and only the humble individuals can avoid being used by the Arrogant. True Humility is only gained by a recognition of and response to Bible Doctrine in any of the 3 forms available to man. Always beware of the condescending personality for behind the facade of concern for one's needs is the hypocrisy of pseudo compassion.

Arrogance & Evil in Revolution

Those individuals in any system who are malcontent dance to the tune of their sympathizers so that today's flattery is tomorrow's exploitation. National arrogance is the molding material for revolution so that removal of establishment authority, no matter how bad it may be, WILL result in revolutionary disaster. No government has a right to infringe on the Divine Establishment principles designed by God for the protection of the individual including:

- The right of Self Determination
- The sacredness of Privacy
- The sacredness of Personal Property
- The sacredness of Life

In the atmosphere of revolution there is only the advancement of EVIL as the policy and plan of Satan to rule this world, including:

- All forms of socialism
- All Welfare State functions
- All forms of Redistribution of Wealth
- Destruction of law by diluting it with social programs and environmental nonsense
- Downgrading the military establishment
- Destruction of police work by leniency toward criminals and crime

Sin and Arrogance always result from EVIL. Evil motivates to Sin which then results in Human Good + Arrogance which results in GREATER INVOLVEMENT IN EVIL. In revolution the people are promised that they will gain better conditions from change or revolution. The ones who accept the promise are forged as a weapon for the revolution by the arrogance and power lust of getting something for themselves without working for it which ultimately results in increasing power in a government which is devoid of any checks and balances to protect the people. There are inevitably 4 categories of people who live in a nation ready for revolution:

- Hard Core Revolutionists who conspire and intrigue to overthrow the establishment government of a client nation
- Crusaders and Criminals, who follow the Hard Core Revolutionists of the revolution where eventually crusaders must become criminals to make the revolution work or they must leave it
 - Absalom was a criminal, when he moved into Jerusalem to take over the nation, David left 10 women to help keep up the palace and Absalom took them to the top of the parapet of the castle and raped each of them so that all the population could see it.
- General Public who must be propagandized by the hard core revolutionists and the leaders of the conspiracy to get them to follow the revolution.
- The Incorruptibles who are people who understand the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.
 - These are the Believers who are advancing in the Spiritual Life to maturity, constructing their own Edification Complex of the Soul and creating and deploying Problem Solving Devices onto the Forward Line of Troops of their souls.
 - They reject the propaganda and follow the Principles of one of the categories of Bible Doctrine as believers or unbelievers.

Only those who are grace oriented and have true humility can avoid being exploited or used by those who function under the arrogance skills. Clever people always tell other people what they want to hear to be able to exploit them. Codex 3 of the Mosaic Law tells us clearly that the welfare state and socialism are the greatest systems for public exploitation and enslavement. Therefore, it becomes clear that whenever any system is used to remove establishment authority then revolution is inevitable. The people who are used and forged as a weapon of change for revolution are the victims of that very change for they become enslaved by the power lust of the hard core revolutionaries.

The Hard Core Revolutionist.

The Hard Core Revolutionist is often a combination of the crusader and criminal with a strong lust pattern in both areas. He has great Power Lust, Greed, Ambition, Criminal Lust, Crusader Lust, etc. He uses propaganda from Crusader Arrogance which includes false concepts of Equality to sway the downtrodden people. He also uses the propaganda of Criminal Arrogance which is Freedom from oppression. Equality and Freedom are both promised to the people in Revolution but neither is ever given and the people never recognize that these 2 concepts are in fact antithetical. Crusader arrogance functions through socialism which destroys the economic benefits of Freedom. The Economic Benefits of freedom always involve Free Enterprise and never government handouts. This system of government handouts is being used creatively today with government “stimulus” packages of money to offset the theoretical damage done by the pseudo emergency resulting from the CCP Wuhan Virus all while the American economy is teetering on the brink of total insolvency. When the government produces more jobs than industry then the people are completely enslaved. Today in early 2025 Mr. Trump is FIRING in mass people in useless government bureaucracies but the people do not recognize the critical importance of this and are fighting him in every conceivable way

even those in the judicial system allowing unwarranted and frivolous law suits to try to stop him. An arrogant nation is always vulnerable to revolution and national arrogance produces national instability and national irrationality. This is the mechanism for drawing the general public into the revolution by promising “CHANGE” unprotected by the Laws of Divine Establishment. Criminal Arrogance in the Hard Core Revolutionist functions through the principle of confiscation and violence destroying spiritual and establishment benefits. Human freedom is always vulnerable to deception whenever any aspect of Absolute Truth is rejected.

In the beginning of the 1900's Russia was a place of great freedom and it was one of the greatest free enterprise nations in the world. Under the Russian Empire of the Czars Russians were extremely prosperous. If they could have avoided the war with Japan they would have entered World War I as one of the most prosperous industrial nations of the world. In the instigation and initiation of the Russian revolution Trotsky, Korinski and their followers were the crusaders. These crusaders were used by the criminals Lenin and Stalin. In 1917 the Germans put Lenin on an armored train and moved him to Moscow to try to get themselves out of the eastern front of World War I and in so doing created one of the worst situations in history. Ironically, today the Russian president, Putin, has publicly told the American people that the path they are on is the same path that led Russia into its Bolshevik revolution and THAT WAS THE WRONG THING FOR RUSSIA.

Distortions of Leadership by Revolutionaries

Revolutionary Leadership practices demagoguery by gaining power and popularity through arousing the emotions, passions and prejudices of the people. They tell the people what they presume the people want to hear and give the crowd what they want to have. This is what occurred when:

- The Lord Jesus, The Christ was crucified
- King Louis XV was Killed
- Czar Romanoff was Killed

No one can gain the favor and acceptance of people and at the same time LEAD the people. Therefore those who are revolutionists never have leadership skills nor do they use them. The revolutionist cannot agree with the crowd and at the same time lead the crowd. Absalom did not lead the crowd but started violence in Jerusalem by his rape of the 10 women left by David to keep up the palace. One cannot rule the public and at the same time be ruled by public opinion since public opinion is a massive conglomeration of the function of brains with no discernment. When involved in political leadership one must be ruled by the principles found in the Bible Doctrine delineated Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. In church leadership the Pastor Teacher must be ruled by all aspects of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Integrity, Honor and Justice must rule the people not flattery, arrogance, and deception, therefore a leader in any area must have moral courage not immoral ambition to do what is right despite public opinion. Revolution in any nation is inevitable when the arrogance skills dominate the people and only the incorruptibles remain uninvolved. This is the status quo of the United States of America today in the 21st century. Therefore the hard fast principle is that Revolution can never advance beyond the arrogance of

the people so that in revolution:

- The crusader gains adherence through promising change
- The criminal gains adherence through promising equality
- Neither change nor equality brings happiness to the people

An arrogant person will only accept an arrogant leader therefore arrogance skills combine with defense mechanisms to provide strong delusion in the people and [Arrogance](#) inevitably destroys the ability to lead and also to follow legitimate authority. ([2Sam 15:6](#))

Change & Revolution

The desire for 'CHANGE' in any nation is the beginning of the downfall of that nation especially when it concerns the government. Malcontents in the people always make it easy to exploit the desire for change by the revolutionist. In all of history in every nation which has ever been extremely prosperous there is always small government and big people. This in the environment of Freedom, where some will succeed and be prosperous and some will fail to achieve great success and become malcontent. The revolutionist uses the high position of the prosperous to justify the malcontent, by saying, 'you have a problem because you don't have as much as these others'. Then national destruction begins with the concept of redistribution of wealth from the prosperous to the malcontent. The stability of the nation is only able to be preserved by the incorruptibles who doggedly adhere to the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions, and continue to accumulate Metabolized Bible Doctrine into their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as believers. When perceived abuses of the system are used to destroy the system, revolutionary change is inevitable. The principle and proper function is to remove the abusers not to change the system. Arrogance attracts arrogance and revolution is promoted by arrogance in its desire for change.

Conspiracy & Revolution

Conspiracy is always the beginning of revolution and Absalom began the revolution against his father King David by starting a Jerusalem conspiracy. Being a smart revolutionist Absalom concentrated his forces in and began the revolution in Hebron where David was crowned king. David had ruled Israel for 7 years from Hebron and Absalom was born in Hebron. The most critical reason for starting the revolution in Hebron was that it was close to the border with Egypt so if the revolution was unsuccessful his escape was easy. It took 4 years for Absalom to become successful in revolution. As the current revolution moves forward rapidly in the United States today it has become clear that the conspiracy has been ongoing for MANY decades even before World War II which in fact interrupted it and delayed it significantly.

Factors and Principles in Revolution & Civil War

No revolution succeeds without attacking the competence of rulers but there is always inconsistency in the revolutionary propaganda. Consider the incredible level of propaganda which has followed Mr. Trump from his initial election in 2016 all the way through the Biden administration to this very day in 2025. Propaganda must undermine authority yet the very authority it undermines is what gives it the right to undermine that authority. Freedom in any client nation comes from military victory but when lacking discernment one would assume that

the media is the source of freedom and is what maintains freedom however, in reality, the media like politicians have done nothing, ever, which is great in the history of any nation especially the United States of America. The media has power and influence in any nation ONLY because of Freedom and at this point in the history of the United States, it has absolutely no integrity or honor. The media is free but all freedom demands responsibility and the freedom of the media has been abused and distorted because there is no demonstration of morality nor any sense of responsibility in what is produced and disseminated in the media today. In the United States of America in this early 21st century the media has almost universally banded together to subvert the Constitutional Republic of this nation by the development and distribution of an unrelenting system of propaganda along with censorship of conservative and Christian ideals. It is by this means that the media is used to undermine a society and promote revolutionary ideas and disseminate revolutionary propaganda. Consider that under communism the media is totally under governmental control.

Arrogant people always ascribe their own failures to others and they malign the character of the honorable and undermine the authority of the responsible. Authority arrogance is incompetent but always alleges to do a better job than anyone who possesses authority. Revolution depends on the conspiracy set up by the hard core revolutionaries to gain the trust and support of the general public in order that they can become the weapon against the establishment group. This is possible by recruiting and involving a media system motivated by and promoting EVIL in the society. When there is the inevitable division of the general public some going with the revolutionaries and some going with the incorruptibles then this will be the cause of civil war. Most revolutions inevitably involve a civil war which becomes a struggle for power through violence and battlefield functions. This results when the revolution does not gain enough converts from the general public, the common people, then civil war is inevitable. When revolution starts a civil war there are 2 opposing forces seeking to gain control and power:

- Revolutionaries
- Establishment supporters

Revolution is also inevitable when no distinction is made between authoritarian government and totalitarian government which are clearly illustrated by the constant failures which have been apparent for decades in the functions of the State Department of the United States and its foreign policies.

2 Causes for Civil War

- Revolution where the issue is truth
- Revolution where the issue is politics concerning freedom

Revolution Where the Issue is Truth

In this case of Truth being the issue, there is pseudo truth from the conspiracy in the form of media promoted propaganda and absolute truth from the incorruptibles. It amounts to Propaganda vs Truth. The categories of Absolute Truth which include, the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and all other Bible Doctrine are generally rejected in the nation. The general public is protected from Evil propaganda by these

3 categories of truth:

- The Laws of Divine Establishment
 - For both believers and unbelievers
- The Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ
 - For unbelievers
- All Bible Doctrine
 - For believers.

When people reject the truth they then enter strong delusion and can only believe the Lie of Evil in the form of propaganda. This is how the general public moves into the area of the conspiracy and revolution.

Revolution Where the Issue is Politics

In the case of Politics being the issue such as in the 2nd American War for Independence, The American War Between the States, the issue was political revolving around freedom in the form of state's rights NOT freedom for slaves. Revolution occurs under this principle when the general public is divided on great issues of government such as occurred with the southern states of the United States of America where their stand was constitutional vs the northern states where their stand was emotional regarding the presumed and liberal propagandized evils of slavery. The true factor which was under contention was, does the federal government have the right to interfere with the Modus Operandi of the sovereign state or does the state have the right to determine its own policies. Southern states believed that the sovereign states had the right of self determination. Slavery would have been gone within 30 to 50 years in both the south and north as well. In the north the issue was the Self Righteous Arrogance of the government trying to impose the ideals held in the northern states regarding their concepts concerning slavery on the southern states which still in some areas held slaves. Therefore, the true issue in the American civil war was FREEDOM, NOT TRUTH. The southern states believed in and functioned under the Laws of Divine Establishment and there was great response to the gospel there, especially among slaves from Africa, and there were the greatest doctrinal believers living in the south. The north had some establishment but there was GREAT immigration from Europe including hundreds of thousands from Germany who did not understand and therefore rejected the Laws of Divine Establishment and not wanting to be drafted into the military in Germany they left. There was also great response to the gospel in the north but there was a great rejection of the absolute truth of orthodox doctrine and its principles. These things are clearly demonstrated by the historical accounts regarding Henry Ward Beecher, William Lloyd Garrison and Harriet Beecher Stowe. Truth was NOT the issue in the war between the states and the north said freedom meant that the federal government could and would force the south to do what they wanted. Therefore the United States Constitution was set aside at Appomattox and this nation thus entered into a new form of government which was now designed to confuse the people then, now and forever more. The truth of this unique situation has been consistently obscured by history professors and historical authors in our times.

Arrogance Attracts Arrogance in Conspiracy & Revolution

Negative Volition arrogance is a part of this picture of revolution. When arrogance has been

disciplined by authority it resents authority and becomes discontented with it. Often then another sees this discontent and in arrogance becomes a demagogue who seeks to make use of that discontent and stands by to sympathize with the disciplined ones and imply that injustice has been received from authority. Beware of this condescending personality because behind the facade of alleged interest in the troubles of others is the arrogance of conspiracy. Discontented people are maladjusted to authority and are thus vulnerable to exploitation by ruthless arrogance. Inordinate arrogant ambition exploits discontent and encourages disorientation to authority in the general public. Therefore, Arrogance is promoted in the environment of Arrogance and discontent. The absolute principle is that without national arrogance revolution is impossible and it inevitably withdraws into conspiracy. Conspiracy can only blossom into revolution where the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) collectively saturates a nation. National arrogance is national degeneration and this despises national authority and is the molding material for revolution. This is the ongoing revolutionary situation in the United States of America today which began with conspiracy and continues with outright revolution. The malfunction of the justice system in providing inequitable discipline for violations thus destroys freedom in the nation and the conspirator will therefore eventually destroy himself as a result of his complete saturation with Arrogance.

Conspiratorial criminals pretend to take an interest in people but the only real interest is in self advancement. The reality is that as one becomes interested in the people around him, he then becomes interested in history. However, the conspirator, being arrogant and preoccupied with himself, only gives the impression of having interest in others and in fact does not. The only interest the conspirator has in people is in the fact that they can be used to gain power and to promote himself. Conspiratorial Criminals have not learned the most basic principles of life:

- If God does not promote you, you are not promoted
- If God does not demote you, you are not and cannot be demoted
- Therefore, when God promotes a person there is nothing in the world that can demote him.

The attempt by individuals or groups to demote another in revolution is usually from arrogant jealousy. Again, consider the overt conspiratorial efforts of the democratic party in the United States against Mr. Trump for some 10 ongoing years. In trying to demote a person promoted by God the person involved in this will bring to himself incredible Divine Discipline. There is a huge difference between God's Divine Discipline for a person and His demoting them. When someone is down in life and under Divine Discipline believers must not ever interfere with them. The daunting principle to always be remembered is that for leaders, all who are invariably promoted by God, to whom much is given much is expected. Believers must never become involved with inordinate vindictive criticism of another person for any reason with or without facts. Life is too short to waste on trying to demote someone, even a little, and the believer must leave this to God. However, if God gives one authority and responsibility in any organization then he will inevitably have to make decisions for promotion and demotion. The real irony is that when one tries to demote someone whom God has promoted that person is not demoted but the one trying to demote is. People with grievances, complaints or personal needs are always complimented and flattered by the pseudo interest provided by conspirators and revolutionists, not ever realizing that they are being used and exploited for the unlawful

functions of conspiracy and revolution. Only the humble can avoid being exploited by the inordinately ambitious conspirators and humility comes with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine residing in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the knowledge and understanding of the Laws of Divine Establishment or Bible Doctrine in general. Humility and avoidance of the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) is the key to avoiding being exploited by others. Therefore, the malcontent people become a fertile field for the exploitation by conspirators into revolution.

For conspiracy to be parlayed into revolution the masses of the people must be taught to despise establishment authority. This is done through indoctrination and propaganda in the public school systems, liberal homes, liberal churches, liberal college classes and is easy where the pupils are arrogant. Especially today there is the use of the entertainment media which is very effective in promoting this process. This has been systematically occurring in the United States of America since the 1960s and is so advanced today that the children in the American schools learn little of true American history but learn that homosexuality is acceptable and boys who want to be girls are acceptable, that all people are equal and no one should be better than anyone else, as well as many other distortions of truth and reality. This is accomplished through a system of arrogance where it becomes easy to say the government is wrong and I am right especially for people who have no responsibility. It is the general public which must be wielded into a weapon for the revolution and this is done through propaganda and the exploitation of any adverse circumstances driving the people into the status quo of Malcontent. This state of discontent often turns responsible people with integrity into irresponsible people with Evil ambition.

This trend can be observed in all aspects of society and believers must constantly beware of the condescending personality because behind the facade of alleged interest in them as individuals is the arrogance of fomenting conspiracy. Remove the Laws of Divine Establishment authority no matter how bad it may be functioning, then revolutionary catastrophe is inevitable. Things which are considered bad and intolerable with national government will always be worse in revolution. In conspiracy and revolution, criminals very often pretend to be crusaders and thus becomes a facade for their own revolutionary conspiracy. In most cases the criminal uses the crusader to foment the revolution and it is very difficult to determine criminal from crusader when they are combined in one person. Such finesse requires maximum arrogance and it leads in this person to vulnerability to all categories of the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#). When a revolution seeks to remove a governmental leader and destroy a governmental system there always results something far worse than that bad leader or bad system, ANARCHY leading to TYRANNY. Therefore, it is a standing rule for the believer to not ever get involved in any organization who seeks to overthrow establishment authority.

Radical Liberal Government always cooperates in the matter of confusion regarding establishment principles by actually being wrong according to biblical standards and always promoting EVIL. Evil ALWAYS results in Sin, Crime or Human Good and by adding ambition to arrogance the results is intensified Evil by the emergence of revolutionary leadership. The end result of revolution is that the criminal gains power and the people who are the dupes are

inevitably literally and physically destroyed. The people are always promised through propaganda that they will gain from the revolution but they always lose. In the atmosphere of revolution there is only advancement of Evil and temporary, semi-permanent, profit, ONLY to the hard core conspirators. Therefore Revolution is the Oligarchy of EVIL where the people, forged into the weapon of revolution, are invariably destroyed through arrogant manipulation by the hard core revolutionary conspirators.

Understanding the Revolutionary

The question here is how to deal with rebellion or revolution and mob action? The principle is that there is no value in trying to contend with disaffected and discontented people but it is far better to leave it all in the hands of the Lord when the believer finds himself facing a revolution or rebellion. In rebellion and revolution the leader has inordinate ambition, power and approbation lust and this drives him to try to take over everything. They are very often jealous of those in control and hate them. When a person becomes saturated with Mental Attitude Arrogance and these Mental Attitude Sins and involved in Emotional Revolt of the Soul he becomes mentally sick. This, inevitably, results in a complete inconsistency of his thinking so that when he maligns or criticizes others from jealousy he always will contradict himself and will lack any basis for clear thinking and have no Divine Viewpoint in his Right Lobe. This is a mental illness and in doing such maligning they inevitably will destroy themselves. This is a sick mind which is always based on Mental Attitude Arrogance especially jealousy, envy and dissatisfaction.

The believer cannot lower himself to justifying self when the people who are around him begin to criticize him because the only person he has to explain himself to is The Lord Jesus, The Christ. When the believer needs to explain sin it is to be done through the use of [1John 1:9](#) and then he is to forget about it altogether. If the believer is being criticized for doing something which is NOT wrong then he should simply carry on doing what he is doing and never try to run around and defend himself. One cannot ever defend or justify self to those who are jealous of or hate or despise him and nothing he says can or will ever be good enough to satisfy them. One might very well become very angry but by putting the whole thing in the hands of the Lord this anger is not sinful anger, it is righteous indignation which is carried to the correct place.

Solution for Revolution

How a person handles his failures often determines how he will handle crises, catastrophes and disasters. Failure is one of the greatest tests of life. Believers often think only of suffering and discomfort as what is involved in being testing but the greatest tests in the life are failures. As believers face failures and move into humility as a result of the application of Bible Doctrine under the Faith Rest Drill ^(5 Stages) and the use of the Rebound Procedure, they must think and in thinking must recover and not EVER give up. Believers must never get so discouraged that they attempt suicide because this is rejection of the entire principle of the Plan of God. It is the believer in time of failure, when everyone criticizes him, who can exhibit courage, who will have courage in national disaster and crisis. When Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul meets failure concerning circumstances of life this believer has passed

a test in preparation for disaster. Believers must also know when to stand fast and watch the deliverance of the Lord and when to retreat to fight another day for the Lord and above all must have flexibility. It is extremely difficult to run away when the strongest desire is to stay and fight but to fight properly sometimes one must run and do it immediately. The rallying cry of guerrilla warfare should be “He who fights and runs away lives to fight another day”. To retreat one day may mean to win a decisive battle the next day. It takes moral courage to retreat along with wisdom and authority exercised properly without panic so that the resistance to a revolution can be organized around the best leadership.

Individuals who focus on the Laws of Divine Establishment principles in their client nation must have a rallying point and organized oriented leadership to put down the revolution and conspiracy which desire to overthrow the client nation to God. Leadership must be of a quality such that after a decision is made for action it must be executed rapidly. A decision, even a good one, is no better than its rapidity of execution. Decisions can be right but when executions are slow they can become wrong so that if execution is not rapid enough and timing is bad then the decision is wrong. During a revolution there will always be something, some event or situation, which will sound the bell to start a reign of terror. Revolution cannot ever succeed without violence and intimidation, one only has to observe the “peaceful” demonstrations of Black Lives Matters and Antifa in the early part of the 21st century in the United States of America to understand that violence is essential in a revolution. The only way for revolutionaries to stabilize a revolution is to slaughter the innocent and engage in rape, violence, torture, stealing, killing, etc. There is nothing more involved with Evil than being willing to join the revolution for any cause because revolution is always motivated by and brought on by functioning under Evil and is always anti-God. To stabilize and restore the client nation under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, establishment forces **MUST COMPLETELY ELIMINATE ALL REVOLUTIONARIES**. In any revolution the people who engage in and contribute to the reign of terror are saturated with arrogance and are in total abject degeneracy and absolute apostate reversionism. Any counsel for leadership which urges sin and crime is completely saturated with and motivated by Evil. This is what follows in the natural course of revolution which involves anti-establishment behavior which condones and encourages the revolutionists to any form of violence, terror, abuse or crime compatible with their unrestrained lusts. The reign of terror is used for intimidation of the masses of people and their ultimate control and also to eliminate the crusaders who were instrumental in getting the revolution to move forward. In every case where the revolution goes, intimidation follows or precedes it. In addition in every revolution in history the reign of terror includes many levels of personal revenge. Whenever and wherever there is a coup DE tat those coming into power always have in their midst those who seek revenge against those who they are displacing for some perceived or real mistreatment. Whenever a person seeks revenge against anyone he lowers himself to a level lower than the people he seeks vengeance on. One cannot extract revenge without destroying self and he may get satisfaction but inevitably will destroy self in the process. This is a principle which is completely foreign to revolutionaries who always wish revenge and they fail to see that seeking revenge will bring their own self destruction and the fall of their revolution.

The eager aggressor in revolution or war must be deprived of all hope of success and must be shown that his chances of winning anything worthwhile are far less than even slight but this can only be done by reducing his options for domination without war. This is what is, in part, accomplished by excellent military buildup and constant military preparation during peace times. In the defeat of revolutionaries the acknowledged leader of any revolution MUST justly, after proper judicial process, be executed for his part in the revolution and for crimes prior to the revolution and after. To spare any such revolutionary leader, and to make it a general order or policy for the military, condones revolution and therefore condones Evil. When great establishment leaders are thinking they know that the Laws of Divine Establishment rationale absolutely prohibits any condoning of revolution. If for some reason suddenly the soul is flooded with negative emotion and is controlled by it, it is inevitable that a command which is Evil as well as arrogant may be issued. It is amazing how quickly one can go from great thinking to emotional arrogance. Believers must attempt to be better than this because they MUST realize that to follow the example of any person is wrong and that they MUST, as positive, mature believers, only follow the examples of Bible Doctrine and nothing else. For unbelievers their focus must constantly be on the principles of truth from the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions.

Resolution of Rebellion or Revolution

The question is what will it take to clean up rebellion and revolution? The leaders will be judged by God and even multitudes of those who follow the leaders as well. When people are in rebellion against God's Order, against Bible Doctrine, against the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, it takes SERIOUS Divine Discipline to correct the situation. This may be administered from within the nation or by another nation, generally functioning under Evil, invading from outside. The revolutionary leaders must be dealt with first and then the those who are stubborn and will not respond to the observation of the destruction of the leaders and will not respond to the Laws of Divine Establishment or Bible Doctrine must also be removed. In [Num 16:16-35](#) there is a clear demonstration of the strength of stubbornness of the person who decides to totally reject and ignore Bible Doctrine including the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. This believer can go a long way in Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and in fact take himself right out of this life, and mean while he makes himself completely miserable. This is the same thing today and if a believer is jealous or hates or is involved in self pity or is frustrated or implacable or hypersensitive and continues in these Mental Attitude Sins, then he is in the same category as the Jews who were rebelling against Moses in the exodus generation. The believer cannot have Mental Attitude Sins in the mind and keep any Divine Viewpoint from Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment there as well. They are antithetical and one always drives out the other. It is imperative for the believer to maintain Divine Viewpoint in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for without it there can be NO BASIS for reaching the point of Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. It is having Advanced Personal Love for God as Occupation with Christ, which is Divine Viewpoint in the Right Lobe of the mature believer who has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe and avoids Mental Attitude Sins of any kind, which will carry him in the crises of history.

Isolation of the Leaders:

In the exodus generation the Lord told Moses and Aaron to separate themselves from this entire congregation and offered to destroy the ENTIRE exodus generation of Jews AGAIN. Everyone who participated in the revolution against Moses. Moses however, once again, made intercession for the people and asks the Lord if for one man's sin would He destroy all the people. The Lord then gives Moses the means of resolving rebellion and revolution and mob actions. Moses is told to Isolate the Leaders in order that they will be made an example of. In addition, stubborn followers who do not respond to the removal of the leaders will also have to be destroyed. The principle is that the leaders of rebellion or revolution, their immediate followers or subordinates, and those who are staunch unrelenting rebels must all be killed to stop rebellion and revolution. ([1John 5:16](#))

This moral courage and strength of character is always what is essential when anyone is facing a rebellion of any kind and the Leader must be found first and then isolated and taken to task for his actions. This is basic to the training in the military regarding how to handle a mob where one must isolate the leader and make an example of him. The instructions for military action against a mob say that if a mob is going to destroy life or property then the leader must be destroyed as an example of what awaits the mob. Confronting the leader with his potential death will often stop the whole situation and if not then execution of his death may do it and if this does not work then review Napoleon's approach to ending the french revolution. Therefore the first step is to ISOLATE THE LEADERS who stir up the mob and propagandize and brainwash with Human Viewpoint principles. ([Num 16:16-35](#))

People in general and Believers especially must understand that it does not pay to rebel against God's Order either in the Spiritual Life or in secular life. For this reason, homosexuals, transgenders, malingers, revolutionists against the Laws of Divine Establishment principles and those judging Pastor Teachers BEWARE. God's Order is in place today in many areas and some people simply do not like it. In the Local Church the Pastor Teacher is the final authority, in the government of the United States, A LEGITIMATELY ELECTED INDIVIDUAL IS PRESIDENT OR SERVES IN CONGRESS OR THE JUDICIAL SYSTEM and is in authority. However, this requires legitimate elections otherwise these people can and must be considered insurgents and revolutionists. Regardless of the kind of person one in authority is, having great authority infers that he was appointed by the Lord, therefore, his appointment was the sovereign decision of the Lord. The principle is no one can oppose God's Order in any way and the problem in any of the areas of authority structure is that there is very often a conflict or rejection of personality and people generally cannot divorce personality from the function a person in authority is supposed to be carrying out. When this is confused people only think the sweet, mild, self effacing types are the best people. Many people leave one job for another because they cannot stand the personality of the one over them. However, when one works for someone else, the boss' personality is inconsequential and the employee simply must do the job he is assigned as well as he possibly can. ([Col 3](#), [Eph 5-6](#)) This also occurs when a person in great authority like a leader in a nation, a president, has a personality which grates on the nerves of the citizens, who then begin to criticize him because of his personality while they IGNORE the fact that he has done the best job for the nation despite all the criticism and

pressure put on him. This was the 4 years from 2016 of the administration of Mr. Donald Trump as president of the United States. The people in the United States have been brainwashed to think in terms of pleasing personalities being what is desirable and required in life. This is the problem where people cannot distinguish between personality and authority and its effective function in life. (See: [The Reluctant Sparrow](#)) People must learn to distinguish between Personality vs Character or Integrity and Responsibility and when a person can make these distinctions he has discernment and in the secular human realm he is mature in his temporal life and in the Spiritual Life he is on his way to Spiritual Maturity.

When people become involved in Mental Attitude Sins especially Jealousy they cannot think straight. Believers must understand that one cannot stop people thinking no matter how hard one tries. In the case of the exodus generation of Jews and their rebellion against Moses, even after witnessing the violence of the destruction of the leaders of the rebellion, they being swallowed into the earth and burned alive by fire, over 14,000 people, all that night, thought hate, bitterness, jealousy, hostility, implacability and by morning they were expressing their thoughts verbally. Here again is the problem of personality where these people, in this mob, were guilty of criticizing, gossip, maligning and even accused Moses of Murder and then they gathered again against Moses and Aaron to kill them. Although the revolt leadership was stopped it was not completely over until ALL the people who were against Moses were killed in a plague. ([Num 16:41-50](#)) Now although the revolt has been ended the issue of Authority must be firmly established. When a revolution or revolt is put down it must be made clear to the people remaining that under the legitimate Laws of Divine Establishment oriented system of authority, violations of the structure of authority will not be tolerated at all. As with the revolution against Moses in [Num 16-17](#) the only effective means of completely settling the question of authority is for the proper, honorable and effective judicial administration of the laws of the nation to give a clear understanding that violations of the underlying system of authority in the nation by rebellion or revolution will result in the IMMEDIATE DEATH of ALL of those involved with NO EXCEPTIONS. Putting people in fear of their own deaths because of stepping outside the structure of the law, which is oriented to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, is the only way to stop and prevent revolution. It takes FEAR and recognition of one's own mortality to bring a person back in line to recognize authority. It requires fear of death because of human egotistical arrogance and the quickest way to break down egotistical arrogance is with FEAR. The principle is that those in authority who do their job right and for the benefit of the organization they serve *will not be loved* and the best thing which can happen to anyone in authority is to be RESPECTED but NOT LOVED. ([Num 17:1-13](#))

Therefore, honor and integrity demand the death of all revolutionary leaders and there cannot ever be restored order in any client nation until they are all dead. As long as a revolutionary leader lives there will be conspiracy and revolution brewing among the arrogant and malcontent. Without the execution of revolutionary leaders there will be no freedom, no evangelism, no Bible Doctrine teaching and no missionary effort from the client nation and thus no fulfillment of the Plan of God through Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, the principle that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History will not come into effect to benefit the client nation but only Divine Discipline will be

provided for that nation. No client nation can function as a client nation to God while revolution exists in the land. No client nation can serve God while revolution exists in the nation. Arrogance is stronger than good and even perfect environment. Revolution is the quintessence of human arrogance motivated by Evil and that arrogance is the rejection of the good environment of establishment government. Good environment is preserved by God through the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and not revolutionaries nor revolution.

The authority of the establishment government is the enforced discipline which leads to the enforced humility needed for a proper function of the client nation to God. The believer must function under the establishment authority willingly so that even though taxes are unfair, in paying them he remains under enforced humility but when he looks for ways of cheating the government out of money then he is in arrogance. The best believers can hope for is that their taxes go to the military and support freedom through military victory. One of the greatest evils ever is thinking a person should be killed because of his Evil nature because Assassination is more Evil than anything the bad government official could ever do. However, these individuals should and in fact must be executed after just trial and conviction. However, these bad, revolutionary, subversive government officials can be made the targets of assassination when a believer is involved in an ORGANIZATION which is focused on and attempting to overcome the revolution and restore the establishment functions of the client nation government under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions BUT at no other time. The key to the function of believers in clandestine and guerrilla warfare is that they MUST be involved in an ORGANIZATION which is focused on restoring the establishment framework of the nation and eliminating the threats to freedom.

Revolutionary Guerrilla War & Strategy

The True reason the United States Lost in Vietnam was that the communists had a superior grand strategy. This is analogous to the superior grand strategy of the Protocol Plan of God in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. This Grand Strategy is being employed today by the Chinese Communists and is the employment of all facets of national power to achieve a political objective. In Vietnam the communists had one national objective from the beginning to the end of the war, the INDEPENDENCE and UNIFICATION of Vietnam and all of french Indochina. Today the Chinese Communists have one objective, World Domination under Chinese rulership. This strategic national objective was achieved in Vietnam by the conception, development and implementation of a coherent long term and brilliant grand strategy of Revolutionary War.

NO one strategy is innately better than another and under conditions of limited war the strategy of attrition of the enemy may be the best strategy, however Revolutionary War Strategy is generally Superior. In all cases the superior strategy is one which is best fitted for the conditions under which the War is waged. The superior strategy takes advantage of the enemies vulnerabilities and one's own strengths while neutralizing the enemies strengths and one's own vulnerabilities. This is the most effective strategy of Guerrilla Warfare in insurgency

or counter insurgency functions. The North Vietnamese had an axiom they functioned under:

- When tactics are wrong and strategy is wrong the War will be Quickly Lost
- When tactics are right and strategy is wrong Battles may be won but the War will be Lost
- When tactics are wrong and strategy is right Battles may be lost but the War will be Won
- When tactics are right and strategy is right the War will be Won Quickly

In Vietnam the United States fit into the 2nd category with Right Tactics and Wrong Strategy. North Vietnam fit into the 3rd category with Wrong tactics but Right Strategy. Their superior Grand Strategy of Revolutionary War was the KEY ingredient to the communist victory in Vietnam:

- It is waged to gain political control within a state
 - It can be aided both openly and covertly by an outside power, the Chinese in Vietnam, but in its essence it is Political Warfare.
 - This was the factor which welded together all the outside support from China and Russia, using Cambodia and Thailand as sanctuaries and other factors to forge what led to the victory.
- It is total war mobilizing and using ALL the people to support its cause and integrates and uses EVERY ASPECT OF NATIONAL POWER.
 - Military
 - Political
 - Diplomatic
 - Economic
 - Demographic
 - Psychological
- It is waged with total UNITY of Effort featuring close coordination and tight control of the employment of all facets of power by a small group of leaders who by experience are not only military theorists but also political scientists, psychologists and diplomats.
- It stresses ambiguity where deceitful words and concepts are used to confuse an enemy and alter his perceptions of reality and lead him into false counter measures.
- It is a protracted war and time is the Ally of the revolutionary since time is required to build his military base and political power.
 - This involves a Protracted War, Insurgent or Counter Insurgent Guerrilla War, which erodes an opponents will to persist by presenting a grim picture of an endless war one without measurable goals and with no prospect of success.
- It is a changing war by its nature:
 - It starts as an almost purely political war with a small guerrilla type military.
 - As the military force grows it assumes a more key role but the political side is still dominant.
 - Eventually the Guerrilla Military force grows into a combination of a conventional army and a large guerrilla force with an equality of effort between the political and military thrust.
 - In its final stages it becomes almost purely a conventional military effort with only minimal regard for the political aspect.

To develop a strategy SUPERIOR to the Revolutionary War Strategy America needed to find some way to take advantage of its own strengths while negating those of the communists and taking advantage of their vulnerabilities while negating its weaknesses. The CLEAR principle weakness of the United States was WEAKNESS in its democratically oriented society. If it had functioned like the republic it was designed to be America would have rapidly executed traitors when they came to the front in the civilian protests against the war. There existed and still does in the United States the incapacity to sustain LONG unfocused, inconclusive and bloody war far from home for unidentified or ill defined national objectives. The people in the United States are absolutely fearful that War may bring some disturbance to their soft lifestyle even when fought in far off lands. A Superior Strategy of the United States over the enemy would have been to use its principle advantage of its incredible military superiority and to AVOID a protracted war by STRIKING North Vietnam as soon as possible with enough military force to bring the War to a quick and satisfactory conclusion. This could have involved the use of nuclear weapons but could have been accomplished by the use of whatever military force was needed to bring the war to a quick satisfactory end. This would have achieved military victory and simultaneously been more humane by significantly reducing war casualties on both sides. Sun Tzu said some 2000 years ago, “What is of supreme importance in War is to Attack the Enemies STRATEGY” and the United States did not and constantly does not do this.

The Greatest Disadvantage that the United States had regarding Vietnam was at home, where the people of America were propagandized constantly by the news media which aided the cause of the communists and resulted in a total fragmentation of the people. American leadership poorly and vaguely grasped the principles of Revolutionary Guerrilla War and in reality never understood its nuances. Revolutionary Guerrilla War must be understood in terms of the Strategy of a PEOPLE’S WAR and the American Public needed to be BEHIND such a war which has NOT been the case in the United States in Korea, Vietnam and the Middle East. Fighting against a Guerrilla War must not be viewed as a predominantly military struggle. Under the American Bureaucratic functions the Vietnam war was conducted under the overview or control of the Executive Office of the government and the State Department and a group chaired by the State Department when it should have been controlled by the Defense Department and Military Leadership IN VIETNAM. When fighting a Revolutionary Guerrilla War it is imperative that the primacy of the political side of the War is understood and that Revolutionary War IS a TOTAL war. Its aim is VICTORY AT ALL COSTS not some vague middle ground and it is waged by all the people and agencies under the control of the revolutionaries and the people are relentlessly indoctrinated, tightly organized and grossly exploited, to support the war effort.

Fighting against a Revolutionary Guerrilla war cannot bring victory when there is a faltering and confused resolve without any clear defining of victory and pursuit of it with resolution. This type of war cannot be viewed as having only limited objectives requiring less than total dedication to settle the war in favorable terms. This was the position of the United States of America in Vietnam. One of the most depressing things about American administrations, even to this very day, is that they do not perceive that when engaged in WAR the only acceptable resolution is UNCONDITIONAL SURRENDER by the enemy and this can only be accomplished

by reducing their capacity to wage war to NIL. A HOT war cannot be fought with COLD blood and when involved in War there must be a total commitment of political, military and social power. Above all else, ALL warfare must be waged with a unified people.

Propaganda & Revolutionary War

Propaganda is an extremely effective weapon of war and the use of ambiguity in Revolutionary War with twisted words and disinformation to confuse the enemy and cause him to misdirect his response is extremely valuable. In countering this propaganda ALL ambiguity must be swept away. Sanctuary nations must be identified and eliminated to defeat Guerrillas as this is a KEY to effective Revolutionary Guerrilla Warfare. People elected in government during WAR must reorient their priorities to that which is best for the Nation not what can enlarge one's own position. Protracted War fought by western nations RARELY succeeds in accomplishing anything except defeat and fighting a LIMITED war, as the United States has consistently done since World War II, is of no value at all.

Principles of Conventional vs Clandestine War

As a result of national degeneracy in the general population and the degrading of the code of honor and system of advancement in the military services along with the total lack of understanding of what is needed to function in intelligence, counter intelligence and counter insurgency services the United States will never be able to gather information and neutralize the intelligence organizations of its enemies. The United States has been fighting an unseen war since 1945 when the CIA was formed along with the British MI5 and MI6 in order to counter the Russian KGB. Today these enemies have expanded to the Chinese Intelligence services focused on cyber warfare and the moslems focused on terrorism. In England those who were to lead and function in MI5 and MI6 were recruited from aristocrats and these men understood honor and integrity having been raised under its influence. They understood that honor and integrity could be maintained while doing dirty things in war. Even in 1980 the United States intelligence services relied too much on computers and technology and this situation is much worse at this time in the early 21st century because there is too great a dependence on science and technology and not enough on human beings.

The idea of killing and intimidating, using terror, lying and deceiving which are considered sin, immoral, and evil in normal times is repugnant to the American. However, these are not sin, immoral nor evil in time of war, fighting against revolution, invasion or in civil war. Yet, these functions are unconscionable to Americans and this is most likely the result of the influence of distorted liberal theology. However, people must be made to understand that it is just as honorable to fight behind the lines in the dirty area of clandestine or counter insurgent or guerrilla warfare as it is to be on the front lines of conventional war. It takes far more to successfully and honorably fight the clandestine war because the person as a clandestine warrior must have unimpeachable *integrity, honor, flexibility and objectivity* since there is NOT available to the clandestine warrior the whole realm of personnel and structure used to support conventional war. These principles of War are lacking today in the hierarchy of American

government, which has, in fact, positioned itself AGAINST the citizens of this nation. KGB agents get the equivalent of the Medal of Honor for proper clandestine functions against all Russian enemies. The typical KGB agent is described as being a man of pure honesty, enormous personal courage, implacable in the struggle against his enemies, stern in the name of duty, ready to sacrifice himself in the fight against his enemy. In Russia, China and other nations today when a person dirties his hands in intelligence, counter intelligence, sabotage, etc., he is honored by the nation he serves. An excellent manuscript on this topic is found in “The Wilderness of Mirrors” by David C. Martin. (4) The greatest hurdle that must be overcome today is that the people in the United States of America cannot distinguish between Norms and Standards, Scale of Values, and Personal Codes of function for normal times and the differences in ones for times of conventional and clandestine warfare. People must begin to realize that in the functions of the intelligence community, lying and deception are HONORABLE patriotic functions. In Conventional Warfare, combat and physical violence and KILLING the enemy is sanctioned and HONORABLE to provide and protect the freedom of one’s nation. In functions of Espionage license must therefore be granted for moral violence. Intelligence organization operatives must not fear public examination but neither can they expect public honor. The CIA in order to help the United States of America survive in the intelligence war must become more ruthless than the KGB but only in operations NOT on American soil. If the United States of America is to survive the coming tyranny in this nation there must be developed something along the lines of an intelligence organization which will go all out to prevent destruction of our CONSTITUTIONAL law system. The long standing concepts of “fair play” held in the United States of America must be abandoned for the necessary clandestine warfare functions to preserve the integrity and freedom of this client nation. While it is generally accepted that assassination and the privacy violations of eavesdropping should be summarily banned in this nation it has been being sanctioned by some past governmental administrations at various levels and to various degrees but NOT for the protection or preservation of the nation, only for self protection and self preservation of certain past administrators. In the functions of legitimate Espionage, this secret war must remain devious and underhanded and as deceptive as possible with NO HOLDS BARRED but only in the fight for the freedom and establishment functions of the Constitutional Republic of the United States of America. In the case of clandestine, counter insurgent and guerrilla war functions, loyalty DEMANDS dishonesty and deception and must be a thieves game. In any war effort there must be a good intelligence organization and excellent foreign insurgency and domestic counter insurgency functions in order to ensure victory. The military must never fail to recognize that their purpose is above all to maintain the freedom and security of the people of this nation. Counter Insurgency is the essential function to destroy the actions of the brains of the enemy when that enemy is bent on the destruction of freedom within one’s nation, which is CLEARLY what has been occurring in this early 21st century from the highest levels of government structure down.

Conventional Just Warfare

In [Rev 19:21](#), The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the example of engaging in a Just War of which

there have been many in American history. World War I and World War II both were Just Wars. Vietnam was a Just War, which should have been used to destroy communism, though the United States should not have interfered with the Divine Discipline of that region of the world which functioned under demonism. Iraq and Afghanistan are both Just Wars. At the end of the Church Age the Armageddon war will be a Just War. Unfortunately the United States of America does not know how to determine when War is JUST as a result of conflict between nations and then when America enters a Just War does not know how to prosecute it properly. Whenever a nation such as the United States of America, a republic on paper at least, has a middle class which does not voluntarily enter professionally into its own defense it cannot ever survive. The universal DRAFT brings the middle class into the defense of the nation, strengthens the nation and builds the character and integrity of the people with a clear understanding of the necessity for the Laws of Divine Establishment functions in their nation. The young men of the upper class people should, based on their integrity and character and a recognition of the SOURCE of their prosperity being freedom, choose voluntarily to serve in the military to protect and defend their nation as well.

Logistics and Intelligence

An army cannot win wars without effective logistics because it must be able to resupply personnel and equipment quickly. Therefore, NO Military is better than its logistics. The larger the army the greater the logistical problems and also the problems of effective command and organization along with proper development of strategy and tactics. In war one can only find the enemy if one never loses track of him in the first place. An army should always have reconnaissance patrols out watching where the enemy is going and how he is moving and intelligence services using espionage techniques to penetrate the enemy hierarchy and learn about the enemies plans. In any battle, the one who chooses the battlefield is usually the one who wins. Therefore, every army MUST have clandestine military intelligence operatives and at the same time reconnaissance units so that both conventional and clandestine warfare systems MUST work together. Command must always know where the enemy is and what they are doing else the enemy can keep one's army marching and moving until its incompetence destroys itself. When any military group starts to throw away equipment then is the time to attack. The United States Military under incompetent civilian leadership THREW AWAY billions of dollars worth of modern military equipment in Vietnam and again in Afghanistan and it would not be at all surprising if the Afghan military used this to bring the attack to this continent.

Realities of Combat

Combat reality is that the larger the force the greater the confusion during an attack especially a night attack. Night attacks require years of training for officers and incredible training over long periods of time for an army. In combat, victory in thinking always precedes victory in battle. Someone must think and someone must respond and they must have the necessary capabilities for effective response. Knowledge is the environment for effective response to thinking and humility is the servant of that knowledge. Unquestionably, Arrogant leaders can only fall back on emotion and cowardice is emotion and although they can think and visualize victory over their enemies they can never carry it out, lacking humility personally and lacking

personnel having the abilities needed to respond. One can only have thoughts which he personally understands and when a leader does not have the technical knowledge nor the ability to think and function under pressure he can be easily defeated. No high ranking officer in the military can be a manager or systems analyst and ever win a war because he cannot think in terms of Strategy or Tactics appropriate to bring against his enemies. Great military officers need great leadership ability which has only existed in a very few in the United States Military even back in World War II. The United States Military has lost the concept of what is needed for proper military leadership as a result of constant civilian interference. Great military commanders must have massive common sense and reasoning power with imagination but with the ability to be a magician leaving the enemy puzzled and beaten. I here give reference to the principles of Sun Tzu. (9, 10) The objective of the military is to find ways to obtain victory without wholesale slaughter of the fighting men. Sun Tzu is studied by all communist regimes and his principles used extensively by their military leaders. “The Art of War” (9, 10) is said to be governed by 5 constant factors to be taken into account in one’s deliberations when seeking to determine the conditions present in the field for battle.

5 Factors of Combat Engagement

- Moral Law – Causes people to be in complete accord with their leader, so that they will follow the leader without regard for their lives undismayed by any danger
- Heaven – Environmental factors of Night, Day, Cold, Heat, Time and Seasons all which are Factors for military decisions
- Earth – Consideration of distances great and small, dangers and security on open ground and narrow passages, including the risks of life or death
- Commander – His standing for the virtues of wisdom, benevolence, courage and mostly strictness
- Method and Discipline – The marshaling of the army in its subdivisions, grading of rank in officers, the maintenance of roads for logistics, control of military expenditures

7 Factors Determining Victory or Defeat

When seeking to determine effective military decisions they are to be made by comparing these 7 factors which will help forecast both victory and defeat.

- Which of the 2 Nations leaders is imbued with the moral law
- Which of the 2 commanding generals have the greater ability
- With whom lies the advantages derived from heaven and earth, environment & terrain
- With which side is discipline most rigorously enforced
- Which army is the stronger not the larger
- Which officers and men are most highly trained
- In which army is there the greatest consistency of both reward and punishment without which an army cannot be consistent
 - The army which is out of control and allowed by their leaders to pillage and rape and destroy things is an army defeated.

Principles of Function for Victory in Battle:

- **ALL WARFARE IS BASED ON DECEPTION**, therefore clandestine war must always accompany conventional war
- When able to attack seem unable
- When using forces appear inactive
- When near make the enemy think you are far away
- When far away make the enemy think you are near
- Hold out bait to entice the enemy to the attack
- Feign disorder and then in orderly fashion crush the enemy
- If he is secure at all points be prepared for him
- If he is superior in strength evade him
- If the enemy has an unstable temper seek to irritate him
- Pretend weakness so he may grow arrogant, **because the arrogant always lose**
- If he is taking his ease give him no rest
- If his forces are united separate them
- Attack him where he is unprepared
- Appear where not expected

“Victory in thinking precedes victory in battle” and thinking is the greatest virtue and is least understood or appreciated by most military men. The road to freedom is always constructed by military victory and once the road is constructed and freedom obtained then the road to freedom must be **MAINTAINED** by the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions both internally with effective honorable Jurisprudence and Law Enforcement and externally by strong Military organizations.

The Rule of War

The Rule for effective prosecution of war is, if one's forces are:

- 10 to 1 Surround the enemy
- 5 to 1 Attack the enemy
- 2 to 1 Divide the army into 2
- 1 to 1 Offer the enemy battle
- If slightly inferior in number Avoid the Enemy
- If totally unequal in every way flee from the enemy.

An obstinate fight may be made by a small force but in the end it must be captured or destroyed by the larger force.

5 Essentials for Victory

- He will win who knows when to fight and when not to fight
- He must know how to handle both superior and inferior forces
- His army must be animated with high morale and the same spirit throughout all the ranks
- He must prepare himself and wait to take the unprepared enemy
- He must have military capacity and **NOT BE INTERFERED WITH BY HIS GOVERNMENT**

Principles of Engagement of the Enemy

- In any conflict or combat situation numerical weakness results from having to rush to prepare for possible attacks while strength comes from compelling the adversary to make these hurried preparations instead
- Military tactics like water run away from high places therefore combat units should not try to engage battle where there are surrounding hills or mountains
- In all combat in war the way to avoid that which is strong is to strike hard at that which is weak
- Like water which shapes his course according to the ground over which it flows, the soldier works out his victory according to the foe which he is facing
- Like water which retains no constant shape so **IN WAR THERE ARE NO CONSTANTS IN CONTRADICTIONS OR APPLICATIONS AND FLEXIBILITY IS THE KEY.**
- Maneuvering with an army is advantageous but with an undisciplined multitude is most dangerous
- Leadership quality is an essential key because an army of deer led by a lion is to be feared more than an army of lions led by a deer
- A soldier's spirit is sharpest in the morning if he has had sufficient rest and by noon it has begun to ebb so that in the evening his mind is bent only on returning to camp therefore, a smart general avoids an army when its spirit is keen and attacks it when its spirit is sluggish and inclined to return to camp

Every great commander must study the moods of his opponents and must know moods as well as strategy in order to obtain victory.

5 Dangerous Faults of a Commander

- Recklessness which inevitably leads to destruction and defeat
- Cowardice which leads to capture
- Short or volatile temper which can be provoked by insult
- A Delicate sense of honor which is sensitive to shame
- Being over solicitous for his men exposing him to worry and trouble

6 Calamities caused by the Commanding General

- Flight – If one force is 10x greater than another the smaller will flee
- Insubordination – Results when soldiers are too strong and officers too weak
- Collapse – Results when officers are too strong and soldiers too weak
- Ruin – Occurs when the higher ranking officers are angry and insubordinate and upon meeting the enemy give battle on their own account from a feeling of resentment before the commander can gain a good position to fight
- Disorganization – Occurs when there is inability to think and lack of knowledge of warfare
- Rout – Occurs when the General, unable to estimate an enemy's strength, allows an inferior force to go against a larger superior one or hurls a weak detachment against a more powerful one without placing picked soldiers in the front rank

Principles of Conventional War

- Conventional war demands a strict code of morality toward a civilian population in a war zone, this is a part of discipline just as fire control against the enemy is. Strict morality toward a civilian population cannot ever be set aside and immoral or criminal acts by soldiers cannot ever be overlooked by a commander.
- Strategically and Tactically there is no substitute for interior lines during combat. This allows a unit of any size operating on interior lines to switch direction for counter attack no matter which direction the enemy comes from. This forces the enemy to take the initiative and extend his supply lines and therefore to make mistakes.
- When the enemy must pursue with a large army and thereby extend his supply lines this creates logistical insufficiencies which are less able to be easily solved and potentially causes many mistakes. This, in addition to sloppy, poorly disciplined army personnel, will aid victory for the defending establishment forces in counter insurgency efforts.
- Arrogance in leadership is always characterized by indecisiveness and instability and instability always produces indecisiveness.
- Before any effective effort can be mounted against an enemy unit there must be separation of civilians from the fighting force for effective maneuverability before battle. To the extent that civilians are intermixed with military personnel, to that extent there is inefficiency at the time of combat engagement. To the extent that the fighting force becomes entangled with civilians to that extent it cannot function properly even if it is very well trained.
- There must be an established Base of Operations to give soldiers a place to concentrate in preparation for mobilization, reorganization and for concentration of force.
- There must be an effective table of organization and order of battle and the rules of engagement must be clear and concise and always LIMITED only to killing the enemy in the most efficient and effective way and defeating him in battle at any cost.
- Proper motivation can defeat superior ability in battle every time so that in the case of Talent + Arrogance there is always destruction of whatever talent exists. However, Thoughtfulness + Humility always offsets any handicap a person may have in lack of talent or ability. Humility is always an essential part of honorable service and any function in any aspect of life especially the military, especially during combat engagement.

Offensive Action

In War, force is best represented by offensive action and thus all good armies are trained to attack and destroy. Offensive action allows freedom of action, concentration of effort, adaptability to circumstances and provides great mental challenges in military maneuvering. It takes more brains, nerve, thinking and courage to attack than it ever does to defend. The greatest leaders in all military history are those who developed effective offensive actions. The most aggressive men in World War II were MacArthur, Patton and Geuderian who is considered the father of the Panzer Group. There is no substitute for victory in warfare and the offensive is the only way to achieve victory and therefore the only way to conduct a war AND the only way to live your life. There must be offensive mindedness in every area of life, business, military, education, coaching, and this reflects the best Mental Attitude. You must always play

or fight to win and there must be proper use of all things which are at your disposal to ensure you win.

When employed the offensive removes limitations to maneuver and provides a large variety of options for maneuvering. When on the defensive units are limited in what they can do as far as maneuvering. The offensive provides flexibility in the use of forces and establishes motivation and raises morale in the troops. When attack is initiated maneuvering is totally up to the aggressive leader. The offensive mindset also provides flexibility in one's life, especially the believer, where the developing of his capacities for life, flexibility and aggressiveness come from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It also establishes motivation and the aggressive leader always has to justify and motivate HIMSELF before he gives orders to attack and he has to be properly motivated and examine and understand his motives for the attack. When armies stop maneuvering offensively they start losing battles and as a result morale is destroyed and surrender is inevitable. The greatest illustration is the army which surrendered at Dien Bien Phu even though it was greatly superior to the communist Vietnamese army. This French foreign legion group was the greatest army ever. Many of the men who were captured there, were at the time of this lesson many years later, training Chinese communist armies and living in China. This also may be seen in the mechanism used by the United States military in fighting in Vietnam where defensive bases were established in the remote country and then attempts made to hold these bases which resulted in the ultimate LOSS of that war as a direct result.

Principle of The Objective

- Neutralization or destruction of the enemy force
 - The mission must be compatible with the objective of DESTROYING the enemies forces and restoration of order and law under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and all legitimate client nation functions
- Offensive action is the only Modus Operandi by which any objective can be accomplished
 - Offensive action brings victory while defense can only avoid defeat
 - Offensive not only defeats and destroys an enemy force but at the same time increases the efficiency of the offensive forces
 - It is better to strike while the enemy is in a column preparing to move into line formations
 - The offensive should be used when and where there is any reasonable chance of achieving success
- Three benefits to taking the offensive during combat
 - Raises the morale of the men
 - Gives freedom of action
 - Provides concentration of effort so that combat power can be concentrated at the point of maximum effectiveness
- Defensive should be used only to assist offensive action elsewhere, to gain time, enable better use of good terrain or to compensate for weakness
- Holding actions should be used to lure the enemy into a situation for single or double envelopment engagements

- Economy of force is essential and is the means by which combat force can be deployed so that combat elements can be maneuvered to contact the enemy at the point of greatest advantage and thereby secure decisive results
- Use of security must be effective to screen the troop movements and deployments from observation by the enemy

As a result of function under these principles a larger force may be defeated by a much smaller one. These principles are true in every aspect of life especially the Spiritual Life where learning Bible Doctrine raises the believers morale, gives greater options for decisions in life and freedom of action and concentrates his efforts giving greater capacities for life, love and happiness.

Conventional Warfare Functions

- When choosing a secure area to develop a battlefield or sanctuary choose an elevated area (not a mountainous one) where the enemy can be seen coming allowing one to clearly evaluate the developing situation. Mountainous areas prevent the effective maintenance of logistical support and in essence easily traps the resident unit.
- The army with the best discipline generally wins because discipline produces humility whereas poor discipline always results in promotion of arrogance and arrogance on the battlefield usually results in defeat.
- Avoid Hostile citizenry because it is extremely difficult for any fighting unit to move through an area with hostile citizenry because this makes logistical support very difficult.
- Arrogant men always believe there is safety in numbers which is a totally false premise because Safety is found ONLY in the Wall of Fire provided by God even without significant numbers and the completely overriding principle is, “If God for us, (AND HE IS) Who against us”?

In rugged country with forest and mountains the army with the best discipline will often prevail over the larger force if the large force loses communication coordination or is not able to effectively maneuver. In this type of fighting the individual quality of the men is what counts in the battle. Always try to select the battlefield and meet the enemy on one's offensive terms based on the ability of one's own men, not theirs. The army with strong discipline has enforced humility and enforced or genuine humility wins every time. Mountainous terrain only gives advantage to those who inhabit it first forcing advancement only along specific areas of movement into the mountains. However, it also provides obstacles, often insurmountable, for effective logistical support.

There is uncertainty in an army which is a new organization and which has not fought together ever before because the officers do not know the men nor vice versa thus there will be concern among all when having to retreat. When an organization is broken up and the men find themselves with unaccustomed leadership they naturally have suspicion. This provides a great potential for arrogance. Men in ranks must never try to superimpose their judgment over that of their officers. The officers in a new organization must develop a system of discipline and do it rapidly so that there will be enforced humility for the work ahead in battle. The lives of the men in ranks depend on enforced humility and their being able to do their job under the

abnormal circumstances of combat even when having new leadership. In a patchwork army, where officers are assigned to units never commanded before, the ranks won't have any confidence in the officers, having never trained together, and there will be suspicion and uncertainty. This was the United States army in Vietnam because of the erroneous and disastrous system of constantly cycling officers in and out of that war to give them "combat" experience for future advancement. Suspicion always produces the possibility of arrogance. This situation in Vietnam resulted in the abhorrent practice of the "fragging" of disliked or unpopular officers by enlisted men. When people become suspicious of those in authority over them the next step is to find themselves locked into the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#). The army must not ever focus thinking on retreating and how it will be accomplished while they have not yet even advanced. This is a mistaken concept but understandable when the men are unfamiliar with the officers and vice versa, having never worked together before, and they have no stable relationship or interaction. However, the men can be very wrong about their officers if the officers have joined to serve because of their application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to the situation. If the men and the officers have rejected the concepts of revolution and the bureaucracy found in the military which is involved in it and they have great honor and integrity from Metabolized Bible Doctrine they will prove great in leadership and subordination functions under these new conditions and become the backbone for a larger military organization which will excel. So that even when the men do not know their officers well and the officers don't know the men well but the officers know their Bible Doctrine and apply it under pressure there will be success for that unit. Any officer corps which is developed must be exceptional in their thinking, honor and integrity and this is based always on Metabolized Bible Doctrine for the believer and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions inculcated for the unbeliever.

One cannot think about self when in a group which is under pressure lest he cease to be a professional individual. This applies to any group function in life including Military, Social, Business, Professional, and for any organization. This inevitably places the individual into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and causes arrogance to destroy any talent of both the individual and the team. All thinking must be focused regarding the overall team's function and the part each individual has trained to perform in that team. Knowledge is the environment for thinking and courage, which is thinking under pressure, is the environment for correct decisions on the battlefield. Courage is the ability to apply knowledge under any pressure of disaster but it requires knowledge first and in war it is knowledge of military science and Bible Doctrine which gives those in command correct thinking.

Conventional War Stumbling Blocks

The 2 greatest problems any army will have to overcome is the development of enforced humility and establishing effective logistic support. What officers lack in combat experience can be made up by possessing honor, integrity, humility, objectivity, flexibility and leadership qualities which will produce the highest quality officer. Combat experience is meaningless in the area of military leadership because it is not experience which counts in leadership but honor, integrity, humility, objectivity, and flexibility. Experience is sought after in every area of life but it does not mean a thing if it is not good, valuable, profitable experience. An

effective officer corps must be built on all of these qualities not combat experience. The thing which will destroy the officers and the military of any nation is lack of effective thought in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, lack of integrity and honor and thus lack of courage. The greatest officers in World War II had absolutely no combat experience but had the greatest honor and integrity therefore, it is not experience which counts in any area of life but it is what goes on in the mind of the individual. Those who have what it takes in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with just a little experience on the job, any job, will produce greatness. When officers join a military organization as a result of arrogance they will fail and this will be seen in the corpses of their men on the battlefield. Being involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance automatically cancels any potential one may have for leadership and greatness. Even having had an extreme level of experience, complete failure can still occur since experience is no substitute for HONOR and INTEGRITY.

The function of men in the ranks in the military is NOT to think but to obey under combat pressures. If the officers are lost then, when there is time for thinking, the men must switch to another scale of values and fall under a new chain of command leadership. Army functions take team work and someone must do the fighting and someone must do the thinking. In the ranks of the military the men are there to obey and do but an officer must think and be able to think under extremes of pressure. When there is no self nor group discipline the inevitable result is that a lot of men die. There must be self discipline for there to be any capacity for life, love or happiness and it has to be self imposed. Therefore, victory is impossible without good tactical disposition, excellent planning, proper use of personnel and proper use of terrain with *effective self and group discipline*. When retreat is necessary, to retreat in panic spreads panic and many will die when they collectively cannot think under pressure. In panic men do not properly negotiate rugged terrain and often do not even avoid dangerous wildlife. Therefore, many die in this situation because of emotional arrogance and inability to think. The command brains of an army plans the battle then does nothing during the battle. If something goes wrong then the commander is consulted but he does not run around engaging in combat functions. Therefore, the brains of the army must be isolated in a safe area in order for thinking to be accomplished so that winning can occur. Planning should always include setting aside reserve forces, which are essential in any military campaign, to be used to exploit a breakthrough or to plug a gap and also to form a security function for an army facing unknown situations. It is essential for all command members to remember that night operations take incredible organization to accomplish successfully. This type of operation requires great efficiency and order and great humility often in the form of the enforced humility of strict discipline. The success of night operations requires humility both genuine and enforced and when it is successful it demonstrates a great command structure, discipline and establishment orientation.

Unit Cohesion & Function

Ultimately, without regard to the size of a group or unit in any military organization there are things which make it impossible for men to fight as a cohesive unit in warfare and these include:

- Acceptance of homosexuality

- Females in combat units

Homosexuals are simply generally not good troops because they have voluntarily turned their souls to function as females and with this being permitted in the military the reality is that any nation which allows it will destroy the effectiveness of its military in war because of the degeneracy involved in homosexuality. Women in war should be assigned to support functions NEVER combat. Women, family, property and country is what men fight for in war and when there are women in combat they will draw the attention of men from the fight ESPECIALLY if they are injured. When others in a unit are injured the females cannot effectively physically assist in moving an injured man when it is necessary therefore should not be permitted to engage in functions in combat units ever. One of the most important functions regarding women in combat is that the woman who are designed as responders by God, generally, cannot KILL professionally and in order to be an effective killer of the enemy she has to reach a high level of emotional activity first and this is NOT professional killing.

Clandestine Warfare Operations

David Martin in 1980 in “Wilderness of Mirrors” (4) describes it by writing that: “Clandestine war is to varying degrees espionage. Espionage is the business of stealing the enemy’s secrets and is dwarfed by covert actions which are the business of manipulating foreign governments through a host of paramilitary, political and propaganda schemes”. He points out that “the amount of misinformation that has appeared in print (all media today) and then been elevated to history through constant repetition is appalling”. Consider the misinformation surrounding every aspect of the creation, dissemination, virulence and lethality of the CCP Wuhan Virus of 2019. Espionage, pure and elemental, involves constant combat as ruthless and unforgiving as any of the brush fire wars of the period of the cold war between Russia and the United States. It involves a daily battle of deception, fought with a maze of agents, spies, counter spies, intelligence and counter intelligence.

Those warriors who serve best in this fight function best when unknown by the general public and as an undercover agent he MUST be an extremely honorable person. For the undercover clandestine warrior bible doctrine must be at the top of both of his scales of value, either from just the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions or the all encompassing Bible Doctrine of scripture or BOTH. This warrior will be able to function properly in clandestine efforts ONLY because he functions under a system of humility, is honorable and a mature believer. The clandestine warrior can never be successful in this type of function if he looks for reward or approbation from the nation he serves. The standard of function for conventional war must clearly define sin, but for secret war, sin is not sin and it is very often traitorous to even tell the truth and is very patriotic to lie, and one does not confess this lie as sin. Winston Churchill in WWII was in, all of history, the man best qualified to function in clandestine warfare leadership. There were 5 arenas of Churchill’s secret activity in World War II:

- Offensive Intelligence Gathering to find the enemies secrets
- Counter Intelligence and Intelligence Security

- SOE, Special Operations or Violence, the OSS in the United States
- Political Warfare Executive, the OWI in the United States
- London Control System establishing counter intelligence functions

These all provided deception and rumors in an attempt to drive a wedge between the people and their leaders and create an intense war weariness by every means possible. The counter intelligence systems were designed to make the enemy think their opponents were going to do somethings they were not. Those in charge of most of these types of intelligence warfare were the most flexible people and where famous British aristocratic individuals. They had a Bronze Plaque which said:

“We are bred up to feel it a disgrace to ever succeed by falsehood, we will keep hammering along with the conviction that honesty is the best policy and that truth always wins in the long run. These pretty little sentiments do well in a child’s copy book but the man who acts on them had better sheath his sword forever.”

Their belief was, as it should be, that when one is involved in clandestine warfare it is not wrong nor a sin to lie, cheat, steal, sabotage, deceive, kill, etc., to preserve one’s nation and freedom. Churchill said:

In wartime truth is so precious that she should always be attended by a body guard of lies. In the high ranges of secret service work the actual facts in many cases were in every respect equal to the most fantastic inventions of romance and melodrama, tangle with entangle, plot and counter plot, ruse and treachery, cross and double cross, true agent, false agent, double agent, gold and steel, the bond, the dagger, the firing squad and were interwoven in many a texture so intricate as to be incredible, but true. The chief and high officers of the secret service reveled in these subterranean labyrinths and pursued their tasks with cold and silent passion.

Therefore the greatest function in warfare is to be able to deceive the enemy through intelligence and counter intelligence functions. ([9](#), [10](#))

Clandestine Operations

In both cases or types of Warfare the operations and functions of covert clandestine war are essential. Clandestine War, which is in effect the functions involved in Espionage, provides information regarding enemy disposition, serves to induce distraction of the enemy from its plans and engages in whatever is needed to disrupt or destroy the plans and hierarchy who institute those plans. The ultimate objective of the clandestine war for the client nation to God is to disrupt the enemy and in so doing protect and preserve or in some cases reestablish in the nation the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and Bible Doctrine as the underlying operational mechanism of the client nation. The extreme danger in engaging in clandestine and guerrilla warfare is for one to become the enemy, to do things needed to win above all else and forget the principles which must be protected or restored which are the basis for engaging in this type of war in the first place. Clandestine war requires BELIEVERS who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and understand the necessity for the preservation of their client nation’s functions at ALL COSTS. As a result of most believers lacking the Doctrinal [Problem Solving Devices](#) and essentially having Little or NO Metabolized

Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is therefore great Self Induced Misery for the individual and the nation collectively when it fails to engage in or appreciate effective clandestine war. This combines with warning, intensive and ultimately dying Divine Discipline for the individual and for the nation is involvement in 4 cycles of gradually increasing Divine Discipline leading to the 5th cycle as destruction of the nation itself. The only recourse for these believers is to function under the [Rebound Procedure](#) for recovery and engage in consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit by means of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception, Operation Z](#). Only in this way can any believer move ahead in the Spiritual Life and approach and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he will be effective in the protection of his nation.

Intelligence Operations

All communication with field operatives must be kept clearly informed up to the hour at a minimum if possible. Flexibility of planning and in execution is essential for any intelligence operation. The field commander MUST BE the only one in command and never rely on others who are a great distance away to make decisions for him. Civilian leadership MUST stay out of decision making in the field of conventional war, clandestine war, intelligence and counter intelligence functions. There must always be a primary plan and several backup plans for any field operation because all field operations must be considered LIFE and DEATH situations. The United States of America is not now and never has been totally equipped for unconventional warfare, counter intelligence nor clandestine warfare and the leaders in both the government and military do not understand that terrorism, insurgency and guerrilla warfare cannot be fought with clean hands.

Scale of Values

National disaster usually comes suddenly. Every mature believer has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and also the humility, flexibility and objectivity to face disaster thus giving them an unbeatable combination for adversity. Therefore the mature believer, who has been materially prospered by God, must be prepared to set aside instantly his day to day scale of values, which gives great regard to and provides great capacity for enjoyment of the material prosperity given from God. This believer has the capacity for enjoying his blessings without losing sight of the source. However, there may come a time to say goodbye to riches and go to rags and enjoy the rags just as much. Mature believers must be prepared to immediately adopt a different type of a scale of values for historical adversity and disaster. Material things which had been enjoyed in time of prosperity very often must be physically abandoned as one flees from disaster and they must be immediately forgotten. One cannot concentrate on the dangers in historical disaster and crisis if he continues to whine and complain about what has been lost. If one finds he is with a group of people who constantly whine about what has been lost he needs to quickly move out of this situation. He must focus on finding those who are oriented to the situation as it is, in order to survive the adversity. The flexibility which comes from bible doctrine produced humility along with objectivity demands that the lifetime of accumulated possessions and belongings may have to be abandoned to looting and ultimate destruction. The mature believer is the one that recognizes

clearly that he has not lost the source of these blessings only the possessions. Therefore, in every aspect of life, every believer must have 2 scales of value, 1 for prosperity and 1 for adversity and the only way that these can effectively work is with Bible Doctrine at the top of both and humility as the Modus Operandi. In addition the believer must be able to recognize when adversity arrives and switch over to the proper scale of values to weather the storm of disaster as found in revolution, civil war or foreign invasion and function effectively in clandestine counter insurgent guerrilla war when possible. This requires the application of the Essence of God, Plan of God and Logistical Grace [Doctrinal Rationales](#) when it becomes necessary to abandon all personal possessions. One cannot shift to a Scale of Values for adversity without maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and its proper and immediate application to the situation. The mature believer understands that changing circumstances in life do not change blessings from the Justice of God and his blessings are always compatible with the historical situation. When the scale of values for the believer changes, prior places of security may become places of danger and must therefore be avoided.

The basic keys to success in these types of conflicts are flexibility, deviousness and all the elements of *inspired insanity*. It is totally acceptable and when successful totally honorable to ask the intelligence agent or clandestine warrior to lie, cheat, steal, and commit all types of actions considered immoral, criminal and sinful in normal times. This requires the understanding by that warrior of the necessity for 2 scales of value when involved in any type of war especially clandestine war. Field Operatives in intelligence, counter intelligence, guerrilla and clandestine war must use fabrication and deception to deceive the enemy at high levels of their operation in order to destroy them and their organizations. All revolutions in all of Human History are and always have been based on false propaganda, fabrication and lies delivered to the people in general, who are already under strong delusion from involvement in Arrogance, in order to make those people believe those Lies. However, since the revolutionists themselves believe the Lie under strong delusion *GOD will judge and destroy them under the same principle of strong delusion and LIES*. Therefore, not every Liar is a criminal but every criminal is a Liar, and criminals Lie for self preservation and to build self up and to manipulate others. The counter insurgent must be able to plant a better Lie on the liars of the revolution and then use this to destroy them. The principle is that a Lie in the mouth of an honorable man will destroy the dishonorable liars. In addition, revolutionists or any others for that matter, who live by the Lie will die by the Lie from an honorable opponent. There is a parallel here, in conventional war and criminality those who live by violence will and MUST be destroyed by greater violence. Aggressors in War are international criminals and criminals who live by violence MUST be destroyed by greater violence, “he who lives by the sword will die by the sword”. Insurgency and revolution reject truth and accept the Lies of anti-establishment propaganda and therefore will and MUST be defeated by their own weapon, Lying and Deceit. Revolutionists are Arrogant and are therefore vulnerable to be defeated in any system which uses greater arrogance so that they will inevitably be ruined by their own arrogance, inflexibility and subjectivity. The principle truth is that there is strength in humility and weakness in arrogance. Arrogance creates its own system of self destruction so that those involved in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) inevitably destroy themselves. Therefore in

reality and invariably those outside sources and people who are against the arrogant are in fact not the downfall of the arrogant. Those who are arrogant destroy themselves and no one outside of themselves is ever the cause of their downfall.

Upon receiving permission from the King, his father David, Absalom in a deceitful maneuver went to Hebron to initiate a revolution against his father. He sent men throughout the tribes of Israel to proclaim him king in Hebron when a special trumpet was sounded. Many men followed him because of his captivating personality knowing nothing of his plans for revolution, they were DUPES in his conspiracy. As the revolution gained momentum and Absalom gained in public acceptance David was warned of his imminent take over of Jerusalem and the government of Israel by an intelligence report from his spies and commanded all his people to leave the city. ([2Sam 15:13-14](#)) Absalom in his take over of Jerusalem sent for Ahithophel who was David's former Secretary of State and Ahithophel advised Absalom in the prosecution of his revolution and actually had already created plans for the success of the revolution. ([2 Sam 15:12](#)) As the people and David fled from Jerusalem and were climbing the Mount of Olives he sent back to Jerusalem Hushai as a mole to neutralize the advice of Ahithophel, which he did in the form of convincing Absalom not to follow Ahithophel's advice to pursue David immediately. ([2Sam 15:32-37](#)) After this Ahithophel went home and committed suicide immediately. ([2Sam 17:23](#)) He destroyed himself by his own dishonorable deception and arrogant conspiracy.

The best agents for high level deception are “long-distance” agents who have been carefully built up and have served a long apprenticeship before any major deception is attempted through them. However, during the apprenticeship these double agents are NOT an asset but a liability because the build up process requires that he be given a great deal of true information to establish him as believable. The challenge in developing such a ‘double’ agent is to strike a balance so that the truth he provides to the enemy does not outweigh the value of the information he gets from them. However, this is not the only means of judging an agents “bonafides” and he should not be accepted by the accuracy of his information alone. The more valuable the agent's service the more reason there is to FEAR deception by him. The principle involved in clandestine espionage operations is that the GREATER the truth which is received the bigger the LIE may be. (See the Movie and Historical documentation of “Operation Mincemeat”.)

Consequently and inevitably the honorable counter insurgent will defeat the arrogant revolutionist as a result of shifting to a new alternate scale of values and functioning effectively and honorably under these. This scale of values and system of integrity walks the narrow line of victory and freedom through intelligence gathering Modus Operandi using the function of what ordinarily would be deceit, criminality and traitorous functions. Arrogance gives those peoples subject to revolution, insurgency and terrorism tunnel vision with regard to the proper and effective functions needed in counter insurgency and counter intelligence and counter terrorism. The system of execution of criminals in the United States, which actually does not effectively exist any longer, demonstrates this clearly. Capital Criminals and Traitorous individuals should be publicly executed by hanging or drawing and quartering and their family

and neighbors made to walk between the parts as they rot in the sun. Therefore, clearly, tunnel vision with regard to effective punishment and therefore control of criminality has caused a tremendous rise in crime in this nation generally caused by the stupidity and arrogance of political administrators. That same tunnel vision when viewing the dirty work of counter insurgency and counter intelligence has and may ultimately result in the total defeat of the United States at the hands of terrorists and revolutionary insurgents which are in fact in operation today in this nation. The people of the United States are generally arrogant, thus vulnerable and weak.

The Russians and Chinese have never invaded the United States because the KGB or GRU and Chinese intelligence services have successfully infiltrated every aspect of American society and see no reason to function on the battlefield when they can take over this nation through various intelligence operations. Several principles are involved with regard to the status of client nation United States of America.

- God uses the wrath of man to praise him. ([PS 76:10](#))
- God uses insurgency to punish client nations and He uses it and counter insurgency to destroy evil nations as well, illustrated by the principle of [James 4:6](#), and [1Pet 5:5](#).
- Counter Insurgency when used to defend and protect the client nation is clearly war against the arrogant.

Revolution and Insurgency against a client nation is constructed on arrogance and falsehood and it is destroyed through humility and truth. In every case the enemies best weapon must be turned against him by defeating him at his most vulnerable point of weakness. Arrogance destroys its own arrogance; Lies destroy lies and thus intelligence war and counter insurgency are major contributors to winning on the battlefield in any conventional or civil war.

Counter insurgency cannot occur as a function by itself but must have support and all aspects of clandestine warfare depend on all other aspects of clandestine warfare. For effective counter insurgency and guerrilla warfare there must be intelligence agents, double agents, counter insurgency agents, anti terrorist agents, counter terrorism agents, etc., and they must all work together. The principle is that those who live by the Lie die by the Lie because in arrogance man creates his own system of self destruction based on the LIE. The revolution and civil war which is ongoing in the United States of America today will ultimately destroy both the leaders and the followers of these actions who all function within the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#).

The Honorable Spy and Counter Insurgent

A believable Lie which is to be told by a very honorable man is a very difficult thing for him to accomplish in that he MUST make it believable. However, when an honorable person does a difficult thing which is not wrong but appears so, he does a better job at it than a dishonorable person. Therefore, NO ONE can lie better than an honorable person in the functions of counter intelligence or counter insurgency. A habitual liar is a terrible liar and his lying is his normal way of living but for an honorable man, lying is not normal for him. In order for him to make his Lie believable, the honorable man must have an alternate scale of values which comes into play in this abnormal situation. He will Lie and deceive not as sinful functions but as a great patriot and great man, and always under approval and blessing from

God. He will be fulfilling the principle that the Arrogant are Weak and whatever the natural strength of the arrogant one may be, arrogance itself is weakness and will always be destroyed by humility and honor in his opponent who uses his own methods to destroy him. The Mole is a secret agent of one country whose objective is to infiltrate the highest echelon of another country in order to gain secret information and plant false information so as to neutralize the genius in the command or administration of the country they infiltrate, using deception, intimidation, blackmail, violence, etc. He is very often a dissatisfied citizen of the country whose system he is infiltrating. Colleges (Cambridge as an example) were and are great places for recruitment of spies from American citizens for enemy countries because of the arrogant nature of the students attending there and the propaganda which has been being presented there from communist infiltration since the early 1900s.

Arrogant people tend toward pettiness and when a man becomes arrogant and remains that way for very long he takes on the feminine quality of vulnerability to flattery and approbation. When an arrogant person interrogates someone he is not flexible but is vulnerable to flattery and to his own failure of pettiness in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Pettiness is always looking for some means of reducing another to a state of crawling to give the petty one desired recognition in order to stimulate his arrogance. Arrogance produces incompetence even where there is ability for competence. Prejudice guarantees incompetence and this is the thinking of arrogance. If you are arrogant you are inflexible and the deviousness of arrogance always ends in failure. In order to be devious one must be flexible and this flexibility maintains honor and integrity while doing the dirty work of counter insurgency, counter intelligence or guerrilla warfare. When those on the top echelons in intelligence organizations become arrogant they neutralize their own ability and that of the agents below them as well.

Terrorism & the United States of America

The United States of America has not learned that terrorism and evil cannot be fought without clandestine warfare. As long as the people and administrators in the United States of America remain in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) they will never know this truth. Political arrogance in the United States of America is combined with the Arrogance of Ignorance to guarantee the devastation by the coming disaster in this nation.

Clandestine Counter Insurgency.

Conventional war grants license for physical violence while espionage or clandestine war grants license for moral violence. The paradox at first viewing is that God is behind all that must be done in counter insurgency when the clandestine counter insurgent ORGANIZATION involved in conventional or guerrilla efforts is functioning to preserve or restore the Laws of Divine Establishment functions in the client nation to God. ([2Sam 17:14](#)) The principle of the validity of clandestine counter insurgency is that in revolution, revolutionists believe the LIE of Satan and function under strong delusion and therefore GOD will judge and destroy them by their own weapon, the LIE. Long before Sun Tzu, Machiavelli, Clausewitz, MI5, MI6, OSS, CIA, NSA, etc., King David, in the time period around 1000 BC, was a genius in the unconventional functions of espionage, intelligence, counter intelligence and counter insurgency, all very nasty businesses, even in ancient war. Espionage, intelligence and counter insurgency includes all

possible forms of deceit and underhanded methods used in an effort to gather accurate information of enemy plans and forces, by any means, foul or fair, and for frustrating any genius he might possess. Counter intelligence as a part of clandestine operations is the most dangerous thing in intelligence warfare requiring the risk of life on a moment by moment basis. This requires and demands great humility, objectivity, flexibility, honor and integrity. The irony is that the use of fabrication and deception is the complete antithesis of personal honor and integrity. Therefore, God will certainly destroy the revolutionaries with a Lie from the mouth of the honorable man in counter intelligence functions. The revolutionist loves the Lie and functions and lives by the Lie, thus, it is fitting and I think reflects the Divine Sense of Humor, that they should die by the honorable clandestine warrior's Lie. It is fitting and inevitable in revolution that those who live by the Lie, die by the Lie; just as in conventional warfare, those who function under the principle of physical violence take the chance of dying by that same violence. Scripture tells us that in criminality those who live by violence will and should die by violence. Therefore, it is logical and to be expected that if a dishonorable person lives and functions by lying, God will destroy him by the same system. The LIE is a system of arrogance from Satan involving his policy of Evil and God will always punish arrogance, therefore, those who live by the Lie are arrogant and will be made miserable by the Lie itself and, in fact, must also be punished by the Lie. Therefore the principle is that those who live by the Lie are completely vulnerable to those who possess a greater skill in lying. Revolution, as an entity, has rejected the TRUTH of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and accepted the LIES of the Cosmic Dynaspheres and the plan and policy of Evil from Satan and, therefore, must and will be defeated by their own weapon, LIES and DECEIT. The revolutionary, in his subjectivity and inflexibility, will be sabotaged by the honorable man with objectivity, integrity and flexibility who is functioning in counter intelligence or counter insurgency.

Therefore, the humble will completely defeat the arrogant because Arrogance inevitably creates its own system of self destruction. This is the means by which God uses clandestine counter insurgency even guerrilla warfare and is the great victory of counter insurgency. It is the clandestine counter insurgency function, as part of war, which neutralizes the genius of the enemy. These principles are clearly stated by:

- The Field Manual of 1869; by Field marshal Sir Daniel Woosley. "The principle of telling the truth in war is non patriotic and a betrayal of one's country and traitorous."
- Winston Churchill, "In wartime truth is so precious that she should always be attended by a body guard of lies".

Therefore success in conventional warfare very often depends on the lies, deceit, deception and strategic employment of intelligence forces as part of clandestine operations. The Self Righteous Arrogance of the American people has destroyed any possible success against communism or islam in clandestine warfare and refuses to recognize the necessity for having a dual standard of function which is required in clandestine war. In the Protocol Plan of God, humility should have no qualms about the use of lies and deceit to defeat revolution. The clandestine and counter insurgent warrior must be motivated by freedom for his country. He is to perform his duties of intelligence agent and counter insurgency agent under the principle of courageous honor.

- Cicero said, “Perish the power which has been obtained by evil means, retained by similar practices and which is administered as badly as it was acquired.”

This is a description of the overall function of every level of government in the United States of America in this 21st century with only a very small exception. Therefore, the humble defeats the arrogant through shifting to a scale of values and system of integrity which walks a narrow line of victory and freedom through intelligence Modus Operandi and uses what would in normal circumstances be considered criminality and traitorous functions.

Valid, effective counter insurgency was in existence more than 500 years before Sun Tzu and is how God uses the wrath of man to praise Him. ([Ps 76:10](#)) Again, “God makes war against the arrogant but give grace to the humble” ([James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#)) and counter insurgency is war against the arrogant. Therefore, revolution being constructed on arrogance and false hood is destroyed through humility and truth using THE SAME WEAPONS AND SYSTEMS that revolution functions with. Humility and truth have flexibility and objectively which is to be used to take the strength of revolution and turn it into weakness by exploiting the arrogance of the revolutionist. When the believer is fighting under the Plan of God for the client nation to God, God very often turns the best weapons of the enemy against him by defeating him at his most vulnerable weakness, therefore, it is by this means that the arrogance system inevitably destroys arrogance and Lies of the honorable one destroys the Lies of the revolution.

The whole system and the standards of communism and islam are based in Evil as the plan and policy of Satan. In the United States of America there is a strong standard of Arrogant Self Righteousness and Evil as the source of much human arrogance which inevitably always defeats itself. When doctrine, honor and integrity are introduced to give proper motivation for the lying, deceit and intimidation used in clandestine warfare, this is when the enemy is defeated by using his own weapons against him. There are no accidents in the life of the believer because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History at EVERY level. If one lives in the Interlocking System of Arrogance he creates his own punishment but also his own destruction. Revolution is constructed based on national arrogance and strong delusion and revolution and civil war will destroy all revolutionaries who inevitably are involved in Interlocking System of Arrogance functions. Therefore, all of those who believe the lying propaganda of the revolution live by the Lie and strong delusion and will die by the Lie in strong delusion. The reality of arrogance is that the Arrogant must always FEAR the humble for God will use the humble to destroy the arrogant.

Propaganda as a Weapon in Warfare

Peace propaganda is a great weapon of war and the false prophets of ancient Israel are today the liberal pastors and clergy in the national counsel of churches and denominational and heathen religions present in the United States. Even a liberal clergyman who has any common sense would realize that there are monsters in communism and islam who want ONLY to destroy the United States totally. Communist influenced liberals cry peace today while the communists prepare for war against the very liberals crying for peace. When any national

government or people listen and follow any liberal principles, especially liberal theologians, they are BLINDED to the Gospel ([2Cor 4:4](#)) and to the dangers of War. Today and in fact since the 1960s the United States is saturated with peace mongers and cowards in government and education and as clergy in the various religions and local churches and this is liberalism which inevitably results in total non-preparedness for the nation as a whole to be able to defend its freedoms. By this means the people are blinded by peace propaganda and they do not see what is actually occurring in the world and it therefore is the blind and stupid leading the Blind and Stupid. Historically, there always comes a time when these liberals come to the realization of their failure and then will be ashamed because Peace Propaganda is a weapon of war in the hands of the enemy. In the United States of America since the end of World War II the greatest weapon against America has been the communist influenced liberal pastors and college professors promoting peace and disarmament in this nation and issuing world peace pronouncements and the total distortion of the true nature of islam as “the religion of peace”.

The prophets or ministers of the Old Testament Scripture had caused the people to wander BECAUSE they proclaimed nothing but peace propaganda, peace at all costs, the enemy is a brother and does not want to fight or harm us, and this has permeated the United States of America even after the devastation of World War II. Since the 1930s the Communists have prepared war against the United States of America and especially since Franklin Roosevelt let them into Germany. This has successfully occurred even internally in the United States of America because the country has been taken over by religion and religious propaganda and has encouraged Mediocrity in government so that the stupidest men who have ever lived (Biden, Pelosi and Fetterman as examples) have been controlling the government and do nothing to fix these problems. The reality is that EVERY person advocating PEACE and Disarmament in the United States of America is a TRAITOR and a weapon of the enemy against the United States. ([Micah 3:5-7](#))

Guerrilla Warfare Operations

The major shortcoming of modern military functions is that the army which is not prepared to confront an adversary employing arms and methods the army itself ignores has, therefore, no chance of winning. Modern military machines remind one of a pile driver attempting to crush a fly, indefatigably persisting in repeating its efforts to no avail. The inability of the army to adapt itself to changed circumstances has heavy consequences. It gives credence to the belief that one's adversaries, who represent only weak, disorganized forces, are invincible and that, sooner or later, the army and the nation shall have to accept their conditions for peace. Since the end of World War II, a new form of warfare has been born. Called at times either **subversive** warfare, **revolutionary** warfare, or ‘Modern Warfare’ ([26](#)) it differs fundamentally from the wars of the past in that victory is not expected from the clash of two armies on a field of battle. This confrontation, which in times past saw the annihilation of an enemy army in one or more battles, no longer occurs. Warfare is now an interlocking system of actions, political, economic, psychological, military, that aims at the overthrow of the established authority in a country and its replacement by another regime. To achieve this end, the

aggressor tries to exploit the internal tensions of the country attacked, ideological, social, religious, economic, any conflict liable to have a profound influence on the population to be conquered. Moreover, in view of the present day interdependence of nations, any residual grievance within a population, no matter how localized and lacking in scope, will surely be brought by determined adversaries into the framework of the great world conflict. It will be moved from a localized conflict of secondary origin and importance, and these adversaries will always attempt, sooner or later, to bring about a generalized conflict. (26)

Vietnam had no real strategic necessity for the United States of America except and unless it had been used to eradicate communism in South East Asia which it was not used for. By identification with the French in Vietnam and then with the government of South Vietnam the United States government made 3 huge mistakes:

- First, God had chosen to punish the people of Vietnam because of their system of idolatry and demonism which was way over due for punishment. The incredible suffering which has gone on in South East Asia for so very long without restraint forces the conclusion that God is punishing a whole segment of the world. These people of South East Asia have rejected truth from missionaries for a very long time. This part of the world is an area of overwhelming demonism and God used the communists to punish these people as he did the people of China. When the United States went into Vietnam it had interfered with the Divine Discipline of that region of the world just as Gossip and Maligning interferes with Divine Discipline for individuals and its only reasonable course of action would have been to eradicate the EVIL of communism in that area and in china.
- Second, a great mistake was the misuse of the American military establishment once it was committed and the continued use of systems brought in from other wars which are non-functional in jungle or guerrilla warfare and which could not work there. The war in Vietnam was guerrilla warfare and it needed to be fought with a similar system of organization or one of total destruction which the United States did not have the moral courage to use.
- The American military in Vietnam was under the constant scrutiny and interference from the civilian government which tied the military's hands with idiotic "rules of engagement". This was the establishment of what the civilian government thought would be rules for 'FAIR PLAY' in a type of war where anything should have been allowed. In Vietnam the American military should have used the same type of flexible movement as the British in Malaya under Winston Churchill's dual system of function allowing British officers to move into an area and use torture to get what was needed to find the enemy and to KILL anyone who was a supporter of the enemy.

Trinquier (26) with the camouflage clad paratroopers of the 10th waded into the situation in Algeria with a cold ferocity that made headlines throughout the world. *It also provided Trinquier with a Cartesian rationale for the use of torture in revolutionary war; torture is the particular bane of the terrorist*, just as antiaircraft artillery is that of the airman or machine-gun fire that of the foot soldier. (26) The tragic thing today is that the United States of America no longer knows how to fight any type of war and be ruthless and still be honorable accepting only unconditional surrender from its enemies.

Underlying Principles

Organizations which arm themselves to defend freedom or in order to stop some Evil ultimately become part of the Evil they allege to stop UNLESS their policies and procedures are totally focused on the effort of preserving or restoring national freedom and function under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#). Believers must individually prepare to defend life, liberty, property and loved ones as individuals in disaster and crisis situations. No church has authorization to nor any right to become involved in paramilitary organizations. There is a fine line here which must be carefully considered. It is wrong for a person, individually, to attempt to reverse the trends of revolution with [counter insurgent clandestine guerrilla](#) tactics. However, when an organization forms with the specific purpose and policies of restoring the client nation functions of the country and a person joins that organization for that purpose, then operating as a clandestine or guerrilla warrior is NOT WRONG. When the country is invaded or involved in a revolution or in a civil war and believers individually find themselves behind enemy lines they MUST then use Bible Doctrine to form clandestine counter insurgent guerrilla ORGANIZATIONS. To be effective they MUST learn the tricks and tactics needed and put them into practice in an all out effort to restore the client nation. Freedom is and MUST BE the primary objective along with restoration of all Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution functions in the nation and the individual must think, instead of becoming emotional, about paramilitary organizations. When the Lord spares positive believers who have reached or exceeded [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) during revolution or civil war He will provide plenty of time for organizing Clandestine Counter Insurgent Guerrilla fighting. Even in Guerrilla organizations there still must be leadership, a chain of command, total control and strict discipline. Both those in leadership and those who are the followers must know and understand their purpose and objectives clearly at all times. The leadership must never tolerate any abuse, by any members of the organization, toward uninvolved civilians or private property, the only exception is the abuse of the enemy for information or destruction. Strong and strict authority in time of war is of ultimate importance and those who oppose such authority in war will ultimately betray the organization they are with. These individuals must be rapidly discovered and eliminated. The believer who has reached and moved ahead in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God must remember always that God will keep him alive because he has learned to think with Divine Viewpoint and not because of his ability to fight or shoot.

Conventional vs Guerrilla War

Guerrilla Warfare differs distinctly from ‘conventional’ warfare in that it demands a military operation that is fluid and in which the guerrillas, operating in ‘bands’ rather than in armies never directly confront the government forces in massive or decisive battles. Purely sniping operations are not sufficient, however, and, from the strategic point of view, Guerrilla Warfare, by causing many difficulties and small losses to the enemy, simply wears him out. According to the traditional notion of Guerrilla Warfare, it is essential to base most operations in the countryside and attempt to make it impossible for the government to separate potential and actual guerrilla fighters from the rest of the population. However there are now other concepts of how to wage Guerrilla Warfare in urban areas.

There are three fundamental lessons for the successful conduct of Guerrilla Warfare Movements:

- Popular forces can win a war against an army.
- It is not necessary to wait until all conditions for making revolution exist; the insurrection can create them.
- In underdeveloped America the countryside is the basic area for armed fighting.

These have been successful whenever they have been applied but have failed almost uniformly in those areas where any one of them has not been strictly implemented. In addition:

- A PROPAGANDA CAMPAIGN must be conducted on an INTERNATIONAL basis to make it politically unfeasible for the governmental opponent of the guerrillas to continue resisting.
- The guerrillas must have a PRIVILEGED SANCTUARY to which they can retreat. This privileged sanctuary may either be an area within the country that the enemy cannot penetrate or, more likely, an area in an adjacent country which has given aid and comfort to the guerrillas.
 - In almost all successful guerrilla operations, it was necessary for the guerrillas to have an adjacent country into which to retreat when conditions became too difficult.
 - This is what was an important factor in Vietnam opening a common border with Communist China, Thailand and Cambodia.

Consider this fictional example of the difference between conventional and guerrilla war by briefly war-gaming the American War for Independence using present-day 4th Generation or “Modern” Warfare tactics. Early in the war, the following incidents occur:

Benjamin Franklin arranges a coordinated attack by David Bushnell in his submersible and John Paul Jones in the Ranger on English commercial shipping IN the Thames estuary, right at the King’s doorstep in full view of horrified Englishmen who never thought the war would come there. Bushnell has greater success against the commercial shipping because their wooden hulls are not copper-sheathed as are the British military hulls. This “infernal device” which strikes without warning and having no apparent effective countermeasure, frightens British shippers. Bushnell, John Paul Jones and his surviving crew are taken prisoner, but the very destructive raid, which also sets a large portion of the London docks ablaze, is just as stunning, if not more so, than the Doolittle Raid on Tokyo in 1942.

Meanwhile, Ben Franklin dispatches a trio of riflemen by way of a neutral port into London. One fine day, when Lord North emerges from his country estate, he is killed by an aimed shot from 300 yards away. His wife, standing next to him, is unharmed. Be sure to notice that Lord North is targeted, but not the King. Under 4th Generation Warfare rules the King would be sacrosanct, just as an American President in the 21st Century should be. Anyone around them, however, would be fair 4th Generation Warfare targets if involved in the support, decisions or operations which oppress their own people. Remember, the point of 4th Generation Warfare is to destroy the will of the enemy elite to proceed with the war, not give them motivation to win, or provide them a propaganda coup to use with the people. After North is replaced, the

replacement King's minister is shot as well in identical circumstances. Simultaneously, Franklin activates a third group already living quietly in England to attack by arson the buildings of the British East India Company, Lloyd's of London and the Company of the Bank of England. They do this at night so there are no civilian casualties, although several adjoining structures are inevitably destroyed as well. The attacks by John Paul Jones & Bushnell are (barely) within the rules of conventional war and Franklin takes credit for them. The others are plausibly deniable. British merchants and politicians get the point, however. This War for Independence by the American Colonies is going to cost them far more than they ever dreamed. How long would they have supported the King's North American obsession when they were cumulatively losing hundreds of thousands of English pounds daily?

This is the method and objective of clandestine and guerrilla warfare to break the will of the people to fight the war. This is what the communists through the American media and higher educational system did in the United States of America during the Vietnam war very, very successfully.

2 Kinds of Guerrilla Warfare

There are 2 general kinds of Guerrilla Warfare on the world stages today. Traditional Guerrilla Warfare and Revolutionary or Communist Guerrilla Warfare

Traditional Guerrilla Warfare

Traditional Guerrilla Warfare was waged by a people or a region against foreign domination. The precise shape of the political future of the nation or region was not part of the struggle. In the Traditional Guerrilla Warfare instance, there is a people of a region seeking to free themselves of foreign (some-times ideologically foreign) domination, a people concerned wholly with this task and therefore willing to leave the internal political questions until afterwards. This great divide between the two forms of Guerrilla Warfare probably is clearly manifest in the regional, religiously 'motivated' rising in la Vendee during the French Revolution; a rising directed against a new kind of government, which talked about Liberty, Fraternity and Equality, but which also introduced conscription of all the nationals of France in the name of something which was not properly understood in la Vendee, secular nationalism. This could also be considered in the efforts of the "underground" forces in France opposing Nazi domination in World War II. Even so, la Vendee fought for the modest aims of freedom of religion. And this essential modesty of aim, or, if you like, political vagueness of aim, has marked every traditional guerrilla war from Gideon's struggle on.

Therefore, Traditional Guerrilla Warfare may be described briefly as a form of warfare carried out by irregular forces, which just about always possess inferior weapons and inferior logistical support in general, but which enjoy a superior mobility as a result of knowing the geographical terrain better than the enemy. They possess the ability to seize and retain the initiative through a superior control of the 'human' terrain. This control may be the result of sheer nation wide support for the guerrillas against a colonial or other occupying power of foreign origin. This was the North Vietnamese against the French and then the American military

forces. The control may be the result of the ability of the guerrillas to inflict reprisals upon the population at will; or, it can be because the guerrillas promise something more to the population. Normally all three factors operate, the second operating because Guerrilla Warfare of any kind can be waged only where the communications system provides the guerrillas with the possibility of moving more quickly than their enemy can apprehend. A major Traditional Guerrilla operation cannot, for example, be successfully mounted in a fully industrialized State, except in conditions of acute civic breakdown.

Traditional Guerrilla Warfare & The Progressive Left

In traditional Guerrilla Warfare, Propaganda Programs are not necessary; the people trying to rid themselves of an unwanted foreign influence clearly understand why they are fighting; they do not need political commissars; they are indeed engaged in a 'spontaneous and indigenous rising'. This is a fact which cannot be acknowledged today by the older members of the 'progressive left' because it has nothing to do with Guerrilla Warfare; it is simply that such people, the Bidens, Pelosies, Schumers, of the American political system have staked their lives on a special understanding of historical processes, the disavowal of which would involve them in a personally intolerable situation; the situation of having spent their lives futilely in support of wicked and irrelevant ideals. They are to be pitied, but NEVER listened to and in the United States of America should never have been allowed to hold high public office.

This was the Irish Insurrection which involved reprisals and ambushes and so on in Ireland; and there was indeed an 'ideology', Catholicism, but the 'ideology' and the nation were actually one. All that was being aimed at was the liberation of Ireland from alien rule, the British; and so there was no question of the Catholic hierarchy having an "absolute leadership being the founder, organizer and educator of the army." It was not that kind of struggle; it was simply a nation engaged in insurgency against an outside rule.

Revolutionary or Communist Guerrilla Warfare

The Communist approach to Guerrilla Warfare is altogether different. It necessarily uses the traditional techniques of Guerrilla Warfare, since the geographical terrain not only permits but enhances the successful use of such techniques. However, the Communist's waging of a Guerrilla War uses as an 'organizational weapon,' the Communist Party, using a generalized and (from its-point of view) an utterly bogus cause in order to ensure its seizure of power. (See 'Antifa' and 'Black Lives Matter' in the United States of America) However, communists take immense pains, and on occasion indulge (as they did in Vietnam before 1946) in great political gambles, to avoid being forced into adopting the fighting kind of Guerrilla Warfare. Ho Chi Minh even accepted the idea of incorporation into a French Union so long as he could hope that the Communist Party of France might come to power. Then he had intended to resume what Communists call the 'legal' (or 'parliamentary') form of struggle if it seems that form of struggle is more likely to lead to the achievement of a Communist dictatorship. This seems to be what has been occurring in the United States of America in the early 21st century and it may very well be that IF conservatives unite (highly unlikely knowing the level of arrogance involved in conservatives, although Mr. Trump's current leadership is proving to be somewhat effective in doing so) in their attempts to restore this nation to its constitutional government

that this ongoing guerrilla struggle in the United States will turn more traditional or lead to a conventional outright revolution or civil war.

Communists throughout the world have utilized the methods and operations of “Guerrilla Warfare” to harass, and in some cases destroy, those freedom oriented democratic governments they oppose. Guerrilla Warfare as employed by the Communists bases its format on the use of small, armed bands of irregulars to create anarchy and terror throughout the general population, in fact, terror is one of the principal objectives. (26, “Modern Warfare”, by Colonel Roger Trinquier) I am assuming the title “Modern Warfare” here is one of the types of Guerrilla Warfare whose goal is the control of the populace, and terrorism is a particularly appropriate weapon, because it aims directly at the inhabitant. Terrorism causes the citizen to live continually under fear from the threat of violent death. Because of feeling the presence of permanent danger surrounding him, he has the feeling of being an isolated and defenseless target. Terrorism causes the public authority and Law Enforcement to no longer be capable of ensuring his security. As a result he loses confidence in the state whose inherent mission is to guarantee his safety. He thereby becomes more drawn to the side of the terrorists, who alone seem to be able to protect him. Communist Guerrilla Warfare actively advocates the use of terror as a means to frighten and “awaken” the populace of a specific region to the political sterility of their own government and the falsely proposed altruistic goals of the Communists. They also seek to utilize terror and the side effects of civilian murders to achieve the goal of political victory.

Mao Tse-tung wrote “Without a political goal, Guerrilla Warfare must fail, as it must if its political objectives do not coincide with the aspirations of the people and their sympathy, cooperation, and assistance cannot be gained. The essence of Guerrilla Warfare is thus revolutionary in character.” He made it clear that the only way Guerrilla Warfare can succeed is through the tacit support, or ambivalence, of a large segment of the general population. This has been the United States of America today!

The fact is, that Communists belong not to a party, in the democratic meaning of the term, but to an 'organizational weapon', a quasi military organization. They believe, in so far as they are real Communists, that violence, not harmony lies at the heart of things, until Communism has conquered everywhere and, in conquering, has altered the very nature of men. Then, and only then, will a new era of peace and good will be ushered in. In the meantime, they regard themselves as above and beyond the laws according to which the people live; as such, they self-outlaw themselves, and make it quite explicit that they do so. Given this view of what the world is all about, they necessarily see all those who do not accept their prescriptions for the good life as either implacable enemies against whom any manner of dissimulation is permissible or as people who can and must be manipulated. This is also ISLAM! Therefore, in very large Communist Parties, when the 'reformist element becomes too strong to allow the quasi-military discipline to be properly exercised, in times of crisis they operate under disguised objectives. They must offer a cause which is not their own cause, but the cause that is acceptable to the masses; once in power, that cause can immediately be disavowed and the lower level adherents disposed of. In Asia, Land distribution was the Cause, however, when the “Movement” came

to power, Collectivization of land was imposed upon the peasantry by the 'People's Army'.

Therefore, for the Communists, armed Guerrilla Warfare is but another part of the struggle to gain control over the population. By engaging ever greater sections of the population in Guerrilla Warfare, they inevitably come to control greater sections of the population. Guerrilla Warfare for the Communists is simply a process, the best available at the time, and a peculiarly efficacious one. It is a process of politico militarily “brigading” of the people, a process which after victory, involves the economic “brigading” of the people through collectivization of agriculture, business, industry, etc. *This is not undertaken by communists in order to increase productivity but in order to consolidate Communist control over the masses.*

This kind of warfare really can only be understood through a study of its exponents; especially those who stand in the tradition of Leninist political Guerrilla Warfare. In effect the communist agenda uses the concept that every village and in industrialized nations every factory is a fortress; if it can be penetrated and manipulated by the Communist Party. This is the drive of the communist inspired or possibly directed American Labor Unions which have been basically collectivizing all industry in the United States of America today. Therefore, the purpose of all efforts under communism including any use of Guerrilla Warfare is that “The Communist Party's administration becomes absolute. The Party is the founder, organizer and educator of the army, the system of the Party Committee and political commissar must be firmly maintained.”

The controlling Communist Party, wherever it has arisen, has always necessarily been altogether different: it has always been a very small minority group, committed to a political solution that is derived in no fashion whatsoever from the aspirations of the people. Under bogus slogans such as nationalism and redistribution, the Party “mobilizes” the masses through revolutionary Guerrilla Warfare; creating a significant politico military society, 'The People's Army'. By means of escalating the struggle it creates the instrument for the ultimate smashing of all opposition, including that of the unsuspecting dupes who join its revolutionary masses, in order that the Party can assume absolute dictatorship over the people. The revolution is achieved by and through warfare; and the revolution when completed is simply the triumph of a totalitarian minority of its privileged armed bureaucracy over the mass of the people. This is what the liberal socialists do not comprehend at all, that communism uses liberalism and socialism to destroy effective legitimate governments and societies, based on the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, so it can take control with totalitarian tyranny. The major point which must be gotten over to people in the West is that traditional Guerrilla Warfare is basically **defensive**; however, Revolutionary Communist Guerrilla Warfare is in its basic nature, **offensive**, **aggressive**, and consequently a deep threat to international peace.

Propaganda an Essential in Communist Guerrilla Warfare

One of the first two platoons formed in the 'People's Army' of North Vietnam was a propaganda platoon which in itself, discloses the Communist purpose and means of function in Guerrilla War to all who try to understand this problem honestly. It began in the United States with the call of “POLICE BRUTALITY” which has echoed through our recent history for more than 60 years. This, however, is simply a smokescreen for lawlessness.

On August 17, 1965, the mayor of Los Angeles, Samuel W. Yorty, charged: “For some time there has existed a world-wide subversive campaign to stigmatize all police as brutal. The cry of police brutality has been shouted in cities all over the world by Communists, dupes and demagogues irrespective of the facts. Criminal elements have seized upon these false charges to try to excuse their lawlessness. These criminal elements seek to put the blame on the police for their own wanton attacks on the persons and property of their neighbors. These criminal elements hate the police who restrain them and protect us from them to the best of their ability.”

High police officials reportedly informed the mayor that a Communist line group composed of top ‘Reds’ met in Los Angeles on a Sunday and marked the riots which were occurring as an “excellent source of trouble for fomenting dissension and hatred of the police department.”

Mass Formation

Clearly there has been a massive trove of real time data validating the brilliant Mass Formation intellectual synthesis developed by Dr. Mattias Desmet ([28](#)) of the University of Ghent in Belgium over the last several years. This has been demonstrated by there having been a coordinated propaganda and censorship response of major news media and financial and scientific institutions along with several national governments acting in real time to suppress a growing awareness by the general public of having been actively manipulated using crowd psychology tools to generate clinically significant FEAR and ANXIETY with regard to the 2019 Wuhan CCP Virus to advance their agendas on a global scale. Multiple governments have now admitted to actively using FEAR and 'Mass Formation' related theories as a tool for totalitarian population control during this supposed outbreak. This censorship and the release of Mass Formation data is occurring at the same time that the Omicron variant of the CCP Wuhan Virus is destroying the legitimacy of government and the World Health Organization propaganda concerning the “Safe and Effective” mRNA vaccines and associated mandates by the Biden controlled federal government.

Desmet has said, “Mass formation has been studied for over 200 years, beginning with such scholars as Gustave Le Bon, Freud, McDougal, Canetti, Hannah Arendt, etc. In the twentieth century, psychologists such as Ash and Sheriff have studied mass formation experimentally. These scholars did not always call it ‘mass formation’, but what they studied was basically the same: the way in which an individual’s mental state is influenced by their tendency to conform to group thinking. I myself have over 130 publications on ‘Web of Science’, a large part of them focusing on how an individual’s personality structure is influenced by their relationships with other people.” Mattias Desmet, Professor of Clinical Psychology at Ghent University in Belgium

Mass Formation: Deployed After 200 Years of Study

- Totalitarianism requires the total obedience of the mass of the population
- This obedience is created via a Mass Formation process inside the population
- Four conditions are needed to accomplish this:
 - The masses must feel alone and isolated.
 - Their lives must feel pointless and meaningless.

- The masses then must experience constant free floating anxiety.
- The masses must also experience free-floating frustration and aggression.

With these conditions met, people are now ripe for mass hypnosis.

- No matter how STUPID, SENSELESS or even HARMFUL the “solution”, may in reality be, the masses of people are made to feel solidarity, which validates the whole process of the solution for them.
- The masses of people are now changed and are no longer rational.
- These People who are consumed by the Mass Formation process become intolerant and cruel.

Studies on Crowd Psychology

Earlier seminal academic works regarding Mass Formation upon which Professor Desmet has based his theory include the following:

Gustave Le Bon (1841-1931)

The Crowd: A Study of the Popular Mind, 1895

Public Domain complete audiobook, Worldcat

William McDougall (1871-1938)

The Group Mind; A Sketch of the Principles of Collective Psychology, with Some Attempt to Apply Them to the Interpretation of National Life and Character, 1920 – Worldcat

Elias Canetti (1905-1994)

Crowds and Power, 1960 – Worldcat

Overview of Crowds and Power

Classification and Symbols of Masses in the Conception of Elias Canetti (2019)

John Ioannidis (1965-)

Why Most Published Research Findings Are False, 2005

Hannah Arendt (1906-1975)

Eichmann in Jerusalem, A Report on the Banality of Evil, 1963 – Worldcat

The Origins of Totalitarianism, 1951- Worldcat

Solomon Asch (1907-1996)

Effects of group pressure upon the modification and distortion of judgments, 1951

Opinions and Social Pressure, 1955

Studies of Independence and Conformity: I. A Minority of One Against a Unanimous Majority, 1956

The use of fear to control behavior in the Covid crisis was ‘totalitarian’, admit scientists.

Members of Scientific Pandemic Influenza Group on Behaviour express regret about ‘unethical’

use of Fear.

The Telegraph. By Gordon Rayner, 14 May 2021

A State of Fear by Laura Dodsworth

A State of Fear: how the UK government weaponized fear during the Covid-19 pandemic

“This is a book about fear. Fear of a virus. Fear of death. Fear of losing our jobs, our democracy, our human connections, our health and our minds. It’s also about how the government weaponized our fear against us, supposedly in our best interest, until we were the most frightened country in Europe.”

Fear & Mass Formation Psychology

Fear is the most powerful emotion. Hardwired into humans, fear is part of man’s ‘evolutionary’ success. But that also makes it one of the most powerful tools in the behavioral psychology toolbox and it has been used to manipulate and control people during the 2019 pseudo CCP Wuhan Virus pandemic. In one of the most extraordinary documents ever revealed to the British public, the behavioral scientists advising the government said that “a substantial number of people did not feel threatened enough by Covid-19 to follow the rules”. They advised the government to increase the sense of ‘personal threat’, to scare them into submission. The questions which one must find answers for include; why did the governments deliberately frighten their people, and how has this affected the people as individuals and as a country? Who is involved in the decision making that affects the lives of the people of the nation? How are behavioral science and nudge theory being used to subliminally manipulate the people? How does the media leverage fear? What are the real risks to the well being of the people?

This has been the most extensive and inclusive world wide use of propaganda and in fact the absolutely most successful probably in all of Human History.

“Modern” or Urban Guerrilla Warfare Operation

A completely new concept of Guerrilla Warfare is where traditional Guerrilla Warfare tactics are applied to urban areas, particularly those which are densely populated. With special application to the United States, these are advanced principles, which are thought would enable revolutionaries to successfully wage Guerrilla Warfare against a highly industrialized nation, one with powerful military forces and the most modern weapons of mass destruction, and in doing so would neutralize those weapons.

The new concept is lightning campaigns conducted in highly sensitive urban communities with the paralysis reaching the small communities and spreading to the farm areas. The old method of Guerrilla Warfare, as carried out from the hills and countryside, would be ineffective in a powerful country like the United States. The new concept is to huddle as close to the enemy as possible so as to neutralize his modern and fierce weapons. The new concept creates conditions that involve the total community, whether they want to be involved or not. It sustains a state of confusion and destruction of property. It dislocates the organs of harmony and order and reduces central power to the level of a helpless sprawling, octopus. During the

hours of day sporadic rioting takes place and massive sniping. Night brings all out warfare, organized fighting and unlimited terror against the oppressor and his forces. Unfortunately, this type of warfare deviates from the principles of Traditional Guerrilla Warfare in that the individual innocent civilian is very often not spared and often the victim of the attacks.

However, Guerrilla Warfare, of either kind, does indeed involve a kind of substitution of local skills and customs for the technological might of industrialized societies. When massive violence comes, the United States will become a bedlam of confusion and chaos. All workers will be afraid to venture out on the streets to report to their jobs. All mass transportation will grind to a complete standstill. Stores will be destroyed and looted. Property will be damaged and expensive buildings will be reduced to ashes. Essential pipe lines will be severed and blown up and all manner of sabotage will occur. Violence and terror will spread like a firestorm. Trucks and trains will not move the necessary supplies to the big urban centers and the economy will fall into a state of chaos.

Guerrilla Warfare in the United States

During the 1964 Harlem riot, Jesse Gray, the former Harlem organizer for the Communist Party, called for Guerrilla Warfare against the United States. At that time agents of North Vietnam had trained some Americans in Guerrilla Warfare in Cuba. Propaganda Literature was widely distributed in the United States by communist party affiliates not only calling for Guerrilla Warfare against this country, but even spelling out how it should be conducted. This has been occurring AGAIN in the earlier 21st century now again in 2024 with the Re-election of Mr. Trump.

If the United States did not face an international Communist threat with the ever-present possibility of its being militarily engaged in other parts of the world, Guerrilla Warfare advocates would pose little danger to this country. With American military forces dramatically eroded and substantially reduced and the remaining numbers committed to actual combat or police actions in a number of other areas of the world, the suppression of Guerrilla Warfare operations which are launched simultaneously in a number of major cities could pose a most serious problem. The greatest threat to the United States which has been developing since the EARLY 1960s has risen as a threat created by a mixture of Communists and ultra-racist conspirators. The years since that time have seen this threat enhanced to a much greater level. (written in MAY 6, 1968)

U.S. Guerrilla Warfare Differences

If Guerrilla Warfare were ever initiated in the United States under conditions of irregular warfare as practiced in Greece, Vietnam, the Philippines, Algeria, Cuba, etc., there would be one notable and highly significant difference. In Modern Guerrilla Warfare the essential characteristic is that the enemy must be difficult to identify. Terrorism and the ability to be indistinguishable from the general populace are vital to the success of a guerrilla campaign. This points out the ABJECT STUPIDITY of NOT profiling Arabic Males as the initiators of major terrorist attacks. However it is theorized that this advantage, to be indistinguishable, would not exist in Guerrilla Warfare in the United States. This is based on the presumption, I think,

that the process would be begun in the Black Ghettos of American cities as a racial civil war in which black revolutionaries would attempt guerrilla war against the white population and the existing Government. This obviously can still occur but it is unlikely with the overall integration of the population of the United States of America as it is today in the 21st century. However, it is still a fallacy of those still promoting black or other racial equality (in reality superiority) because when moving to any level of Guerrilla operations they lose a vital characteristic by superimposing the element of race into the war. Successful guerrilla operations have always depended, especially in modern urban operations, upon the guerrilla's ability to melt into the general population and to be able win over a sizable segment of that population to his political position. The problem with Racially Motivated and Driven anarchistic movements is that using the issue of race would severely limit the potential of the revolutionaries.

Prepping for or Preventing Guerrilla Warfare

Guerrilla Warfare advocates see massive rioting (See the activities in the 1st ¼ of the 21st century in the United States of America) as laying the groundwork for Guerrilla Warfare. It is EVERYONE'S responsibility, primarily all governmental officials, therefore, to see that these riots do not continue. The Mass Demonstrations and the ensuing riots must be stopped before they lead to revolutionary guerrilla warfare. Certainly the best defense against a guerrilla war in the United States of America is to see that one never materializes from these unconstitutional marches of disgruntled and communist inspired citizens.

Prevention and Control of Mobs and Riots

Nature of Crowds – MOBS

This brings out the fact that there are many ways of classifying crowds. They can be grouped according to size, not usually the most significant factor, according to sex, race, religion, political beliefs, or in many other ways, but these would not be useful classifications. The factors of greatest interest to law enforcement are the behavior and motivation of the people, what they are doing and why. Therefore, crowds should be distinguished as:

- Casual crowd
 - A group of people who happen to be present at a given place but who are not unified or organized. The people in a casual crowd are bent on their individual ways. They do not have a common interest or purpose and they are not following any particular leader.
- Cohesive crowd
 - A group of people who are assembled for some specific purpose. An audience attending a play or a concert, or the fans at a sporting event, who are held together by a common interest. Their attention is directed toward some common focus. In most cases the interest that brought them together is momentary and they are usually not under well-defined leadership.
- Expressive crowd
 - A group in which the people are held together by some common purpose. They usually hold more or less similar attitudes for or against something. They are ordinarily under the direction of well-defined leadership. It is characteristic of this

type of crowd to display a more or less unified mood. Their likes and dislikes, their loyalties, their desires and intentions are normally quite easily seen. These may be the people at a political rally, a picket line, an ideological demonstration or march or a religious revival.

- Aggressive crowd
 - A group of people, under positive leadership and strong emotions, engaged in some kind of aggressive action. Ordinarily these people have come together because of strong feelings about some issue and show definite unity of purpose. Their actions may be impulsive and highly emotional and, unfortunately, may become destructive. This type crowd is, expressive and cohesive.

Basic Behavior Patterns in Mobs

Behavior is another method of classifying people in crowds:

- Aggressive
 - These groups have tendencies which show up in the actions of members such as in a lynch mob or in the violent clashes between strikers and strike breakers. These are the aggressive behaviors seen Street Gangs but the objective of the violence always varies.
- Escape
 - These groups are involved in the behavior seen in panic situations such as at a fire or other disaster. These groups are composed of individuals driven by overwhelming fear who react emotionally and irrationally to avoid the source of the danger. This behavior is often maladaptive because the people act blindly and do not take time to figure out the best way to avoid the danger. The escape behavior of panic often ruthlessly disregards the welfare of others in the crowd, each individual taking a “me first” attitude. Panic behavior occurs in a situation where the people have no prepared response with which to meet an emergency.
- Acquisitive
 - These groups are focused on a main purpose of the emotional and irrational behavior for acquiring of some desired object. What begins as a riot soon changes into a wild and uncontrolled looting spree. In other cases when total financial collapse is envisioned there may be a run on a bank or when supplies of necessities dwindle there may be hunger riots.
- Expressive
 - These groups though highly emotionally charged are simply expressive. The behavior of persons attending conventions is sometimes the expressive type also in Religious revivals, carnivals, county fairs, jazz festivals, parades, wild parties and orgies all may contain elements of expressive behavior.

The People Involved in Mobs

This is obviously of tantamount importance when considering crowd behavior and it is necessary to consider the kinds of people involved and how they may behave:

- Impulsive & Lawless persons
 - Their mob behavior is not unlike the behavior they exhibit in their ordinary daily

lives. They are short tempered and hotheaded, the kind that are always spoiling for a fight. They need very little in the way of insult or provocation to excite them to violence. They are the ones to start the riot, incite others to violence and are most often ignorant, bigoted, and of low social status.

- Suggestible persons
 - They are easily influenced to follow the lead of the more violent and get into the violent action early.
- Cautious individuals
 - They would like to get into the fracas but wait for the cloak of anonymity to give them courage by hiding their identity.
- Yielding individuals
 - Those who hang back on the side lines and do not join the action until the large number of persons participating gives the impression of universality, “Everyone is doing it”.
 - This is the person who only passively or halfheartedly opposes violence, but when the fighting starts, he yields even though he is opposed to it.
- Supportive persons
 - Those who do not actively join the mob but who enjoy the show and even shout encouragement.
- Resisters
 - Those whose values and standards of judgment are not swayed by the emotional frenzy of the mob, who maintain level heads, and who disagree with the actions of the majority. However, the mob is intolerant of these and meets such resistance with violence toward them also.
- Psychopathic individuals
 - These are people who are angry at the world, because of frustrations or mental illness, who could use the riotous situation as a means of getting even with society.

Riot Patterns

There is always a Pattern of Preparation whenever a civil disturbance or riot occurs, so that there are always certain factors or developments which have prepared the way for the disturbance or riot:

- Verbal aggression which may have existed for a long time but with increasing intensity.
- Economic frustration and dissatisfaction with the status quo, coupled with a gradually changing social organization, which has resulted in increasing irritation.
- Like-minded people who band together in various kinds of groups.
- Some provocation triggers violence which begins as isolated cases of violent aggression and then expands.
- Full-scale rioting begins when one of these isolated clashes instigates mob action.

It must be constantly remembered that frustration breeds aggression on the part of any group and a frustrated minority may resort to aggression just as a frustrated majority group may.

Riot Symptoms

Increased Bitterness or intensive involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance as demonstrated by:

- Sentiments and opinions of the populace
 - Sentiments are true feelings toward an issue
 - Opinions are verbal expressions of sentiments
 - When the more rabid individuals begin to express themselves with less restraint, more vociferously, and with increasing bitterness, this is one of the danger signs of the potential for impending riots. Also telltale signs can often be found in the language used. Deprecating catchwords and phrases become more frequent and more derogatory.
- Rumors
 - Propaganda is often simply the circulation of rumors and is one of the most reliable indicators of the temper of the times.
- Publications
 - Published tracts, pamphlets, web pages, etc., along with today's internet social media postings will frequently give indication of the mounting tension. The headlines become more strident and the language becomes more and more exaggerated.
- Public demonstrations
 - Meetings, rallies, marches, and even graffiti on sidewalks, billboards, and the like should be watched carefully. Such things indicate the salience of the attitudes of the participants, but also the intensity and direction of those attitudes.

Riots as a Prelude to Revolutionary Guerrilla Warfare

There has historically been considerable evidence that not only some Communist factions in the United States and other Communist Oriented groups are seriously considering the possibility of instituting armed insurrection in this country. These groups have often based their presumption of the effectiveness of a Guerrilla War here in the United States on the concept derived from "the people's war of national liberation" as advanced by the Chinese Communists. They even to this very day propose that a base for a guerrilla operation presently exists in the Black and Hispanic ghettos of the country and that it is possible, and feasible, to utilize the ghettos for planned and coordinated uprisings. They have regarded ghetto riots as a prelude to general Guerrilla Warfare operations and have extended this presumption to Riots and "Demonstrations" in every level of American society. However as pointed out, these guerrilla concepts cannot effectively be founded on raw racism, black men versus white men because they are inevitably doomed to fail.

Communist groups in the United States of America have been engaged in racial agitation for DECADES. The role they have played involves inflaming passions among "racial minorities" to the point where riots have broken out. This points to the abject stupidity of these minority dupes being manipulated into participation in these riots because in the United States of America under the American Constitution there is no consideration for RACE. So the realistic push by liberalism to invalidate the American Constitution in every possible way flies over the heads of these dupes as they work to destroy their own security and position under the Constitution for being treated EQUALLY under the law. Many of the communist agitators believe that the time is not yet quite right for a Guerrilla War in the United States and

continue to foment and support only riots.

The analysis of Guerrilla Warfare potential in the United States of America derived this conclusion from their research in 1968. The future bodes ill for anyone who thinks riots are over. If anything, the pressures and the potential for riots has dramatically increased by continuing to allow the unconstitutional activity of disgruntled citizens spurred on by communist agitators to form into MOBS and engage in Demonstrations and Marches which invariably become destructive and violent. Then Captain Napoleon Bonaparte had the only solution to stop this insanity, SHOOT THEM DOWN IN THE STREETS WHERE THEY STAND. As brutal as this may seem it is based on the fact that the only thing which violent people fear is violence greater than they are involved with, positioned against them. Today in this 21st century it is vitally necessary for the American people to be alerted to the fact that some elements within the population are today actually actively recruiting and training revolutionaries for the war they hope to wage against and within the United States.

Communism & US Riots

July of 1964 saw New York City rocked by Negro riots which gave the first clear indication of the Communists being deeply involved in these disturbances and that they were actually training and directing rioters. Almost immediately after the riots flared, the police and city officials produced facts that showed that the Communists had played a role in the creation and continuation of the riots. Most of the rational civil rights groups of that time admitted that Communists were involved in the riots, but they disagreed over their significance. The FBI at that time said that the Communists played a significant role in the riots, although it would be a mistake to credit them as the sole agent of the disturbances.

Scores of Communist training schools similar to the Lenin School in Moscow have historically been in operation around the world. It is not known how many U.S. Communist Party members had been trained in Guerrilla Warfare tactics in these schools. One reason is that effective United States controls over the international movement of American and other Communist agents have been significantly stymied especially by the current open border concepts of the outgoing democratic party administration. For the most part, they have been able to obtain passports at will for travel to any area of the world, for such purposes and for such length of time as they desire and then return to the United States through a completely permeable border.

Communist Influence and Control MUST be Secret

Another important Communist principle of Guerrilla Warfare is that Communist organization and control of the guerrilla operation must be concealed. Normally, this is absolutely essential to their winning the support and aid of the general populace, which they must have if they are to succeed. In addition, this factor is also vital in waging the international propaganda campaign that plays so important a part, in hindering and weakening the existing government and thus strengthening the guerrilla forces and their opportunities for victory. It is a historical fact, well documented after the fact, that American Communists received Guerrilla Warfare instructions in various parts of the world in the early and later parts of the 20th century from Soviet advisers.

Weapons for Urban Guerrilla Warfare

The traditional weapons of urban Guerrilla Warfare consist of a poor man's arsenal. Gasoline fire bombs (Molotov cocktails), lye or acid bombs (made by injecting lye or acid in the metal end of light bulbs). During the night hours such weapons, thrown from roof tops, will make the streets impossible for Law Enforcement to patrol. Hand grenades, bazookas, light mortars, rocket launchers, machine guns and ammunition today can be bought clandestinely on the black market easily. Extensive sabotage is possible, effective and necessary. Sugar in vehicular fuel is highly effective against internal combustion engines. Long nails driven through boards are effective to slow the movement of traffic on congested roads at night and can cause havoc on highways. Derailing of trains causes panic. High powered sniper rifles are readily available to cause chaos in the civilian population. Armor piercing bullets can be had and will penetrate oil storage tanks from a distance. Flame throwers can be manufactured at home or purchased directly not being firearms. Jumbo size Molotov cocktails which are most effectively employed in narrow streets bordered by three to four storied buildings, can be heaved from rooftops upon armored troop carriers and tanks below with an expected "napalm-like effect". A very effective weapon for close-in fighting is the poisonous dart.

Recruiting for Guerrilla Organizations

To the question "How did you enter the organization" most of the young terrorists replied: "I was a good worker and was earning an honest living. One day, I was stopped by a fellow who insisted I pay a certain sum to the organization. At first I refused, and I was beaten up by the three men he had with him. I paid. The next month the same sum was asked. I paid it without argument. Some time later, I became a collector myself. I received a list of persons who were to contribute and a small armed team to protect me during the collection. Then, as I was athletic and in good health, I was asked to enter into the armed organization, called in one past war the Army of National Liberation. I wanted to refuse, but a few pointed threats made me accept. From that time on I was lost, because to be admitted to that army, one first had to prove his worth; that is, to carry out an armed attack in the city. The conditions under which this was to be accomplished were explained to me. One evening, at a fixed time and an appointed place, an individual unknown to me was to give me a loaded weapon with the mission to kill the first person I came across. I was then to flee, dropping the weapon into a trashcan that the unknown person had pointed out to me. I did what was required of me and, three days later, I entered as a member into a cell of that Army."

When one or several members of an organizing council of Guerrillas wanted to install themselves in a house, they first sent a team of masons to construct a hiding place there. The masons immediately gathered together the people in the building and told them, in substance: "You are soon to receive important personages. You will be responsible for their security with your lives." And sometimes, to indicate that this was no idle threat, a burst of gunfire cut down on the spot the residents who seemed to them most suspect. From then on, the movements of the residents were strictly controlled; never could more than half of them be outside at a time. The secret was then well kept.

Principles of Guerrilla Warfare

This material has been extracted from “Mini Manual of the Urban Guerrilla”, by Carlos Marighella. (28)

“It is better to err acting than to do nothing for fear of erring. Without initiative there is no guerrilla warfare.” Carlos Marighella

I have taken the liberty to extract pertinent information regarding **Guerrilla Warfare** from this document in order to make a point regarding the use of Guerrilla Warfare Tactics by **Counter Insurgent** warriors attempting to RESTORE the proper and normal function of his nation NOT desiring to overthrow the existing governmental system and set up another in its place. I have changed focus and terminology in order to make the principles of using counter insurgent Guerrilla Warfare to Fight against **Insurgent** Guerrilla Warfare and to restore and stabilize the Establishment functions of the government and nation as a whole. Therefore, although much of this information is taken from Marighella’s work this focus is both on understanding Guerrilla Tactics and the altered perspective of the use of Guerrilla Tactics under the guidance of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine. It must be understood that the revolution already taking place in the United States of America in this 21st century is ongoing and against a governmental system which, as a constitutional republic, has been set up to function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions but has been forced away from these standards and into socialism and toward Marxist fascism and communism. Therefore, the perceived “GOOD” of the urban guerrilla from the perspective of Marighella is not to be applied here since in his time the fight was against a military dictatorship not an establishment oriented government where freedom is supposed to be protected and is to be a primary goal. The Fight of the Counter Insurgent in the United States of America is and will continue to be against those who want to destroy establishment freedom and replace it with Pseudo Equality under socialism or total chaos under anarchy. Keep in mind that all of the concepts of Guerrilla Warfare apply to what to expect from guerrilla insurgents and what MUST be done by counter insurgents to defeat them.

Definition Of The Urban Guerrilla

The structural crisis characteristic of the United States of America today, and its resultant political instability, are what has brought about the upsurge of both Overt and **Clandestine** revolution including **Insurgent** Guerrilla tactics. This revolution today manifests itself in the form of urban guerrilla warfare and the propaganda of psychological warfare. Urban Guerrilla warfare and psychological warfare in the cities depends on the insurgent urban guerrilla, who is a person who fights against the establishment principles designed to protect the people of the nation, using unconventional methods which inevitably escalates to the use of weapons and violence. This revolutionary is completely focused on the destruction of the political system in place in this country with a desire to replace it with a socialist or Marxist one. Urban Guerrilla warfare can also be used by counter insurgent individuals or groups, even the established Law Enforcement or Military organizations, for the purpose of removing a tyrannical system and restoring a system which functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The revolutionary in the United States of America today is as far as one

can get from a patriot and being saturated with arrogance he functions completely under strong delusion concerning the realities of life. However, the counter insurgent warrior who uses Guerrilla Tactics to counter the revolution is in fact a fighter for his country's liberation, a friend of the people and of the freedom which has been designed and provided by God for mankind. The area in which urban guerrilla counter insurgent tactics must be employed is in the large cities, in order to overcome the criminals, outlaws and the insurgent guerrillas who are operating there under the protection of distorted law. Generally, criminals and outlaws benefit personally from their actions and attack indiscriminately without distinguishing between the exploiters and the exploited, which is why there are so many ordinary people among their victims. The insurgent urban guerrilla has the lofty goal and ideal of having NO personal benefit (aside from restoration of his distorted idea of freedom and equality for all) from his actions and never involving the civilian population in injurious situations. These goals generally fall by the wayside in abject failure.

The urban guerrilla follows a political goal, and only attacks the government and the big businesses. The counter insurgent, counter-revolutionary, when operating in these same urban areas using similar guerrilla tactics MUST generate confusion by any means possible including bombing, kidnapping, assassination, deception, theft, but ONLY against urban guerrillas and revolutionaries who may include ministers, students, and any citizens who oppose establishment oriented government and desire to impose fascism, Marxism or socialism leading to communism and thereby destroy all liberty under the guise of equality. The urban guerrilla is an implacable enemy of the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, and is completely Anti-God, and systematically inflicts damage on the authorities and on the people who dominate the country and exercise power. These urban guerrillas have been for some time being used by the people who dominate the administration and control of the government of this country to remove the existing political system to impose tyrannical socialistic rule. These same tactics must be used against the insurgent revolutionary in counter insurgent guerrilla warfare to restore and reestablish proper governmental functions under the guidance of the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and Bible Doctrine. The primary task of the urban guerrilla is to distract, to wear down, to demoralize those in governmental authority and their repressive forces or those who try to maintain legitimate governmental operations and functions. They also will focus on attacking and destroying the wealth and property of the foreign influences in the nation and the upper classes. These revolutionary urban guerrillas are not afraid to dismantle and destroy the present economic, political and social system, and in fact have this as an ultimate objective, for his only true aim is to aid the revolution and thereby help in the creation of a totally new and revolutionary social and political structure under anarchy, socialism or communism. The counter insurgent guerrilla warrior MUST avoid abuse of the civilian population and, when possible, avoid destruction of public or private property and focus all his efforts on the revolutionary urban guerrilla and their system of organization, logistics and function. Every effort must be made to remove logistical support from these groups and disrupt their structure of organization and prevent their functions to destroy the establishment system using WHATEVER MEANS IS NECESSARY.

The Concept for the Christian

It is important to recognize all these aspects of what can and may occur in the United States of America as it comes closer and closer to the engagement in active overt Guerrilla War by radical, anarchistic, Marxist, communist, revolutionaries in this 21st century. There are 2 ways to look at these factors:

- The individual would want to be aware of how to protect himself against such tactics from anarchistic revolutionaries.
- The individual may NEED to adopt these concepts into an ORGANIZATION which would attempt to rescue his legitimate government from the hands of the insurgent revolutionaries.

In either case this information should not be taken lightly, it is a means and method which has been in use to overthrow nations for many, many decades and has been present and operational in these United States of America for almost 100 years. It cannot be minimized in any way that the legitimate government of the United States of America is FREEDOM based and is basically the ONLY government in the entire world which has had FREEDOM as its FUNDAMENTAL base for a very long time. Therefore, it is envied and opposed by every other form of government and because of the resultant prosperity by every people in the world and without a strong military and EFFECTIVE and LEGITIMATE Judicial and Law Enforcement system this nation is RIPE for conquest or total destruction. In addition the United States of America is a client nation to God responsible for the preservation, protection and dissemination of the Gospel of Christ and the entire Bible Doctrine content of the Word of God AND HAS FAILED IN THIS RESPONSIBILITY MISERABLY FOR A VERY LONG TIME. Thus the Christian, as a part of his civic duty and Christian responsibility, MUST be ready to defend his nation and his person and property if and when the need arises, in any way possible.

Counter Insurgent Guerrilla and Clandestine Warrior Qualities

The counter insurgent Guerrilla must be characterized by his bravery and his decisive nature. He must be a good tactician, and a good marksman proficient with various small arms and other weapons. He must be a person of great cleverness to compensate for the fact that he is not sufficiently supported with a large background organization strong in weapons, ammunition and equipment. The counter insurgent guerrilla must lead a clandestine existence lacking the equipment of conventional warfare machines. He must possess and use false documents for every aspect of his function and his advantage is that he MUST constantly act on behalf of the people and his JUST cause is the restoration of a proper Laws of Divine Establishment based government to return true freedom to the people. Though using small arms and inferior weapons in many cases the moral courage of the counter insurgent clandestine guerrilla sustains him in order that he might accomplish his principal duty, to attack and disrupt the revolutionaries and remain anonymous and hidden from them.

However, today, even since the 1970s, the small arms of terrorists and guerrillas are equal to any that establishment forces may muster and only depend on the level of financial backing available to their groups. In effect they can acquire any weapons they can afford to buy. In Rome in 1973 the police discovered in a raid that Arab terrorists, even at that time, were in possession of 2 SAM-7 Russian hand held rockets with which they intended to shoot down an El Al Israeli airliner. Bank Robbery is a very popular method for acquiring the funds to

finance a rebellion and in fact Josef Stalin was a notorious bank robber in his terrorist days prior to becoming involved in the politics of communism. Again showing that the criminal is the instigator or at least the co-instigator of revolution with the crusader who is eventually removed by the criminal if the revolution is successful. This was Stalin & Lenin in Russia. In addition, Guerrillas and the involved terrorists have turned their propensity for violence into the much more lucrative endeavor of kidnapping for ransom affluent businessmen and political figures of nations or systems they oppose.

Many times, when not effectively funded, the revolutionary urban guerrilla must capture or steal weapons from their enemy to be able to fight. Because these weapons are very often not uniform, the urban guerrilla faces the problem of the need for a variety ammunition and therefore, a shortage of ammunition. Today, in the United States of America, these revolutionaries have begun to set up suppliers for weapons and ammunition and places where marksmanship can be practiced under supervised training. This will make it much easier for these revolutionaries to carry out their role as revolutionaries and it is these systems of organization which the counter insurgent must in part focus on disrupting and destroying. The counter insurgent clandestine guerrilla warrior must possess strong initiative, mobility and flexibility, as well as versatility and be able to assume command of any situation. It is not always possible to foresee everything, and the counter insurgent cannot allow himself to become confused or wait for instructions. His duty is to act, to find independent adequate solutions for each problem he faces, and whenever necessary to retreat and wait for better opportunities. The counter insurgent guerrilla must be physically fit and able to withstand fatigue, hunger and weather extremes. He must know how to hide, and how to be vigilant. He must develop the art of dissembling and never fear danger. To function the same by day as by night and never to act impetuously. He must have unlimited patience and the ability to remain calm and professional in the worst of conditions and situations. He must be able to move about in his environment and not to leave a track or trail to be followed and not get discouraged in the face of the difficulties of clandestine counter insurgent guerrilla warfare,

How To Be Clandestine

The counter insurgent must know how to live among the people, and he must be careful not to appear strange and different from ordinary life in his chosen environment. His clothing and attitudes must reflect those of the people around him whether he is in the southern or northern parts of the country, the east or mid-west or west coast areas or must move between them. The counter insurgent must continue to make his living through his job or his professional activity and if he becomes known and sought by the police (assuming the revolutionaries control them) or the revolutionaries themselves, he must go underground, and sometimes must live a hidden life. The counter insurgent guerrilla cannot ever reveal his activity to anyone, since this information is always only necessary for those known to be in the counter insurgent, counter revolutionary ORGANIZATION in which he is participating. This counter insurgent must be extremely observant and well informed about everything, particularly about the movements of the revolutionaries, and he must be very inquisitive and knowledgeable about the area in which he lives, operates, or travels through.

Fundamental characteristics of the insurgent revolutionary urban guerrilla are that he is a man who fights with weapons. Under these circumstances, there is very little likelihood that he will be able to follow his normal profession for long without being identified. It is impossible for the revolutionary urban guerrilla to exist and survive without fighting to expropriate whenever and whatever he can. Therefore, when the revolution becomes a matter of armed resistance and subversion of the establishment government it points the revolutionary toward two essential objectives:

- The physical elimination of the leaders and assistants of the armed forces and the police.
- The expropriation of government resources and the wealth belonging to the rich businessmen, the large landowners and small expropriations used for the sustenance of the individual guerrillas.

Understanding these necessities for the revolutionary's survival the counter insurgent clandestine guerrilla must devise ways to covertly hinder these objectives and, when possible, eliminate the revolutionary leadership. It is essential for every revolutionary urban guerrilla to be indoctrinated thoroughly to believe that he can only maintain his existence if he is able to kill the police and those dedicated to what the revolution considers repression, and that he must be determined to expropriate the wealth of the rich businessmen, landowners and governmental sources. Today those in control of the government of the United States have been functioning as clandestine operators using false disasters related to such things as the CCP Wuhan Virus and other natural disasters to control the movement of the people and degrade the financial and economic system of this nation to the point of certain collapse. This is being exposed today for what it has been under Mr. Trump and Mr. Musk. This is the fundamental of the Revolutionary Guerrilla Warfare in destroying and replacing the establishment system of government and economics in this nation which was being accomplished by those in control of the government itself rather than the overt Guerrilla Warriors. This is the unconventional clandestine guerrilla war of the 21st century in the United States of America.

By systematically destroying the wealth of the people, revolution is able to hit them at their vital center, with preferential and systematic attacks on the financial system and by providing government subsidies to make the people more lethargic and more dependent on the government for their support this makes them RIPE for indoctrination and, therefore, inclusion into the revolution network. It is the firmly established purpose of the revolution in usurping the establishment oriented government to have those men of government who support establishment functions in the United States of America pay with their lives for the crimes they are supposed to have committed against the people in maintaining gross INEQUALITY in the nation. The number of violent actions carried out by revolutionary urban guerrillas, including executions, explosions, seizures of weapons, ammunition and explosives, assaults against private citizens and property, etc., is significant enough to leave no room for doubt as to the actual aims of the revolutionaries. Anyone with any common sense can see that America is in a full clandestine revolutionary war and that this war will inevitably be overtly waged by violent means. The revolutionary urban guerrilla uses armed struggle, and will ultimately concentrate his efforts on the physical extermination of the agents of what he deems to be repression, and to dedicate 24 hours a day to expropriations from what he considers the people's exploiters.

Technical Preparations

The urban guerrilla, therefore, the clandestine counter insurgent warrior MUST pay particular attention to technical preparation. The clandestine counter insurgent warrior must maintain good physical conditioning and learn how to fight armed and unarmed as this is a focus of the guerrilla. Hunting, Fishing, Climbing, etc., along with land navigation are also skills necessary when logistics inevitably fail. There must be some knowledge of electricity, electronics, radio, and many other areas which are studied and used by the Guerrilla. There should be some basic knowledge of explosives and incendiaries and their effective use. Every imaginable field of deceitfulness and destruction will be pursued by the Guerrilla Insurgent and Therefore, MUST be understood by the clandestine counter insurgent warrior as well. It is essential that the counter insurgent warrior NEVER underestimate the intelligence or motivation of the insurgent guerrilla he is in opposition to.

Marksmanship Essentials

This preparation begins with the development of precise shooting techniques to be used, when necessary, in order to avoid waste of ammunition. The ideal weapon for the Guerrilla is the light SMG (Sub Machine Gun), being easy to shoot, control and conceal and these today come in a large variety of models and calibers. Today the standard handgun is the 9mm semi auto pistol also in many designs and capacities and BOTH must be mastered. For the clandestine counter insurgent weapon choice is dependent on availability of both the weapon and sufficient ammunition. It is possible that in high pressure insurgency that the guerrilla will be establishing a means of manufacturing or stealing weapons but it is difficult for him to acquire and use long weapons since they are too obvious and hard to conceal. The same applies for clandestine counter insurgent organizations. However larger caliber rifles for hunting and the antique Mauser and other types of bolt rifles are often considered valuable to both of these groups. In addition shotguns are a good guerrilla weapon and can be used basically by anyone and a short barreled shotgun is ideal as a close quarters weapon. Guerrilla and Counter Insurgent tactics must incorporate the principles of Shoot and Move constantly with emphasis on conservation of ammunition. The function of insurgency by the Guerrilla depends greatly on shooting and killing those he sees as the enemy, therefore, the counter insurgent must be a very skilled marksman to counter this effort. Also, there is the necessity and there must be the ability to clean, carefully maintain in every way and even repair weapons for both the Guerrilla and the Counter Insurgent Warrior.

Organizational Groups

The Guerrilla is organized basically into small groups which may be called firing groups or fire teams. The Firing Group is composed of 4-5 men and 2 separated, segregated groups controlled by 1 or 2 men is a firing team. These groups are controlled by the best shot and best tactician. They plan and execute their plans and correct and learn from their tactical mistakes and improve constantly. The counter insurgent when involved in guerrilla tactics must perform in the same manner but hopefully to a higher level. These guerrilla firing groups and teams can act independently or under strategic command structures and carry out any acts of terrorism, robbery, theft, kidnapping, execution, assassination, and especially propagandizing at any level. It is the OBLIGATION of the firing group to take action. Any individual urban

guerrilla can form a firing group and go into independent action without waiting for orders from above. The objective is to wear out the enemy in any and every way possible. Thus, the clandestine counter insurgent is in the same category and must be able to function independently to a great extent in order to overcome the small group tactics of the guerrilla using his own tactics and strategies for fatiguing that enemy while maintaining an allegiance to a larger ORGANIZATION aiming to restore the legitimate governmental system of his nation.

Logistics

Strategies and tactics for the Insurgent Guerrilla and for the Counter Insurgent warrior are vastly different from those needed by a conventional army. The focus for the Guerrilla is on mobility, finances, weapons, ammunition and explosives. The status is precarious for both in the beginning until forces grow and are built up around a support structure in any particular local. The support for both insurgent and counter insurgent, unless otherwise funded from outside sources, must come from the ability of the small group to take whatever it needs whenever it needs it. Weapons, ammunition, money, fuel, vehicles must be taken whenever they are available and within reach. Ambushing unsuspecting units is an ideal way to accomplish this and build up greater internal independent logistical support. Development of support from the resident population is an essential for the counter insurgent as well.

Guerrilla Tactics for Insurgents and Counter Insurgents

- Aggressively Offensive in nature and NEVER a defensive tactic but willing and ready to move from any area at any time to another to continue to fight.
- Aggressive Attacks then rapid withdrawal to preserve forces; “He who fights and runs away lives to fight another day”.
- The aim and focus is to distract, demoralize and fatigue the enemy whether they be conventional military units or insurgent guerrillas of an anti-establishment government.
- To concentrate an attack and know the terrain, have the greatest mobility and speed of movement, have excellent intelligence, exercise decisiveness, aggressiveness and control to stun the enemy.
- Knowledge of the enemy’s position and strengths from observation and precise intelligence gathering is essential.
- Use of Surprise to cause confusion and disrupt the enemy routine and system.
- Save and conserve forces by using rapid attacks in surprise and rapid withdrawals.
- Determine the best time and place for attack.
- Establish the duration of the attack ahead of time.
- Set specific objectives for the attack.
- Establish several means of withdrawal as contingent escape methods.

In urban settings as well as rural settings the counter insurgent guerrilla must know the area very well and have spent significant time and effort scouting it and learning the ins and outs of structures and passages including the best areas for ambush and placing of weapons or ammunition resources. Launch points for attacks must be a distance from the centers of enemy control to facilitate withdrawal and escape after engagement. Whenever possible communication functions of the enemy must be disrupted. In any areas where pursuit by

vehicle is anticipated the use of stolen vehicles can be used in apparently coincidental accidents to slow traffic. Roadway obstruction with trees and rocks can also be effective when available along with false traffic signs and false detours to dead ends although this would be more difficult today with the advent of GPS mapping. IED usage, Molotov cocktails and high caliber weapons to shoot the motors and tires of pursuing vehicles. Today, with the use of armored vehicles by police and military, the development and use of homemade thermite devices to disable vehicles is also a viable potential. The primary objective of the counter insurgent guerrilla is to attack and withdraw as rapidly as possible and keep repeating this for a prolonged period to wear out the anti-establishment enemy whether they be conventional or insurgent guerrillas.

Chances of success increase directly with the number of counter insurgents fighting against an oppressive government or insurgent conventional or guerrilla organization. False information and disruptive propaganda are excellent means of combating an established enemy or insurgent organization. In both the case of the insurgent organization whether conventional or guerrilla and the existing or usurping anti-establishment government the people generally hate the injustices and violence being perpetrated on the public and will provide a great source of information for the counter insurgent organizations. It is imperative to remember that insurgency depends on the use of terrorism to subdue the population and gain their support and in order to convert them to the support of the counter insurgent organization their protection must be guaranteed at all costs. Along with this the counter insurgent like the insurgent guerrilla is dependent on the eventual development of an organized and effective intelligence organization to determine the strengths and weaknesses of the enemy and this is totally dependent on the resident population. Also, a counter intelligence or counter espionage organization must eventually be formed to root out spies and informers and to eliminate them permanently. In the execution of plans and tactics the counter insurgent must be decisive and act resolutely and with determination so that the principle of “He who hesitates is Lost” must be paramount in the thinking of the counter insurgent guerrilla. The secret to success is to rely on determined dedicated men and not involve irresolute individuals.

The Objectives

It is the objective of the counter insurgent to threaten the financial, industrial, political, economic, military and police complexes of the anti-establishment government or similar support structures for the insurgent conventional or guerrilla organizations. Security systems must be weakened or destroyed so that immobile enemy forces can be forced into defensive postures. Attacking strategic nerve centers to maximize disruption and instill the fear of constant attacks is a critical tactic. When attacking the use of several small, armed groups to create an impossible situation for effective pursuit or defense maximizes effectiveness. The systems to be used include:

- Assaults – the armed attacks to expropriate funds, liberate prisoners, capture weapons, ammunition and explosives. They can occur either in broad daylight or at night, but daytime assaults are only made when the objective cannot be achieved at any other hour. Night assault is the most advantageous because conditions for a surprise attack are most favorable and darkness facilitates escape and hides the identity of the participants.

The most vulnerable targets for assaults include:

- Credit establishments
- Commercial and industrial enterprises for the sale or manufacture of weapons and explosives
- Military establishments
- Commissaries
- Police stations
- Jails
- Government property
- Mass communications media systems
- Government vehicles, including military and police vehicles, trucks, armored vehicles, money carriers, trains, ships, and airplanes
- When assaults are used the addition of immediate propaganda regarding the purpose and necessity of the assault must be employed as well as propaganda distribution after the assault has occurred. Unnecessary violence must always be avoided and innocent civilian involvement as victims of the attacks must be minimized.
- Raids & Penetrations – these are rapid attacks on establishments located in neighborhoods or in the center of a city
 - Small military or police units
 - Commissaries
 - Hospitals
 - Garages and depots
 - Specific houses, offices, archives
 - They are for the purpose of:
 - Causing trouble
 - Seizing weapons
 - Punishing and terrorizing the enemy
 - Making reprisals
 - Rescuing wounded prisoners
 - Rescuing those hospitalized under police guard
 - Destroying vehicles
 - Damaging installations
 - Capture secret papers, plans & documents to prevent execution, use for propaganda to denounce deals and compromises, to expose corruption of men in government
 - Raids in distant locations can serve to force the enemy to move great numbers of men and material to distant locations, a totally useless effort, so that when they get there, they will find nobody to fight. Raids and penetrations are most effective if they are carried out at night.
- Occupations – are a type of attack carried out when the urban guerrilla stations himself in specific establishments or locations, for a temporary action against the enemy or for some propaganda purpose. It may involve the occupation of factories, schools or today in the United States of America segments of cities and college campuses and is a method

of protest or of distracting the enemy's attention. Occupation of radio stations is for propaganda dissemination purposes. In all cases of occupation, in order to prevent losses of material and damage or destruction of forces, a meticulous plan for the potential of forced withdrawal must be in place and executed at the most opportune moment without hesitation. By their very nature occupations have a time limit and must be completed swiftly.

- Ambushes – are attacks typified by surprise, when the enemy is trapped on a road or when he is forced by a false alarm to make an enclosing net surrounding a house or estate.
 - The principal object of the ambush is to capture enemy weapons and to punish him with death. Ambushes to halt passenger trains or other mass transit systems are used for propaganda purposes, but when they are troop transport systems the object is to annihilate the enemy and seize his weapons.
 - The sniper is the kind of fighter especially suited for ambush because he can hide easily in the irregularities of the terrain, on the tops of buildings and construction sites where he can take careful aim at his chosen targets.
 - Ambush has devastating effects on the enemy, leaving him unnerved, insecure and fearful.
- Street Tactics – are used to fight the enemy in the streets, utilizing the participation of the population against him. This has been successfully used in the United States of America today by mass riots and mass marches which are anything but peaceful. They may consist of:
 - The construction of barricades
 - Throwing bricks, stones, bottles, paperweights and other projectiles at police or the enemy from the top of buildings
 - Using buildings and other structures for escape or hiding and for supporting surprise attacks

It is especially necessary for the counter insurgent to know how to respond to these and other insurgent enemy tactics. When the enemy wears body armor then understanding the limitations of that armor which is being used is essential and one group must attack from the front and another from the rear focusing on vulnerable areas and each withdrawing as the other goes into action. When tactics are used by the enemy to detain an apparent leader of a counter insurgent group, others must surround the detaining men and beat them and disarm them allowing the prisoner to escape. Enemy nets can only be defeated by knowing the area to be surrounded and escape routes unknown to the enemy. Roadways must be mined in order to block enemy transport to or from an area. Hidden snipers and / or counter insurgents will be very successful in causing losses among the enemy when used judiciously in counter offensive tactics.

- Strikes and Work Stoppages – are tactics frequently used by insurgent guerrillas to disrupt work and education systems and often begin with demonstrations and marches

and ends with sit ins and outright strikes where relief is prevented from being engaged for continued work or learning to occur.

- Very often strikes are initiated in multiple locations or the instigators once the effort has begun simply move to another location to begin all over again. Today in 2025, in the United States of America, the Labor Unions involving Auto Makers and Dock Workers have been planning a universal strike for some time in the next year or so and are arranging their new contracts so that they all expire in the same time frame. These are insurgent guerrilla tactics being used to seize power in industry and eventually government through mass influence of workers.
- This is often used in guerrilla tactics to distract from the objective of raiding or capturing prisoners or enemy combatants. Counter Insurgents must not permit these to occur unopposed and they must be stopped in their initial stages.
 - Infiltration and disruption by counter insurgents are ideal ways to thwart the actual purpose of this tactic.
- Desertions & Diversions – these are employed by individuals sympathetic to the insurgent or counter insurgent efforts and occur in conventional support organizations like the military or police at any level. These sympathetic individuals may be called on to desert when timing is most opportune for their desertion to be effective.
 - Desertion should always occur when the deserter can take with him weapons or other materiel needed by the guerrilla organizations. When the opportunity exists these sympathetic clandestine guerrillas will use the time to acquire as much in the way of weapons, ammunition and technology as is possible.
 - When there is no opportunity to procure weapons or ammunition the sympathizer should resort to sabotage in any way possible.
- These methods are some of the best ways of fatiguing and demoralizing the enemy. These tactics must be used by the clandestine counter insurgent guerrilla against guerrilla insurgents and / or anti-establishment sitting government organizations in order to RESTORE the government to its intended focus on the Laws of Divine Establishment when necessary and possible.
- Liberation of Prisoners – this is very often a major objective of the insurgent guerrilla when members of the organization have been captured and / or incarcerated. When insurgent guerrilla members are captured they should be rapidly tried for treason and executed immediately upon conviction to limit the possibility of their being liberated by their fellow insurgents. This is the stupidity of incarceration in areas like Guantanamo for Terrorists.
 - Liberation of prisoners especially leaders will be the motivation for raids against law enforcement or military installations where prisoners are kept. Therefore, insurgent guerrilla fighters should be eliminated rather than taken prisoner to avoid the development of this motivation in the insurgents.
 - Counter insurgent guerrilla fighters should not take prisoners but eliminate insurgents up to the highest levels whenever possible.
- The methods which may be used for the liberation of prisoners by counter insurgents

include:

- Riots in prisons, internment camps, on transport or ships
 - Raids against transport and communication systems
 - Raids or Riots against military and police systems
 - Raids or Riots against businesses and property which support the enemy
- Sabotage – will be used by the insurgent guerrilla whenever possible to have an endangering effect on the economic, law enforcement, military and governmental systems which they oppose. These will also be the needed tactics of the counter insurgent whenever possible and have a potential for disruption of the insurgent plans and functions.
 - These efforts should be wide spread and extremely varied against all aspects of enemy activity and the same tactics must be instigated against these insurgents by clandestine counter insurgent guerrillas including:
 - Financial systems
 - Electronic hacking at the highest levels to cause infrastructure and communication stoppages, the potential which has been clearly established by the Chinese against the United States
 - Sabotage of railways, roadways, tunnels, industry, all transportation systems
 - Oil and fuel depots
 - Etc.
 - Terrorism – is a primary weapon of Insurgency in “modern warfare” and is successfully used today by many insurgent guerrilla groups, often times for truly unknown reasons, but generally to intimidate and thus gain the needed support of the people by the insurgents.
 - The perpetrators MUST be found and publicly executed to even have a minor effect in preventing public support of the insurgents and to prevent it occurring on a wide spread basis. Therefore, counter insurgent organization must establish confidence in the people in their area and do what ever is needed to protect them against this terrorism.
 - Most often this involves use of explosives which cause an exceptional amount of physical damage and death generally focused against civilians by the insurgents.
 - When used by counter insurgent clandestine guerrillas this effort should be limited in application to just the enemy and his locations and installations whether they be anti-establishment governmental and military locations or the insurgent guerrilla camps and transportation systems.
 - These efforts can also include public executions and assassinations to instill FEAR in those who would be chosen to replace the ones executed especially when it involves insurgent anti-establishment government officials.
 - Generally when assassination is used the highest leader is not the one targeted but the one in a secondary position of support for the leader and then anyone chosen to replace that person. By this means the leader is NOT made into a martyr and it becomes very difficult to find someone to replace the one assassinated eventually

destroying the integrity of the organization.

- Informational Propaganda – this is the result of the media attention given to insurgent guerrilla activities when they have become wide spread throughout the country.
 - Just consider the media attention given in this 21st century to Antifa and Black Lives Matter organizations in their insurgent guerrilla tactics used during demonstrations, marches, and riots when they have destroyed private property and murdered innocent individuals.
 - Today propaganda can be circulated in print but is more effective when the electronic media is used to distribute information across a wide-ranging spectrum of the people using Email, Social Media postings, Cellular Phone networking or Internet Page establishment.
 - The use of radio broadcasting using short wave systems which must remain mobile to avoid detection and elimination is also effective.
- These same systems must be effectively used against the insurgent guerrilla organizations and the efforts of the insurgents in these areas must be sabotaged by clandestine counter insurgents.

A War of Nerves

Guerrilla Insurgency and Clandestine Guerrilla Counter Insurgency are basically protracted warfare using both overt physical as well as psychological warfare techniques and tactics. In **Psychological Warfare** when there is an anti-establishment government system in operation the government is always at a disadvantage because of having to impose censorship on the media. In this 21st century the media has voluntarily provided censorship against any and all establishment systems of thought and propaganda to aid the anti-establishment government which has arisen in the United States. This control by government or in the case of the major media today inevitably becomes desperate and overreaching with the potential for complete loss of control and exposure at any moment. The counter insurgent organizations which seek to reestablish normal government functions based on the Laws of Divine Establishment must use these same tactics of psychological warfare to combat the Lies of anti-establishment functions with truths, exposure of the lies and misleading concepts regarding those in authority to create an atmosphere of discredit, nervousness, insecurity, uncertainty and ultimately FEAR. Some methods especially for counter insurgent activities against an illegitimate government include:

- Providing false clues or anonymous tips as false violations of laws or rules to Law Enforcement or Military organizations or insurgent guerrillas.
- Allow false plans to fall into the hands of the enemy for deception. (See “Operation Mincemeat” a World War II Film regarding the Invasion of Sicily and Operation Body Guard about the Normandy Invasion)
- Start rumors which cause the government officials to become nervous or uneasy.
- Exploit, both physically and through targeted propaganda, all the corruption, mistakes and failures of the government to force them into demoralizing explanations and justifications.
- Expose violations of human rights, when possible, to any and every INTERNATIONAL organization.

Carrying Out Proper Tactics

It is considered essential for the TRADITIONAL insurgent guerrilla, and therefore also ALL counter insurgent guerrillas, to constantly function under proper and effective non-criminal tactics to be successful. This is today set aside in insurgent urban guerrilla warfare so that criminality and insurgency go hand in hand and civilian populations are targeted constantly to discredit the government in its ability to protect the citizen and draw the people to the insurgent's cause. However, the tactics in counter insurgent counter revolution must be based solidly on the knowledge and use of:

- Investigation and intelligence gathering
- Observation and vigilance
 - The information available must be verified by the most diligent observations
- Reconnaissance or exploration of the terrain
- Study and timing of routes
- Mapping
 - These are essential for the determination and timing of routes and positions
- Mechanization
 - This is an essential factor and must not be left to the end of planning just prior to execution so that the choice and camouflage of vehicles must be carefully considered and then prepared
- Careful selection of personnel
 - This is an absolute essential to avoid using indecisive and uncommitted individuals in any action. When involved in counter insurgency the counter insurgent must understand clearly the absolute total commitment of the insurgent guerrilla to his ideals and actions in order to defeat him.
- Careful selection of firepower
- Study and practice in techniques
- Effective use of cover and retreat
 - Withdrawal procedures must be rigorously planned since the objective of guerrilla tactics is to HIT and RUN; and, there must be several effective plans and means of withdrawal from the area of an action.
- Dispersal
 - There should be several small squads and no large conglomerate of personnel for any action.
- Elimination of evidence
 - All evidence of who or what is involved in any counter guerrilla action must be removed as those involved complete the action and any and all tracking potentials must be distorted or removed as well.
- Rescue of wounded
 - Under no conditions or circumstances should a wounded or disabled counter insurgent guerrilla be abandoned in an action and left in the hands of the enemy. If first aid is needed it should be administered, if possible, immediately; or, an area or mobile system of first aid should be developed and set up as a safe location for moving wounded to for care.

- All locations and materials used for the care of wounded personnel must be completely secret and materials used in the care of the wounded completely removed and destroyed when they have been used.
- Medical supplies should be acquired whenever and however possible and stored for emergency use. When such areas for the use of the counter insurgent are discovered by the insurgent they must immediately be dismantled and the supplies removed and the areas destroyed to prevent the insurgents from reconstituting their fighters when wounded.

It is imperative for counter insurgent guerrillas and clandestine operatives to remember that civilians must be protected but ANY and ALL means of neutralizing or eliminating insurgents is acceptable and honorable so that there is no hesitation to use lying, deceit, torture, murder or any method needed to suppress the insurgents ability to continue to destroy the legitimate function of a nation based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

Security

Security is taken very seriously by insurgent guerrillas and must also be taken very seriously by the counter insurgent fighting them. Clandestine counter insurgents when discovered WILL BE KILLED. Therefore, given the opportunity to eliminate insurgent guerrillas the counter insurgent must never hesitate but do so quickly, efficiently and anonymously by any means available. Whenever possible those in leadership positions or often more effectively those very close to leadership must be eliminated in order to put fear of being chosen as replacements into those who may be chosen. The key to security for both groups is to NEVER commit anything to written form or to destroy all the information received in written form and to NEVER disclose to anyone, one's purpose, true identity, affiliations or location.

The Weaknesses of the Guerrilla

These weaknesses MUST be avoided in the counter insurgent and exploited by the counter insurgent and used to find and eliminate the insurgent guerrilla.

- Inexperience
 - This individual thinks his enemy is stupid and completely underestimates him. He may also overestimate enemy capabilities and become intimidated by them and therefore become indecisive and even paralyzed into a state of inaction.
- Boasting
 - He has to tell someone what he is doing and when it will be occurring.
- Vanity
 - The vain inexperienced insurgent thinks he can solve the problems his revolution is focused on by a single decisive action because of his success in prior limited actions. This often results in his deploying more resources to an action than can be safely committed, setting up the organization for total failure.
- Overestimation of his own strength
 - This results in his becoming involved in actions which he is incapable of completing lacking sufficient resources or ability.
- Rash Actions

- This insurgent loses patience, becomes nervous and emotional being anxious about inaction and throws himself into situations which result in terrible defeat.
- Emotional Motivation
 - When functioning under conditions of Emotional Revolt of the Soul this insurgent persists in attacking the enemy when angry or upset about some situation or defeat having been suffered.
- Spontaneous Activity
 - Failing to properly PLAN and Organize any action.

These seven failures must be avoided by the clandestine or overt counter insurgent guerrilla when he is functioning against an insurgent, whether it is a guerrilla organization or an anti-establishment government. In addition the counter insurgent must strive to cause the insurgent to commit himself to these “sins” of error whenever and as often as possible by constant pressure on his organizational systems. However, again it is imperative for the counter insurgent to understand that generally today the functions of Modern Warfare Insurgent Guerrilla groups are established under a HIGHLY organized system of control to facilitate their ultimate victory, which they envision will occur after a very prolonged period of fighting.

Popular Support

One of the permanent concerns and essential needs of the insurgent guerrilla is his identification, true or false, with popular causes to garner public support. When government actions become inept and corrupt, the insurgent guerrilla should not hesitate to step in and show that he opposes the government, and by this means gain popular sympathy. This is also an essential tactic for the clandestine and guerrilla counter insurgent against the organization of the insurgents. The true leaders in insurgent guerrilla warfare are a small nucleus of individuals who have been totally indoctrinated and disciplined with a long range strategy and tactical vision consistent with the application of Marxist theory, Leninism, and its Castro-Guevara developments, applied to the specific conditions of the situation they fight. In the beginning of development insurgent guerrilla warriors and counter insurgents as well are the men and women chosen who are workers; normal individuals, whom the city has attracted as a market for manpower and employment and who return to the small cities and towns across the nation indoctrinated and politically and technically prepared; students, pseudo intellectuals, priests, etc., are all included. Students are noted for being politically crude and coarse breaking all the social taboos. When they are integrated into insurgent guerrilla warfare on a wide scale, they show a special talent for revolutionary violence and rapidly acquire a high level of political-technical-military skill. The pseudo intellectuals constitute the vanguard of resistance to arbitrary acts, social injustice, and any inhumanity of the authority systems of the sitting government. Their communication abilities spread the insurgent revolutionary flame by their great power and influence over people. There are also women who participate in the guerrilla war, and have been marked by an unmatched fighting spirit and tenacity. In the choosing of warriors the guerrilla places women and men on the same par where they will often share the same dangers fighting, rounding up supplies, serving as messengers, runners, drivers, sailors or pilots, obtaining secret information, and helping with propaganda and the task of indoctrination. It becomes an important function of counter insurgency to turn these

groups of individuals back to the support of the legitimate government or eliminate them when possible.

Origins of the Guerrilla Revolutionary

All terrorists are violent revolutionists whether involved in traditional or modern rural or urban guerrilla warfare and they come under the influence of the political contenders that propagandize and brainwash these dupes in their revolution, the pseudo intellectuals, with the idea that violence is ESSENTIAL to make the world a better place for “The Masses”. The criminals and psychopaths use the philosophers or crusaders to provide for them a rationalization for their criminal or psychopathic vengeful and violent actions. This propagandizing thus plays on the guilt of those WHO HAVE, so that they will try anything to give more to those WHO HAVE NOT, completely failing to realize that each individual ever born into this world was given life for the sole purpose of being capable of making his own decisions regarding his successes or failures in this life. The primary and key decisions are either for the Evil of Satan’s plan and policies or decisions for the Grace of God’s Plan and policies based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all human sin. They fail completely to recognize that Freedom is given to mankind in order to allow these decisions but that under a system of freedom man MUST TAKE RESPONSIBILITY FOR ALL HIS OWN DECISIONS. The down trodden must decide to NOT be down trodden and do what is needed to bring themselves up in their societies despite their circumstances. They fail to see that 3rd world nations are in poverty because of universal rejection of the Grace Plan and Policy of God. They fail to see that this also applies to individuals in any society whether it is prosperous or poor.

The pseudo intellectual young students in the prosperous western nations of north America, western Europe and even Japan have been seduced by the GUILT developed from their having great prosperity while seeing the struggles of the people in abject poverty in 3rd world nations. This they were brainwashed and thus deceived into believing was the result of past colonialism by the western nations and their exploitation of these areas of the world for profit. Again failing to see the responsibility aspect of freedom and failing to see the literal millions upon millions of individuals in 3rd world areas who were brought the gospel of Christ and thereby made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and now reside face to face with the Lord in heaven. In “The Wretched of the Earth” by the Marxist, Frantz Fanon a completely disoriented and disillusioned black psychiatrist in Algeria, who himself was not a violent man, wrote: “violence alone, violence committed by the people and educated by its leaders, makes it possible for the masses to understand social truths and gives the key to them”. He viciously set violence up as a means which was beneficial for its own sake as a cleansing force.

Opposing & Defeating Insurgent Guerrillas

It is essential for counter insurgent organizations to understand the need for clandestine infiltration of the insurgent guerrilla groups, and also the extreme danger of doing so. These insurgent organizations are constantly on the lookout for infiltrators, saboteurs and spies, therefore this function by counter insurgents is extremely precarious. It is essential for the counter insurgent organization to understand the principles of Modern Warfare Insurgent

Guerrilla functions and to use any and all of them whenever possible to prevent the successful completion of insurgent guerrilla actions and thwart insurgent guerrilla tactics by using their own strategies and principles against them. The study of guerrilla warfare tactics and procedures is essential when there is to be involvement in counter insurgent, overt or clandestine, guerrilla opposition to revolutionaries or insurgents; or even when needed against an anti-establishment government. It would be extremely advantageous to study the work, “Modern Warfare, A French View of Counterinsurgency” by Roger Trinquier (26) to gain the insight of a french military officer who fought against insurgent guerrilla organizations in several areas of the world and then studied and analyzed the methods used by them and needed to be used to defeat them.

Counter Insurgency

If the revolution, which is currently occurring in the United States of America today, is to be defeated the people, the Military and Law Enforcement organizations must begin to fight with the principles of Clandestine and Guerrilla warfare against the insidious destruction of the American constitution and federal government by liberal socialism in this nation. The revolutionaries are following a devious insidious plan and in fact are using the principles of Modern Warfare as defined by Trinquier (26), against the systems of this nation. The flattery of deception always succeeds against the Arrogance of Ignorance. If one is entangled in Arrogance with ability, genius or talent he is weak not strong and his assets are neutralized. Once the system of arrogance is accepted it is the end for this person since arrogance will destroy all his ability, genius and talent. In effective deception, whether of insurgency or of counter insurgency, the best lies always have the environment of truth attached to them. This must be turned against the revolutionaries in this nation today. The principle is that inevitably the person to whom one tells the Lie will pick up the true part and assume that the whole thing is truth. This is what is needed today by those who must fight and defend our nation from the Evil both within and outside its borders. This is counter insurgency. The counter insurgent involved in clandestine operations when lying must be noble and honorable using lies, deception and exploitation of every perceivable weakness of the liberal insurgent enemy. He must gain the confidence of the leadership of the revolution and must do it legitimately. These are the lies of patriotism which are honorable and do not have to be confessed by the believer as sin. No insurgency has a full fledged revolutionary army at the beginning of the revolution, and what it has is basically incapable of battle en mass so this is when it is most vulnerable. In the counter insurgent functions of counter revolutionaries it is not only how one functions conventionally in engagements with the enemy but how great the insidious problems are that he causes for the enemy. For the counter revolutionary to be able to convert a revolution into a civil war is a triumph for establishment forces. One system of counter attack is based on the principle that “the Voice of the People is the voice of God”; Voces Populii Voces Dei, which is a totally FALSE principle founded at least 800 years before the Romans set forth this concept and it was used in counter insurgency. The counter insurgent must gain the trust of the people and instigate the people to voice their support of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions to thwart the efforts of the liberal insurgent revolutionary.

Being set up as a constitutional republic the people in the United States of America must begin to understand that all republics tend to become arrogant and degenerate and become democracies. Democracy is unequivocally the WORST form of organized government and in reality is simply a thin facade covering a trend toward Anarchy which is NO government. One weakness of a republic is the assumption that because of any past successes and greatness it will remain a great nation. When entangled in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) the people of a nation become vulnerable to the concept of Vocs Populii Vocs Dei. This is used by insurgents to sway a weak government to liberal action and must be used by counter insurgents to oppose this very function. This is clearly demonstrated today by constant media interviews with the absolute dumbest people of society or societies entertainers to get their 'opinions' about things they have absolutely no understanding of. This is one of the oldest systems for the exploitation of weakness that exists in a degenerating nation and there is only one thing more nauseating than a person exploiting arrogance in an individual and that is the exploitation of the arrogance of a group. The truth of the principle is found in Vocs Et Pritea Nihil, the voice of the people, the opinion of the people is a voice and nothing else.

Counter Insurgency Principles

The United States lost the Vietnam war was because of inflexibility and the adherence to a scale of values necessary for normal times of life and conventional warfare. As a result it failed miserably in counter insurgency and counter intelligence, essential functions in the Vietnam war which was a Modern Guerrilla war. All War especially counter insurgency, counter guerrilla and clandestine war requires that the individual warrior possess a completely different set of Norms and Standards and Scale of Values which are essential during both wartime and revolution. Humility and Flexibility must be a major part of what is to be done in war and must include effective counter insurgency and counter intelligence. When involved in any combative conflict, winning the war is the most important part of any fight. In conventional war the soldier must set aside the drawing room system of values for the set of values which are based on KILLING THE ENEMY.

When properly used in waging conventional or Guerrilla war a small band of Guerrilla counter insurgents can hold 10 to 20 divisions in an area where there is no one to fight. Effectively gathering intelligence using counter intelligence, insurgency and counter insurgency functions forms the greatest science for winning war originating more than 3000 years ago. An incredible example of this is the Russian KGB which infiltrated every major intelligence organization in the western world in 10 years. When one is opposed to an illegitimate government, counter insurgency and Guerrilla warfare is the only way to defeat them but it requires dedication, persistence and development of an ORGANIZATION, taking a very long time. In these areas of war there must be a scale of values which will exploit the weakness of others IN EVERY WAY POSSIBLE. The clandestine warrior must Lie and use every system of deception which ever existed and still maintain his spiritual status and this takes a solid standing in Spiritual Maturity. By all means, the most effective system of war, clandestine counter insurgency, is by far the most difficult of all systems of fighting in war. For the clandestine warrior there is no glory and no public recognition with the possible exception of

the public crucifying these counter insurgent agents after they have done an honorable job.

There also must be 2 sets of standards or 2 Scales of Value in any system of warfare so that the standards of normal peacetime life must be set aside for those of fighting in conventional war which are also vastly different than the standards for fighting in overt or clandestine counter insurgent, counter revolutionary and guerrilla war. There is no place for establishment functions in a revolutionary government therefore, when dealing in opposition with a revolutionary government one must also move into using a scale of values of NON-Establishment functions. Acceptable practices include assassinations, violence, deceptions, sabotage and require extreme cleverness and if one is to win the war of clandestine counter insurgency he will use any means possible to neutralize every brilliant tactic and strategy of any well organized conventional army or Guerrilla organization. Clandestine, counter insurgent Guerrilla warfare functions are the dirtiest type of fighting there is but this is the only realistic way to fight revolutionaries and insurgent Guerrillas. Therefore, the reality is that clandestine counter insurgency functions cannot be used with white glove ethics. (26) A RIGHT cause is worth living for and dying for and the clandestine warrior, like Houshai of King David's Counter Revolutionary effort, will live under a scale of values different from any other scale of values based on morality, and this must be understood by the believer because it is derived from the word of God. On the other hand, anything not worth dying for is not worth living for. If one lives for a principle or cause then he must have the flexibility and humility to function under that cause in some of the most dirty work imaginable. The test of life and its true worth is whether one is willing to and motivated to die for what he believes. Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must decide if they are willing to take risks, be flexible and adopt a new scale of values to support their beliefs based on the authorization of the Word of God. The counter insurgent Clandestine and Guerrilla warrior must be flexible in order to enter into counter insurgency and must therefore be willing to change his scale of values to one focused on eliminating the enemy in any way possible. If the believer is not willing to die for what God has provided for him then he is not qualified to live under the right or proper scale of values and functions of these provisions. Until believers solve the problem of the fear of death in their life they are not oriented to life and have no scale of values which gives humility and flexibility in time of disaster. Believers MUST lose their cowardly fear of death because this results in complete lack of capacity for living. The true concept is that "The coward dies many deaths the brave man dies but once". When involved as a warrior in conventional, guerrilla, clandestine, counter insurgent or insurgent war believers must always remember [Ps 33:16-22](#), which clearly indicates that believers will be kept safe by the Lord by means of his Logistical Grace support in all situations and conditions. Until the Lord decides, life will continue and death cannot touch a believer and he MUST know this and apply it to have capacity for living life. For those not oriented to death, not having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, national disaster results in soul torment and disorientation to life. In time of disaster a family may have to move from place to place but if they have Bible Doctrine there is no disruption of their life. Therefore, ALL believers must have 2 scales of value, one for times of prosperity, one for times of disaster. They must be able to enjoy life and social position in prosperity but then in disaster they must be able to walk out on all the material things they have accumulated throughout their life in

prosperity by their functioning under humility, integrity and honor. Believers must be prepared to fight in every possible way to secure freedom and restore the establishment function of the client nation to God.

One of the greatest dangers to any establishment oriented nation is the individual involved in Crusader Arrogance which is the greatest enemy of freedom. Any time crusaders are appeased there is a destruction of options under freedom. Therefore, both the Criminal and the Crusader are 2 of the greatest enemies to freedom there is in existence. The United States lost the Korean, Vietnam and Afghanistan wars because of crusader arrogance and as a nation have not ever been able to think in terms of having 2 diametrically opposed sets of standards for peace and war. In addition to protect the freedom of the nation there must be one standard for conventional functions for Law Enforcement to fight crime and the Military in conventional warfare with these functions based on Honor, Duty, and Country, SEMPER FIDELIS. Etc. However, in both Law Enforcement and the Military clandestine or undercover agents must lie, cheat, steal, solicit and in fact do any thing needed to find and destroy the criminal in the nation and the enemy outside the nation. This is the most difficult function in both Law Enforcement and / or the Military and these men must do things which violate their personal standards and code of ethics for normal times and must do so while maintaining their personal honor and integrity. The bottom line is that in WAR the warrior must be willing to LIE and DECEIVE in order to find and KILL the enemy whether the war is within the nation against criminals or outside the nation against opposing national forces. This is the “Secret War” and whatever is needed to win this secret war is what MUST be done whether it is conventional or Guerrilla war and thus preserve freedom and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions functions in the nation. Standards of self righteousness and morality must, at times, be abandoned in order to win this type of war and this type of fighting, behind the scenes, requires great flexibility.

The believer has to develop and then use these 2 sets of standards and be able to switch from one for normal peace time to the other in time of war. He must be able to operate under humility, flexibility and objectivity and must be able to leave his home and possessions and never whine or complain about it. A mature believer must be able to enter into counter intelligence and counter insurgency and KILL, LIE AND CHEAT and do everything which is considered sinful in normal times, in the effort to restore or preserve the client nation. These functions are NOT immoral or sinful and believers must understand that it is not “murder” to kill the enemy in war nor to execute the criminal. There must be 2 standards for living in these antithetical situations, both derived from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In conventional war the soldier is to shoot and kill the enemy in battle however possible but during peace time one does not kill those he is angry with. In peace time one acts with specific moral standards but in war, especially, when involved in clandestine intelligence service and functioning in counter insurgency, he MUST drop these normal moral fair play standards and do whatever is needed to survive and to find and subvert or thwart enemy plans and kill as many of the enemy as he can destroy.

There are 2 categories of people, inclusive of believers, in any client nation:

- Those who have 2 scales of value and are able to switch from one to the other when needed
- Those who cannot leave their conventional or normal scale of values and when disasters occur they perish

Most disasters occur in a person's life because of his having only one scale of values for every situation and circumstance he encounters. This occurs because of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which has one scale of values for everything and all things are established as either black or white and right or wrong and as a result this one will not survive when he needs to change his values. Believers as soldiers or as counter insurgent Guerrillas must be able to use a "dirty" standard when they engage in warfare in order to overcome the enemy and then leave this behind when he obtains victory. The Warrior must at all costs avoid Evil functions in order to prevail and preserve freedom in the client nation but this does not mean he cannot use anything at his disposal to destroy the enemy.

The Format for Intrigue

Intrigue involves LYING, CHEATING, STEALING, KILLING AND EVERY LEVEL OF UNDERHANDED DECEIT. Therefore, lying and deceit are the strategic environment for counter insurgency. At it's best counter insurgency is dirty work involving, Torture, Murder, Lying, Deceit, and essentially exploitation of EVERY CONCEIVABLE HUMAN WEAKNESS and VANITY to neutralize the enemies strengths. Therefore counter insurgency is a contradiction of individual characteristics in the operative requiring on the one hand loyalty, honor, moral courage, integrity, humility and flexibility while on the other hand requiring lying, immorality, intrigue, deceit and absolute total ruthlessness. The contradiction of prerequisites often involves the danger to the one in counter insurgency or counter intelligence being very susceptible to becoming a double agent. The counter insurgent always has his own areas where he can be destroyed if they are discovered. If the enemy discovers these areas of weakness, they can be used to convert a counter insurgent to a double agent. To avoid becoming a double agent and traitor to his country the intelligence and counter intelligence agent must have above all else integrity and honor. Thus, the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul is the best qualified person for this work and can fulfill the job without becoming a double agent by relying on the honor and integrity of the soul derived from his resident metabolized bible doctrine. The greater his integrity the more objective he can be in the function of ruthlessness against the enemy.

Insurgency is basically revolution and can be used against one's enemies in their home land or in one's home land against an illegitimate government. However, insurgency used against an illegitimate government in one's own land must not be to overthrow the government but to replace those who are subverting the legitimacy of the government for their own ends. Counter revolutionary activity which deceives and sabotages the leadership or intelligence systems of a revolutionary organization acting in one's own country is counter insurgency. Counter insurgency can take the form of violence, torture, intimidation, murder, assassination, etc., also using ruse and duplicity to neutralize the counsel of a revolutionary leader. Despite all of this the counter insurgent must maintain his integrity and honor. The greatest functions of counter intelligence occurred in the middle ages when Genghis Khan had an incredibly vast intelligence

organization. He was one of the greatest in the function of *intimidation* and would kill thousands and display their corpses to intimidate those thinking of resisting him. This is used in modern warfare techniques to gain the support and protection of the insurgent Guerrillas by the resident population using terrorism in any form. Interestingly this system of intimidation applies very well to criminal activity and the means necessary to control it. In the “Wilderness of Mirrors”, by David C Martin (4); he stated that the great weakness in the United States of America is that the “games of war” are always played fairly and the focus of activity is based on a code for conventional war and this should and can never be used in intelligence, counter intelligence, counter insurgency or counter Guerrilla functions. This viewpoint of the United States of America is based on the involvement of both those in control of the nation and the citizens themselves in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#). Arrogance produces Legalistic Pseudo Moral Self Righteousness which results in having only one set of standards by which to function and is therefore totally inflexible. In “War in the Shadows”, by Robert Aspery (30) he has plainly stated that one WILL lose wars because of arrogance in the people. So long as peasants remain apathetic and / or hostile to their supposed governmental deliverers, the military effort against Guerrillas could never succeed no matter how expansive it would become. This is what occurred in Korea, Vietnam and lately in Afghanistan to the absolute total disgrace of France and later the United States of America. This may be what believers will need to survive and overcome the tyranny occurring from the current controllers in the United States government. The formula for disaster in combat is based on the Arrogance of Ignorance combined with Power Lust Arrogance. The failure of any combat unit against Guerrilla warfare units results from involvement in the Arrogance of Ignorance. The complexities of insurgency must be understood to be able to fight against Guerrillas. (26) Intelligence organizations MUST bring accurate information into play from effective intelligence gathering to solve the combat problems and it must use counter insurgency tactics based on Guerrilla war tactics not just conventional military tactics. The Arrogance of Ignorance, when it comes to the front, will destroy all rational thought. Therefore, there must be careful target selection for success in battle and in insurgency or counter insurgent Guerrilla functions. To counter this if a large number of viable desirable targets are provided for the insurgents it will spread them thin and enable easy destruction of individual units. The saturation of a battle area by conventional military units will damage property, crops and even kill innocent people and thus alienate further the native population and motivate them to provide comfort and support for the Guerrilla enemy. Counter Insurgent Guerrilla tactics must constantly seek and maintain support from and protection of the native population. Quiet areas, militarily, in this type of conflict, are not conquered but become hot bets of resistant political activity and must have counter insurgency and counter intelligence operations functioning in them constantly. In general the government and military of the United States does not have the capacity to function in nor to understand proper counter intelligence or counter insurgency functions and this weakness is being exploited by the black lives matters and antifa revolutionaries and many others in this 21st century. There must be in place alternate standards for fighting war depending on whether it is overt conventional or clandestine or Guerrilla fighting and these standards must be easily set aside during peace time. These principles may have to be thoroughly exploited in order to recover and restore proper constitutional government in this nation by an organized resistance to the revolution in play today.

Believers must have the ability and stability of mentality to operate under a system of dual standards in order to ensure victory over tyranny. When in the military there must be 1 standard for conventional warfare and 1 for clandestine warfare but both must be different from the standards of morality and integrity necessary for living in peace time. All have equal honor and when a person has this understanding they will become the greatest leaders in history. One cannot qualify for greatness in Human History without having the function of genius for situations under all standards. The arrogance of the people of the United States of America is the Arrogance of Ignorance combined with the Arrogance of Power Lust and it can only except one standard for both peace time and also conventional warfare and then apply that to all situations. The system of “fair play” which is held by this country is what has been, and will be if continued, the downfall of all American military operations. However, believers in a resistance must beware of a lack of this weakness in organizations which may be assembled and deployed against the people when they attempt to resist the tyranny developing in the United States. For this reason the United States has been constantly defeated by the communists in Modern Clandestine and Guerrilla war and believers may have to use these same insurgent or Guerrilla tactics to win against a tyrannical government focused on suppression of the people or against insurgent revolutionaries.

Communists encourage ruthlessness in their military organizations and are basically functioning under Evil as seen by their use of ruthlessness in conventional warfare. The same is basically true of oriental military organizations demonstrated by the Chinese, Japanese and Koreans. There is never an excuse for this type of ruthlessness toward civilian populations in conventional warfare. However, the believer must recognize that HONOR belongs in the drawing room and in one's personal life but if the enemy is to be vanquished, then anything goes. The Arrogance of Ignorance plus the Arrogance of Power Lust have combined to destroy the humility and flexibility needed to be successful in secret service work in the United States. Intelligence, counter intelligence, insurgency and counter insurgency demand humility of knowledge combined with humility of power to establish norms and standards for success in this field of warfare. God, himself, in the past through David and his operatives, used counter insurgency and all of its unsavory functions to win the intelligence victory of a great civil war. **(2Sam 17:14)** He would use it again IF there are enough people in the nation who are totally focused on absolute truth in any of the 3 categories which in fact He has given to us. To be great in the nasty field of intelligence the believer must combine Integrity and Honor with lying, deceit, bribing, fabrication, murder, assassination, the facade of stupidity and exploitation of every conceivable weakness and vanity of those he opposes.

Types of Insurgency

The primary principle is that Insurgency which is Revolution is dishonorable and results from Evil while Counter Insurgency which is Anti Revolution is Honorable and results from adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment. All forms of insurgency are different, and differ in their operations and in their origins, development and orientation and cover wide varied areas of activity. The United States has failed miserably in the area between clandestine and conventional warfare in efforts involving counter insurgency. The United States has

repeatedly decided to pull out from various military actions for various reasons without first examining what that pull out will result in over a long period of time. General Maxwell Taylor, former ambassador to South Vietnam, used the early Vietnam War as a laboratory for determining how to conduct counter insurgency and the United States failed miserably. Roger Trinquier (26) analyzed Guerrilla warfare for several decades, beginning prior to 1950, having fought in those types of combat and the necessary means for counter insurgency and presented his efforts to the United States military which again FAILED miserably. Today, the incompetence of American government is again visible plainly in a 2 fold failure:

- Failure to take action against the initial stages of insurgent activities during sit ins and marches which inevitably led to the violence of riots and looting.
- Complicity of those in control of the government with insurgents while the government personnel worked in a clandestine fashion, and in every conceivable way, to set aside the highest law of the land, the United States Constitution.

Although insurgency always occurs with varying level of aggression its ultimate goal is to WIN and remove the resident government and replace it with some form of tyranny under the insurgents. Insurgency ultimately progresses to armed conflict unless the “Legal” or “Parliamentary” methods result in victory and the installment of tyranny in place of the government. However, since the 1940s there has been a shift in the type of WAR which is initially engage in, which Trinquier (26) has termed “Modern Warfare”, which is a form of highly organized Insurgent Guerrilla warfare.

Basic Weapon of Modern Warfare

This is what occurs invariably in “Modern Warfare” situations and can apply to both Guerrilla Insurgency against a nation and Counter Insurgency or Counter Invasion by groups trying to save and preserve the legitimate system of the nation under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The basic weapon of modern warfare, is TERRORISM, supported by an extensive and highly specialized organization in the cities in urban Guerrilla war. In the countryside, it is a type of Guerrilla warfare, which is rooted in terrorism, designed to create a situation favorable to the build-up of a regular army for the purpose of eventually confronting an enemy army on the battlefield and defeating him.

The Goal of Modern Warfare

The goal of the Insurgent Guerrilla, is not so much to obtain local successes as it is to create a climate of insecurity, to compel the forces of order to retire into their most easily defensible areas. (26, 31) This was what the United States Army was caused to in Vietnam constantly. This results in the abandonment of certain portions of territory that the Guerrillas are then able to control. In the beginning the Guerrillas show themselves only in minor but violent actions, which they carry out by surprise but with care to avoid losses. Dispersion is their greatest defense. Their regrouping and ultimate transformation into large, regularly organized units is not possible until they have acquired absolute control of a vast area in which they are able to secure the substantial material aid necessary for the establishment, training, and enlistment of a regular army. The insurgent units in certain regions will need to continue actively as Guerrilla forces wherever the establishment of regular units has not been carried out. Regular units and

Guerrilla bands must cooperate closely to try to bring about a situation favorable to the engagement of the enemy in a decisive fight to annihilate it. The point of counter insurgency is to USE these same principles without alienating the local resident population and by protecting them to turn these tactics against the insurgents. Military outposts, installed at great expense in areas to be pacified, are in general not successful. Often the villages they encompass are as well controlled by the enemy as villages quite distant. {The major American error in Vietnam} The only usefulness of the outposts is the obligation they create for the forces opposing the Guerrilla to maintain them and thus provide great advantage to the Guerrilla.

The Goal of Counter Insurgent Guerrilla War

BOTH the Guerrilla and counter Guerrilla MUST have the support of the population in order to subsist in the field of battle for more than a few days and carry out successful activities. In order to defeat the Guerrilla there must be subtle work with the population and the destruction of the clandestine organization that enables Guerrilla bands to survive despite local defeats. Only a long occupation of the countryside, which will permit police operations among the people analogous to those carried out in the cities, can succeed. It is the essential complete destruction of the enemy's potential for warfare, total and complete disarmament which is the principle objective of fighting any War especially the Guerrilla and it must involve destruction of his organization.

The total dependence upon terrain and population is the Guerrilla's weak point. The counter Guerrilla must endeavor to make him submit, or to destroy him by acting upon, his terrain and upon his support, the population. The Guerrilla often sticks to an area of his choice, he must be engaged there and once that terrain has been occupied, consistent will and patience must be employed to track him down until he has been annihilated. This requires time. He is less of a fighter away from home therefore efforts should be devoted to making him forgo the benefit of his chosen terrain by causing him to leave it. His food supplies which are much more important than his supplies of ammunition must be interrupted by acting favorably on the supporting population in the occupied terrain by destroying the organizational system controlling them. This requires the establishment of a counter or support organization being developed so that the people can defend themselves and supply the counter insurgents with information regarding the insurgents. Therefore there are three simple principles to apply in fighting the Guerrilla:

- Cut the Guerrilla off from the population that sustains him
- Render Guerrilla zones untenable
- Coordinate these actions over a wide area and for a long enough time period, so that these steps will yield the desired results

These counter guerrilla plans which are designed to prevent the formation of guerrilla units or to destroy them if they have been formed, will comprise measures that include political, economic, psychological, administrative, and military functions and these must be prepared and organized at a very high command level.

Since the control of the population is the aim of modern warfare counter insurgency guerrilla

fighting, any element not in direct and permanent contact with the population is useless. In the villages, there are often one or two empty houses, which can be occupied. Other houses for the lodging of the men can be rented from the inhabitants or constructed if necessary. Then there must be organizing of not just the defense of a sole military post, but that of the entire village and its inhabitants, making it a strategic hamlet. A tight, impassable perimeter is created (of barbed-wire, underbrush, various other materials), protected by a few armed blockhouses, manned with automatic weapons and capable of covering the whole perimeter. The inhabitants are allowed to leave the village only by the gates, and all exits will be controlled. They are permitted to take neither money nor supplies with them. No one will be able to leave or enter the village by night. In effect, re-establishing the old system of medieval fortified villages, designed to protect the inhabitants against marauding bands. Therefore, uncontrolled traffic of food or supplies on the main roads must be prohibited in order to cut off the enemy's main sources of supply in a very short time. To succeed, the counter insurgents must receive information only from people who can give information without risk to themselves and therefore must be assured of this indispensable security. Organization and control of the population, and supplementary controls over food, circulation of persons and goods, animals, etc., as well as a flawless intelligence service, must remain in force until peace has been restored to the entire national territory. Any lack of vigilance or premature dismantling of the control system will certainly permit the enemy to recoup lost ground and jeopardize the peace of the sector. This is the historic failure in Vietnam, Algeria, and many other areas of the world governments fighting the insurgency did not want to commit to the costs needed to sustain a long standing organization. Historically repeated failures in counter guerrilla fighting result solely from poor employment of one's resources. In addition the failure to recognize the necessity for the destruction or neutralization of supportive enemy bases on FOREIGN territory is an essential if the end of hostilities is to be hastened and a durable peace ensured.

Justified Killing & Violence

The principles here related to violence apply to situations where a client nation is being attacked by any conventional war systems, revolution, civil war or overt or clandestine guerrilla insurgency so that it then becomes acceptable to function under a system of clandestine counter insurgent Guerrilla warfare with all of its ramifications. **HOWEVER, THIS FUNCTION MUST BE TO PRESERVE THE LEGITIMATE GOVERNMENTAL SYSTEM OF THE NATION AND RESTORE IT TO PROPER FUNCTION NEVER TO DESTROY OR REPLACE IT.** The pivot of mature believers may preserve the nation but when the pivot shrinks to a minimal status of a "remnant" of mature believers, these will be the believers who fight their way out of the disaster through a whole besieging army, or fight over the course of decades in counter insurgency, to be delivered or to restore the client nation to its proper function. (32) Therefore, the use of all forms of violence, deceit and deception to protect the client nation in conventional and clandestine war is completely justified AGAINST THE INSURGENTS when the counter insurgents are involved with an *organization* focused on preserving or restoring the normal functions in the client nation under the Laws of Divine Establishment. The soldier, in his use of violence in whatever theater of war, must be highly trained and must be totally professional in combat and must in all situations avoid violence in any form against the innocent population. This unemotional use of violence prevents the soldier from bringing the violence back with him to

civilian life. Use of violence to control crime through capital punishment and other systems of control of crime is legitimate also and allows the transition between it and peaceful life by Law Enforcement.

Unauthorized & Illegitimate Violence

- Terrorism
- Crime in destruction of another's Volition
 - Murder
 - Kidnapping
 - Rape
 - Drug Pushing
 - Etc.
- Insurgent Revolution

The use of violence by the northern states in 1865 was used allegedly to stop slavery and to expand freedom for slaves but it in fact began the destruction of freedom for all citizens in the United States of America. In addition it is plainly obvious today that it has resulted in the United States consistently losing freedoms since 1865, little by little, until the completely distorted federal government is now trying to take away all freedom. This was allegedly done for freedom but in fact destroyed freedom and as a result Individual States have lost their rights. However, in this 1st part of the 21st century the states are attempting to reassert these rights against the overreaching mandates of the incompetent out of control federal government which has gained unnecessary and unjustified power and authority in all branches. The American founders knew that no government could have such power and maintain freedom and tried to structure the federal governmental system to prevent this but it has been distorted and the constitution almost completely set aside as a guiding law. Therefore, based on the current operation of clandestine and overt insurgency, the future in the United States may hold both clandestine and overt Guerrilla counter insurgency in order to reestablish proper order and function in this constitutional republic. Understanding the Logistical Grace provision from God provides advancing and mature believers with physical courage and the Plan of God provides moral courage in all situations. Killing when fighting to preserve or RESTORE the FREEDOM in the client nation is authorized as is the killing of criminals by execution after conviction in an objective trial. Killing soldiers of an invading army is justified; or criminals when they have been apprehended, tried and convicted under law then immediate execution is the correct function in the client nation to God. In all cases of involvement in clandestine war and counter insurgency killing of those in opposition to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, their function in this effort in the client nation IS JUSTIFIED.

All capacity for life is related to Authority Orientation and any rejection of duly constituted authority is arrogance and the most arrogant people in the world are revolutionists. Arrogance in thinking results in arrogance in action and the arrogant individuals who worm their way insidiously over decades into government will take over a good government and turn it into tyranny. Closely looking at the government of the United States of America since the early 1900s one will find very few exceptions. Revolution is collective arrogance and mutually

destructive arrogance and destroys capacity for life in every area and usually results in the violence of a reign of terror when a revolution is successful. See the Russian, Nazi, Chinese and many other lesser revolutions in history.

However, never forget that justified violence is authorized and legitimate under certain circumstances including:

- Capital Punishment
- Military functions in War to Protect, Preserve or Restore the client nation functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions
 - Overt or Clandestine
 - Conventional
 - Counter Insurgent
 - Guerrilla
- Self Defense

Criminal execution requires violence in the execution not the bleeding heart politically correct gas chamber or lethal injection idiocy practiced today, but electrocution, public hanging, firing squad or best of all drawing and quartering. When the opportunity presents for killing those who oppose the Laws of Divine Establishment and the client nation function the believer must never move into a guilt complex for this function. This must include all those in any way in voluntary support of the enemy. This killing must be on a professional level and a matter of thinking and planning and never emoting but using rational thought to execute a functional plan. Considering professional killing there must be No GUILT and No REGRET. Military personnel are trained to kill and the system is designed to engage them in killing the enemy of the nation without being personal about it, therefore never involved personally with sin, guilt or retribution. Professional soldiers never have problems back in society and if the soldier is very good at killing the enemy he will be honorable and a great asset in society.

However, violence is not justified as sin, any functions under evil, irrationality or insanity, the tool or weapon of politics, threats of or actual revolution or terrorism. When a person has enough volitional function to illegitimately kill someone, and this applies to sane as well as insane individuals, they should be executed immediately after their conviction for their first violation or they will invariably use their volition to kill again. Violence is never justified as intimidation in a political situation. Terrorists who threaten to kill hostages should be pursued and found, and completely annihilated publicly with whatever means needed. For many decades the communists and islamists have used and constantly continue to use this against Americans. The problem today is that most people in the United States do not understand the necessity for 2 systems of Norms and Standards in the life of the person who functions on the battlefield of either Conventional, Guerrilla or Clandestine warfare. This MUST CHANGE if the United States of America is to survive this ongoing revolution.

The people must be conditioned mentally, from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine as the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions or the entire canon of scripture, in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and then face crises without physical or

mental fear. Believers must be able to think and use all of the 5 stages of the [Faith Rest Drill](#) and ultimately reach Doctrinal oriented Divine Viewpoint conclusions regarding whatever situation they are facing. This means that believers must be able to make decisions compatible with the Plan of God and Will of God for their life. No 2 believers should be expected to make the same decisions in crises, some will flee cities and some will stay; some will join counter Insurgent Guerrilla organizations and some will capitulate with tyranny in order to infiltrate it clandestinely. People who are spiritually great will often, immediately after the moment of their greatest success, develop an extreme vulnerability to failure. IF they stabilize in success and maintain it with Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine that vulnerability diminishes. This is the hypersensitivity of vulnerability to success and believers must focus constantly and consistently on Bible Doctrine to overcome this problem. Believers must not ever abuse authority in order to use violence to destroy enemies when they have already defeated them. The mature believer often enters power politics by abusing and distorting the power given to him by his use of violence against already defeated and / or discredited enemies. When the mature believer uses violence to enter the sphere of power politics he makes himself vulnerable to greater intimidation from any greater violence which might exist in the sphere of power politics. Therefore, once the believer resorts to inordinate or unjustifiable violence he will be intimidated by greater violence. However there is a fine line of function here because in order to ensure peace after warfare ALL of the enemy combatants should be annihilated, his ability to wage war made NULL.

However, if one's profession involves killing and he DOES NOT do it, then this believer must confess or acknowledge that failure to God as sin because he is definitely out of line and out of the Plan of God. Annihilation of the enemies of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the client nation to God IS compatible with Bible Doctrine, the plan and policy of God and the Christian Way of Life, and this is NOT murder. Neither within national entities under common law nor between nations during the combat of war. To effectively kill when the Lord commands one to kill is extremely important and there are a number of cases in the bible where these commands were violated to the detriment of the groups not following them. One such situation is the accounts recorded in the [Book of Esther](#). Another strong example of the necessity of annihilation of a group or race of people is demonstrated by one of the most important things to happen to the Human Race, the complete annihilation of the Canaanites. This was a whole race of people who functioned just like those in Sodom but to a far greater extent and when a RACE of people violate to the maximum the 4 Divine Institutions then that race must be destroyed by God lest it subvert and destroy the Human Race and prematurely end the Angelic Conflict Appeal. The Roman destruction of Carthage was the final page of that chapter of history where the Romans completely destroyed Carthage killed or enslaved all the remaining people and SOWED THE LAND WITH SALT so nothing could grow or live there again. However, to kill as an act of terrorism or to murder in crime or with improvised bombs against uninvolved, innocent CIVILIAN populations or to kidnap people or use any violence to gain a point for some anti-establishment cause is a function under the system of EVIL. These functions will move the believer from the Plan of God under pivot politics to the sphere of power politics Satan's system of Evil and lead to his own ultimate destruction.

The Function of Clandestine Counter Insurgency

In clandestine counter insurgency the principle is to use anything available to gain the confidence of the leaders of revolution in order to get close enough to destroy them. This is destroying the enemy by the deception of clandestine warfare and by telling some truth and mixing it with lies the counter insurgent must convince the revolutionary leader that he is loyal. In 1954 General James Doolittle wrote a report to President Eisenhower in which he stated the principles that were needed to be instituted in the United States to fight the clandestine war with Russia. He concluded that the Russians were already winning the clandestine war only 9 years after World War II. The reason was because the United States of America was new at the game of clandestine war, and because it was and still is facing police states where their clandestine systems have been in use for many years, the services were and are still receiving information which falls very short of their needs in intelligence. He recommended the exploration of every possible scientific avenue of approach, the eventual building of a tunnel under the Berlin wall was one such idea. Also, the intensification of counter intelligence operations to prevent, detect or eliminate penetrations into the CIA. He urged the CIA to become more ruthless than the KGB. He understood that the United States could not win the clandestine war, or any war for that matter, by using concepts of the long standing systems of fair play. He recommended that the services of the United States learn to subvert, sabotage, and to destroy its enemies by more clever and sophisticated methods than those used against us. Unfortunately to this very day the United States intelligence organizations have not for the most part followed this report.

The legitimate and effective function of counter insurgency against revolutionists must be the developing of a sophisticated plan, which will not ever work, and selling it to the revolutionary staff. This is what occurs every day in the American bureaucracy functions directed toward the American people. Insurgency == Revolution while Counter insurgency == Anti Revolution. Insurgency is anti-God while any and all functions and aspects of Counter Insurgency are serving God. As with all things under God, when there are men of equal ability, the man with humility WILL always defeat the arrogant man. Humility thinks under pressure while arrogance emotes under pressure. However, thinking requires vocabulary, categorical development and analysis and objectivity so that even in life in general, the older one gets the smarter he SHOULD get, which WILL occur when there is a consistent intake of Absolute Truth as Bible Doctrine. It is an absolute dogmatic principle that the greatest disguise for a LIE is TRUTH. If in telling a lie one can put in any easily recognized truth, then if the hearers are dumb or arrogant enough, they will think the whole lie is truth. By not directly opposing an insurgents plan but by introducing a time element or some other contingency, doubts can be raised about the plan without bringing suspicion on self. When one takes a Lie and dresses it up with bits of truth he has developed extremely effective deception. Most people will see the truth, which has been distorted by the lie, and never penetrate beyond the truth to the Lie. Arrogance has no discernment and it becomes vulnerable to following weakness instead of strength so that Arrogance replaces thought with prejudice. Prejudice produces incompetence and inefficiency. *Clandestine Counter Insurgents must stimulate in their enemies greater arrogance, inculcate greater prejudice, and create chaos and confusion in the revolutionary hierarchy so that their Espionage results in Sabotage.* Nothing appeals more to arrogance than the innuendo that

someone else is more arrogant. The extreme effectiveness of clandestine counterinsurgency is demonstrated when it arouses suspicion against the leadership of an organization while it is appealing to the vanity of those subordinate leaders who totally lack ability or competence in any field of function. The clandestine operations of effective counter insurgency undermine the best insurgent leadership by appealing to the subordinate revolutionist's arrogance which guarantees the appointment of incompetent subordinate leadership. However, no one can ever negate great leadership and must be aware of when it does exist.

Many arrogant people possess a feminine quality that smothers and enslaves everyone in their periphery. It is difficult for anyone of genius category to function under the control of someone susceptible to Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins such as pettiness or jealousy. Arrogance cannot ever assign purity of motivation to others but if one is to function effectively in any organization he MUST trust others to a point. Every person has an Old Sin Nature but many individuals do have honor and integrity and are trustworthy. However, any time a leader is entangled in arrogance he will get rid of the honorable competent people under him, considering them threatening to his position, and replace them with incompetent 'yes' men. The fact is that a leader is no better than the competence of his subordinates so that a leader who is arrogant and suspicious of his subordinates and drives them away or into a shell of incompetence inevitably destroys his own organization. Anyone involved in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) is weak and vulnerable to flattery and always can be encouraged to extend himself beyond his ability. It is the job of the clandestine warrior to stimulate the emotion and arrogance of the revolutionists and revolutionary leaders in order to have them over extend themselves beyond their abilities and use incompetent subordinates. When involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance a person loses his discernment and anyone in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, no matter how great, successful, or intelligent, has a blind side and when this is discovered it can be exploited to their ultimate disaster. Therefore, understanding the function of clandestine war and counter insurgency demonstrates that the implication that victory always goes to the largest or most powerful army is ridiculous to anyone who is a student of strategy, tactics and military history.

Arrogance is vulnerable to manipulation as well as flattery and what starts with flattery inevitably ends in manipulation. Enemy revolutionary leadership must be manipulated by flattery combined with exploitation of such Mental Attitude Sins as jealousy, pettiness and vindictiveness when they are found to exist in the leader. It is an absolute that it is impossible for petty, vindictive individuals to be successful in any level of command. One can either be Humble OR Arrogant and these are mutually exclusive and Arrogance destroys ability, mentality and talent for greatness which is enhanced by true humility. Therefore, Arrogance flaws the person who attains greatness and this flawed person becomes vulnerable and weak and will be destroyed or will destroy himself. When any person with a flawed character appears to be good and is put under pressure where he must make a decision which requires moral courage he is finished as a result of his inability to make effective decisions because of the arrogance of his flawed character. In addition all arrogant people are cowards and when under pressure that is when their cowardice is exposed.

An arrogant person may be physically strong and in a fight he may be courageous but when faced with a greater threat or ability they will then show cowardice. Moral courage is the greatest asset in life under the concept of capacity for life and love. In addition moral courage is one of the greatest virtues in life and it is as great a virtue as arrogance is a destructive force. Arrogance flaws one's character and destroys capacity for life, love and happiness and the ability to command and any form of success or greatness. Arrogance is so powerful that it causes one to make *wrong choices* when faced with *good options*. Once a person begins to function under arrogance he will never make a good decision and every wrong decision he makes destroys his options for future decisions in every area of life. The mission of the clandestine counter insurgent is to discredit and neutralize any genius in leadership of the enemy with lies, deceit, flattery and innuendos, to arouse suspicion, generate unlimited difficulties and dangers, sponsor fear and indecisiveness so that the counter insurgent organization can be victorious. Arrogance present in revolutionary leaders guarantees that when the pressure comes they will crack open and be destroyed.

All revolutionaries once they win some conflict or battle like to stop, pillage, rape, rob, kill and torture the remaining innocent residents in order to completely control them. They then become vulnerable to destruction because of lack of organization and discipline. When someone does something well it always looks easy and arrogance sees someone doing something well and because they make it look easy the arrogant think they can do it equally as well. This was Lucifer in Eternity Past in the throne room of God. Arrogance assumes that everything is easy and clandestine counter insurgents must play on the arrogance of insurgent leaders. To an arrogant person when someone makes something sound easy, then it looks easy because it sounds so easy, and the Arrogant one will attempt it and fall into the trap of deceit. The reality is that anything which is truly easy to accomplish is not worth doing or having. Therefore, lack of integrity and honor and the possession of overriding arrogance are guaranteed disaster for any revolution.

The Divine Application of Clandestine Warfare

Since in clandestine war a different set of Norms and Standards is essential for the clandestine warrior, one in which lying, deceit, torture, intimidation, assassination, etc., are proven, effective standards for fighting the enemy and are legitimate, this very often does not sit right with the Christian who understands these things constitute sin, and basic transgressions of the "RULES" set up by God for man. Activities which are sinful functions in normal life, in any WAR especially counter insurgency must be classified as honorable and patriotic with no loss of spirituality for the believer and no necessity for concern about carnality. These violations and immoralities are NOT sinning when employed in counter insurgency functions AGAINST THE ENEMY OF THE LAWS OF DIVINE ESTABLISHMENT and there is no loss of fellowship with the Lord in this situation when the counter insurgency is to protect, defend and preserve the client nation and freedom. Divine approval of counter insurgency is confirmed in [2Sam 17:1-16](#) where David engaged spies and moles to deceive Absalom into delaying his pursuit of David during the revolution. Absalom did in fact adopt the plan of Houshai, David's Mole, which was designed and guaranteed to fail. The principle is that to the extent one is involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, to that extent, he is weak. The longer he spends in the

Interlocking System of Arrogance and the more of the categories of arrogance interact and entangle in his life the WEAKER he becomes. This neutralizes whatever talent, ability or greatness he might have had. God is perfect, He cannot sin, He cannot solicit to sin, He cannot approve of sin as a means to anything. Therefore, since God approves of using WAR to defend FREEDOM and all aspects of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, the use of lying and deceit to frustrate the plans of the enemies of a client nation and to bring them to disaster or destruction, cannot be sinful. God cannot not, and He does not use sin as a means to any end, therefore, since in [2nd Samuel](#) he authorized David to use clandestine war functions and counter insurgency it MUST BE CONCLUDED that clandestine counter insurgency is a legitimate and patriotic function in a client nation against its enemies in order to preserve FREEDOM the Key to the resolution of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial.

Victory in clandestine warfare inevitably results in victory in conventional warfare. Often the battle is won long before the battlefield is determined because of success in clandestine war. Victory in thinking always precedes victory in battle. This applies to thinking in clandestine war and counter insurgency as well as staff functions in conventional war. Knowledge is the environment for thinking therefore both those in the secret services and in the general's staff must have professional knowledge to enable their effective thinking. Without professional knowledge based thinking there is mediocrity in function and this is the person or officer who does not keep up with advances in their field. Effective, successful thinking requires humility, which is objectivity and flexibility used to bring one to victory. A proper scale of values for clandestine war requires avoidance of all conventional scales of value which focus on morality and spirituality. God not only approves the Modus Operandi of the clandestine warrior but sponsors client nation counter insurgency, however NOT EVER IN A POLICE STATE, but in a properly functioning legitimate client nation, for its perpetuation and protection. In the United States of America believers must understand clearly that no client nation can maintain its client nation status and be a police state or function under a system of tyranny. The Lord Jesus, The Christ, therefore, approves and even sponsors client nation counter insurgency and clandestine warfare. However, be clear in the understanding that He does not approve any counter insurgency nor clandestine war functions of any police state, such as what constantly occurs in any of the communist nations. The morality or immorality, under the Laws of Divine Establishment, structure and function of any nation determines the legitimacy of its secret services. Legitimate Moral, establishment based nations have legitimate secret services while the secret services of immoral anti-establishment nations such as Russia or China are illegitimate thus based on EVIL. In England, MI5 and MI6 and in the United States of America the CIA and NSA (although they are not operating today legitimately) are legitimate secret services to name a few. The Lord also approves counter insurgency functions in police work as well and the larger the city the larger the CID should be. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and this is always the overriding principle in the preservation and protection of the client nation and he does so through the advancing or mature believer and the citizen who adheres to and defends the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

The Best plans of any insurgent individual or group may and often will be frustrated by the DIRTY work of clandestine counter insurgency when the Lord is behind it, as He is totally

supportive of a client nations function against revolution and civil war. To accomplish frustrating the best plan of any genius tyrant or military enemy God can only use a mature believer, a man with great honor, integrity, great morality and spirituality and one whose reputation is beyond reproach. The methods used to frustrate the ‘best’ plan can include lying, deceit, exploitation, using the weaknesses of others, creating illusion in the mind of some and delusion in the mind of others. The factors which must be considered in this mature believer include:

- Humility which is flexible because flexibility defeats inflexibility
- Humility which is objective because objectivity defeats subjectivity
- Morality and spirituality as a great believer, able to think from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul
- Maximum Bible Doctrine and Doctrinal Rationales available in the soul for application to the situation
- The ability to shift into a scale of values for conventional, Guerrilla, clandestine or counter insurgent war
- The ability to lie and make it sound like the truth
- The ability to set up fabrication which will deceive
- The ability to estimate cowardice and weakness of those in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and thus exploit those weaknesses to defeat the enemy

In “The Wilderness of Mirrors” (4) David Martin describes the clandestine warrior. “To many they were heroes, in the CIA’s War against the KGB. To others they were villains guilty of illegal and immoral actions. They fought in the trenches of concealment and deception across the lines of falsehood and betrayal, and what passed for virtue there sometimes appears grotesque in the clear light of day. It is the same in any war. What is heroic in combat is criminal in peace. Just as combat sanctions physical violence, so espionage grants license to moral violence. It is trite but TRUE to say that they did, (and do today) what they did for the good of their country.”

Counter Insurgency & Good Decisions

The purpose of the Absalom Revolution was to demote David and promote Absalom as King, but in [1Sam 16:11-13](#) and [Ps 89:3-4](#), God had promoted David to king and nothing would or could demote him until he died. ([2Chron 21:7](#)) Upon learning of the imminent take over of Jerusalem by Absalom from his spies, David issued an order to his Royal staff who were with him in Jerusalem, “red alert, action, action, we must flee or otherwise none of us will escape from Absalom”. He did this to keep the established government intact even as he fled the city. He commanded that they move out immediately lest they be pursued rapidly and overtaken and disaster brought to their cause. In addition David was concerned that in his pettiness and vindictiveness that Absalom would massacre the city, therefore, by his fleeing Jerusalem he was protecting the city from war in the city and from the looting of the troops which would occur if a battle had been fought there. By issuing the command to flee the city David made a good decision for his nation and its people. He knew that the legitimate government had to remain intact so he had to leave. He remained loyal to his loyal staff and knew they would be in great danger if they were to remain in Jerusalem. ([2Sam 15:15-16](#)) As

a military commander David knew HE must choose the battlefield and be able to concentrate his forces to fulfill the principles of warfare and defeat Absalom. ([Ps 62](#)) Therefore David in fleeing the city with his loyal followers made a good decision. However, any good decision is only as good as its Execution. As in all cases revolutionists follow a person but incorruptibles follow principles. As incorruptibles in insurgency or as counter insurgents these individuals carry the responsibility of making decisions to overcome the revolutionaries or Evil sitting government but at the same time to preserve the nation under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and the people loyal to the nation, intact.

Clandestine Warfare

A historically and Biblically factual principle is that All freedom comes through military victory and this does not just mean conventional military functions. This principle is generally ignored throughout history along with the principle that **Victory in THINKING precedes victory in battle**, where this principle is often destroyed by [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) in those in control of an organization. This applies to military functions and also in most areas of normal life. Success in planning and thinking brings success in every endeavor in one's life. A key factor in clandestine warfare is the 'Mole' who is an espionage agent of a country or organization, whose objective is to infiltrate the structure of another country or organization, in order to gain secret information, plant false information, neutralize genius by intimidation, blackmail, or violence, resulting in destruction of any effective or competent leadership in that nation or organization. Arrogance neutralizes the ability and talent of any leader and can be exploited and used by any mole for the destruction of such leader. The political arrogance in the United States of America combined with the Arrogance of Ignorance saturating the people, especially those in control of the government, is what is bringing this nation to the great disaster it is on the verge of. The United States has failed in its military obligations and functions especially in its inability to recognize the necessity of ruthlessness in clandestine warfare and even in conventional warfare. This client nation has received warning discipline repeatedly and is now in for extreme discipline as it approaches the end of the 4th cycle of Divine Discipline for a nation. With the results of the 2024 election and the new structure of individuals in the cabinet of the Executive Office the United States of America has an opportunity to reverse its course and trends IF the people will recognize the need for understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and IF believers will turn to the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine needed to form a pivot of mature believers.

The United States of America has held to ONE standard for fighting war, a high moral standard of supposed "fair play" but this false position has put this client nation to God into violation of biblical principles found in the Laws of Divine Establishment regarding freedom and its protection and the prosecution of a JUST WAR. In [Rev 19:21](#) The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the example of engaging in a Just War, of which there have been many in American history. World War I and World War II both were JUST wars. Korea and Vietnam were JUST wars. Iraq and Afghanistan are both JUST wars. However since the end of World War II this nation has not prosecuted these Just Wars properly. At the end of the Church Age the Armageddon war is a JUST war and when The Lord Jesus, The Christ engages in that war it is said that the

BLOOD of the combat will run as high as a horses bridle from the slaughter of the enemy. Unfortunately, the United States of America does not know how to determine when War is a JUST result of conflict between nations and then when she enters war does not know how to prosecute it properly.

Winning a war in direct confrontation with the enemy military since 1945 has become way too expensive and the United States must learn from communism the means of using clandestine and guerrilla warfare effectively. As with proper missionary functions the military and intelligence organizations in the United States must learn to organize the indigenous population to function in clandestine and guerrilla warfare against the enemies of their nation JUST AS indigenous application in missionary function is to evangelize the people of a nation and then teach them to teach their own people. Obviously since believers in the United States have failed in missionary functions it is obvious that the standards of these believers are limited by their ignorance of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, the nation having failed in counter insurgent clandestine and guerrilla warfare has resulted again because the standards which the military and intelligence organizations adhere to are limited by ignorance of the principles of Bible Doctrine involved in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Natives in an enemy nation must be recruited and trained to fight for their own freedom and this requires first the function of clandestine warfare through counter intelligence and counter insurgency agents who must train the indigenous population. This now applies here, in the United States of America, where the people are now fighting at a very low level the insurgent and revolutionary organizations and groups and against the overreaching control of the federal government.

Victory in Battle & Success of Counter Insurgency

In military organizations at any level, there can be no qualms about shooting a deserter who runs away nor a rapist nor one who stole from or tortures civilians during military action because all of these all executable offenses and such criminality in the military is totally unacceptable. When in any leadership position one must be able to control all those people under him. However, before a conventional war can be won on the battlefield counter insurgent and clandestine operations must be successful against the organization of and among the staff of the revolutionaries or enemy military. Every moment that a good revolutionary insurgent leader is free to function without pressure or distraction gives him more advantage and helps to neutralize a superior force and any of his opposition's initial victories in conventional war and against his revolutionaries. Any plan for battle MUST include a provision for deception, pursuit, exploitation and assassination. These distasteful functions are to be relegated to the clandestine or counter insurgent warriors not the traditional military. It is always best when possible and when confronting a competent enemy to plan for overkill to defeat his brilliance in battle. Victory in War, whether it is conventional or clandestine is never complete until there is pursuit and the destruction of the enemy's ability to wage war is completed. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and will preserve the mature believer, with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, in the clandestine functions of counter intelligence and counter insurgency and he must use lying, deceit, sabotage, even murder if needed against the insurgents to effectively destroy the

plans of the revolutionists or opposing military. Concentration on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will bring to the believer success in battle and bring defeat to the enemy. However, thinking is exhausting and it requires more energy to think properly than to exercise but it is thinking which is always the key to success in battle.

The key to success for revolution is the death or removal of all potentially great leaders. This is clearly demonstrated by the lengths to which the 21st century revolutionists have gone to, in order to take or keep Mr. Trump out of office, even to the point of attempted assassination, and the efforts to which they continue to attempt to subvert his efforts on behalf of this nation. However, great numerical and material superiority in any war will not effect the outcome as long as the believer remains loyal to Bible Doctrine and The Lord Jesus, The Christ because Christ controls Human History. Revolutionary leaders ALWAYS underestimate the power of Bible Doctrine and the fact that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul AND the existence of the pivot or remnant of mature believers when in opposition to revolution will always prevail because God has said HE WILL VINDICATE HIS WORD. Revolutionary leaders always ignore the concept of the pivot but The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and **WILL** preserve the pivot of believers. Establishment leaders must have the dynamic use of Bible Doctrine in reverse concentration of faith under pressure in order to prevail in counter insurgency against the revolution. For the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God the greater his pressure is, the greater is his ability to concentrate with Bible Doctrine and therefore the greater will be his use of doctrinal rationales as problem solutions. Therefore in counter insurgency, the more pressure that is put on the mature believer the greater will be his use of Bible Doctrine and thus the greater will be the success of the establishment army. ([Ps 25](#), [61](#), [62](#), [63](#), [64](#)) As David told Goliath and also for any Mature Believer “The Battle is the Lord’s”, and during the Absalom revolution he wrote [Psalm 23](#), clearly demonstrating that Faith Rest is the key along with Grace Orientation as Problem Solving Devices for success against revolution. Therefore, for revolution to be a success, mature believers must be eliminated. The use of violence in the revolution will intimidate only a segment of the people, those who would not oppose the revolution in any case. Violence will cause a reaction but when that reaction occurs under the leadership of a mature believer there will be no revolution left, it will be completely wiped out.

Planning & Execution in Counter Insurgency

When planning a raid of any kind in counter insurgency one must always prepare for overkill. Concentration at the point of attack with the greatest possible number gives the greatest chance of success. In revolution the criminal aspect of the revolution wants only to rape and steal and have a good time instilling terror and often they therefore cause the revolution to wait until their fun is over. Therefore, it is the criminality in revolution which gives any counter attack great opportunity for success. After the revolution has put down whatever is responsible for law and order in the establishment the revolution goes berserk and they, as criminals, want only to steal, rape, torture and rob, this is the time for an organized counter attack. In “The Terrorists, Their Weapons, Leaders and Tactics”, ([11](#)) by Dobson and Payne, they clearly point out that the people involved in Guerrilla warfare in revolution use terror because they have

been completely brainwashed into the belief that VIOLENCE is the only sure way to gain success for their cause and it is the quickest means of securing the support of an unwilling residency. Therefore, the only answer to the violence of Guerrilla insurgency, revolution and its reign of terror is the application of greater violence by men of honor and integrity directly upon the revolutionists while protecting the innocent residents. This should never be allowed to develop into an attitude of being hypocritical in the nation nor through out the observing world. The application of great violence by the establishment oriented nation should promote the idea that the revolutionist's mythical concept of EQUALITY among the people to relieve their oppression is COMPLETELY WRONG and is a part of EVIL as the policy of Satan. The people in the nation and the world in general must be saturated with the true idea that FREEDOM is the primary issue in human life, it is that which is needed for resolution of the Angelic Conflict, and is the basis for the complete INEQUALITY in man. The concepts of FREEDOM have been developed by GOD himself to demonstrate his love for man working with his integrity. This greater violence is the ONLY means of preventing the complete saturation of the people of the world with the degeneracy of Arrogance and apostasy of Reversionism and thus causing them to leave the Plan of God for the plan of Satan and the ultimate self destruction of mankind. This greater violence used to defeat the violence of revolution must include both clandestine and conventional warfare functions working together. In clandestine warfare honorable men must shift gears into a ruthless strategy of counter insurgency so that men of Evil genius are neutralized and destroyed. For revolutionists a principle applies as it also does in any criminal activity which says, "Those who live by revolutionary or criminal violence (the Sword) die by even greater violence (capital punishment or defeat in war) and those who gain power by violence will be destroyed by a power of equal or greater violence".

Removal of key people is always a part of the strategy of clandestine warfare and the mature believer functioning in clandestine counter intelligence when involved in permanent removal of key individuals in the enemy hierarchy is within the Plan of God and God and his plan is greater than any plan of any one in power in any area or time in history. However, when the means of accomplishing an objective is criminal violence and involves assassination of one in legitimate authority in the client nation or when it deprives the innocent rightful of freedom and ignores establishment authority, it will fail or fail to accomplish its objective. Everything and anything is acceptable in clandestine, counter insurgent and Guerrilla warfare when it is pursued in an effort to protect the client nation to God and is directed solely against the revolutionists, but when it rejects the Plan of God and Laws of Divine Establishment as well, it will fail. Revolution demonstrates that criminal activity never brings anything worth while to anyone. Peace in a land as a result of criminal violence (the underlying tenet of communism) is a guarantee of tyranny and loss of human freedom so that whatever has been gained by criminality inevitably destroys freedom. Therefore Insurgency using clandestine and Guerrilla warfare will be defeated by Counter Insurgency using clandestine and Guerrilla warfare as well. What counter insurgency does not destroy will then be destroyed by conventional warfare on the battlefield of revolution or civil war. Therefore, deliverance in a civil war, for establishment forces will be an imputation from the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God in the believers who fight in the counter insurgent effort. (12)

Identification of the Enemy

One cannot, obviously, defeat an enemy one has not clearly identified. In conventional war, any person who dealt with the enemy, or who favored his objectives in any way, was considered a traitor and was or should have been treated as such and executed. Since the military art is simply and completely one of action, it is only when one has identified the enemy that the apparently complex problems posed to the opposing forces by conventional warfare can be reduced to realistic proportions and attempted to be resolved. In Modern Warfare or Guerrilla Warfare, the period of preparation before the opening of actual hostilities generally takes place under cover of a legally established political party; opponents can thus get themselves within one's frontiers and under the protection of one's laws. Covered by legality, they will strive to create a climate favorable to their cause within the country and abroad and to establish on the desired territory the essential elements of their insurgent warfare organization. The fact that modern warfare is not officially declared, that a state of war is not generally proclaimed, permits the adversary to continue to take advantage of peacetime legislation, to pursue his activities both openly and secretly. He will strive by every means to preserve the fiction of peace, which is so essential to the pursuit of his design. Therefore, the surest means of unveiling the adversary is to declare a state of war at the earliest moment, at the very latest when the first symptoms of the struggle are revealed in political assassinations, terrorism, Guerrilla activities, etc. Therefore, at that point, any party, group or individual that has supported or continues to support the enemy shall be considered a party of the enemy and dealt with using the extremes of counter insurgent guerrilla warfare, Modern Warfare. (26)

The SECRET of Clandestine War

Clandestine Warfare must be clandestine and everyone involved must blend into the background and appear as the average person would appear and function. The clandestine warrior must blend in naturally as in normal daily life functions, or he must hide out. He must be able to appear to be doing what anyone normally would do and appear to be a friend while actually being an enemy. Therefore, the clandestine warrior whether male or female must either phase out and remain hidden or blend in and be covert in his presence. There must also always be extremely effective team work in any type of clandestine war, intelligence, counter intelligence and counter insurgency operations and functions. Just as in conventional warfare teamwork demands honorable motivation, patriotic integrity and humility of thought and function. The effective and competent Modus Operandi in clandestine war operations depends on many people all doing their jobs well. The principle of discipline and team work applies just as in conventional war and is the key to clandestine counter insurgency victory. Clandestine war, though it constantly uses lying, deceit, killing, assassination, sabotage and other subversive functions does not remove or destroy the principles of honor, integrity and discipline in the clandestine warrior. These warriors must have great courage, they must be great thinkers, great commanders and leaders, great followers, with effective support systems in both conventional and clandestine counter insurgent war. All this must occur for victorious function to be possible in intelligence, counter intelligence, clandestine counter insurgency, espionage, sabotage, and all other efforts in war. These principles and functions are the same in all aspects of war in that the failure of one segment, individual or unit, means the death of those in the other segments of any operation. Teamwork must never be divorced from these

functions of war and it must be constantly remembered that teamwork is the result of:

- Honor
- Integrity
- Self Discipline
- Motivation
 - From the Laws of Divine Establishment patriotism and / or Bible Doctrine

Without effective intelligence officers, couriers, transfer persons, analyzers, etc., defeat in clandestine war could result in defeat in conventional war or failure in counter insurgency. Genius in command leadership is no better than the information upon which it must base decisions. Without accurate intelligence information those in command and their staff members are handicapped and vulnerable to defeat. In addition, genius in leadership is no better than the ability regarding execution by the man in the ranks of any planned or proposed operation. Each member of the team contributes to victory in clandestine war and no 2 agents or operatives are equal, each having their own unique abilities, each making their own unique contributions, and each having a unique job, great or small, which must be carried out to success. Each contribution is signification, requiring humility, objectivity and flexibility so that no aspect of Motivational Arrogance nor of Functional Arrogance must ever hinder the Modus Operandi of the secret services. Arrogance, subjectivity and inflexibility often result in bitterness and self pity because there is a general lack of recognition for one's honorable service contributions. However, arrogance always means vulnerability to succumbing to the temptations of becoming a double agent. Therefore, 3 categories of individuals are automatically eliminated from functioning in clandestine war operations:

- Arrogant People
- Stupid People
- Undisciplined people who lack Authority Orientation and Humility

One stupid or arrogant person disobeying orders can destroy the greatest plan ever to be devised. Discipline which results in enforced humility is used to overcome arrogance and stupidity and in any team, humility derived from strong discipline always wins the day.

Success of a Mission

Clandestine Counter Insurgency success requires courage on the part of all of the parties involved in acquiring and delivering false or deceptive intelligence information to the enemy and executing disruptive or destructive sabotage operations. Both conventional and clandestine warfare commanders must have information with which to make effective decisions and must never make a decision without proper accurate intelligence information. Sometimes this is simply Bible Doctrine broken into its logical **Rationales**, sometimes it is accurate tactical and strategic information given by those clandestine operators responsible for gathering and delivering information during war. There is therefore a great emphasis on intelligence gathering and its presentation in conventional warfare so that it becomes obvious that conventional and counter insurgency warfare both depend on clandestine warfare and espionage, to confuse, deceive, distort or destroy enemy plans and operations and also to gain accurate information regarding enemy forces, plans, terrain, order of battle, etc.

Knowledge is the environment for thinking and command decisions must be based on Intelligence information. Thinking is the environment for decisions therefore Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul plus the Intelligence provided by clandestine operations combines to bring a commander to the point of effective decision making. As in all aspects of life good decisions in war will become the basis for making many more decisions. If a bad decision is made it will cancel options for many future decisions and if this is continued it will cancel all options for any decisions until the only thing which is left is defeat. Therefore the principle is that information is needed for decisions and good decisions multiply future options while bad decisions limit future options. Eventually, the one who makes more and greater bad decisions runs out of options all together. Just as knowledge is the environment for thinking, knowledge of Metabolized Bible Doctrine is the environment for making effective decisions. Therefore, based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer must know the necessity of having 2 scales of value for life so that his decisions in normal circumstances will be quite different than his decisions in the abnormal circumstances of natural or national disasters from weather, war, riots or any insurgent revolution. The person who operates on only one scale of values, which functions well for normal circumstances in life, will end up in horrible misery in abnormal circumstances. In abnormal situations in life the believer must be able to walk out on everything which was ever considered important in life, leaving it to looters and destruction and be able to abandon the normal scale of values and accept and function under an abnormal scale of values. The believer must be spiritually self sustaining and the only way for this to occur is for him to be able to think under pressure using a maximum accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his soul. Cowardice, Fear and Panic are negative emotion and when negative emotion dominates the soul in Emotional Revolt of the Soul, then the believer cannot think and without thinking there is always poor decision making. *If bad decisions are consistently made in the time of crisis that believer will die miserably.* Effective thinking must be used to blow out emotion which is controlling the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order to be able to survive any disaster of any kind. Therefore, for the believer, effective thinking must be based on [doctrinal rationales](#).

Victory in Clandestine War

Once again, clandestine war has one set of standards needed for success whereas conventional war has another set of standards needed for its success, each is different and both are different from the Norms and Standards needed for peacetime life. The standards of clandestine war though not the same as the standards of conventional war have some overlap. The standards of conventional war relate to honor, integrity and morality in the professional killing of the enemy and defeating him while those for clandestine war are normally classified as sin and immorality. However, In the context of clandestine war and counter insurgency functions these standards must be reclassified as necessary, patriotic, honorable, and not in conflict with either integrity nor the spiritual life of the believer. Therefore, in this status, these actions are not sinful and thus JUSTIFIED. Killing the enemy in war is NOT the sin of murder and both conventional and clandestine war have this common standard with the only difference here being the more loosely defined ENEMY in clandestine warfare. In conventional war it is the responsibility of the unit commander to maintain discipline both on and off the battlefield in

both rear echelon units and front line units when in contact with the enemy. He determines the time at which the enemy is to be killed and in obedience to those orders the believer who is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit functions professionally with his weapons and is the best killer of his outfit. He has not committed murder and therefore has no spiritual conflict with these functions at all. It is the soldiers job under command instruction to kill the enemy in war, however, the standard of discipline for the soldier demands that he does not commit acts of crime or sin against civilians. The difference between a properly functioning army vs one which is out of control is demonstrated by Lee's invasion of the north vs Sherman's invasion of the south. Old Sin Natures must be controlled in the military with strict discipline and as with criminals if there are violations these violators must be killed with methods equally as horrible as their crimes.

In clandestine warfare the warrior is to intimidate the civilian or military alike and kill, assassinate, lie, steal, cheat, doing everything and anything to gain intelligence and neutralize the effectiveness of his enemy but NOT against uninvolved civilians and NOT under direct control of a commander but only a LOOSE control of his clandestine organization. Arrogant leaders in a revolution are extremely unstable and when deceived and their plans overturned they can easily switch back to their original destructive nature at any time. The means of transfer of false information and deceptive intelligence functions often use women as the operatives. In these settings God uses women who know doctrine just as he uses men who know doctrine but in much different functions. This very often demonstrates the incredible courage of the woman clandestine operative where the difference between her living or dying and success or failure in clandestine warfare is based on how deceitful yet believable she can be. This woman must have great humility and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine with incredible flexibility to be able to think clearly under this incredible pressure. Soldiers are to be punished for rape, pillage, stealing murder, etc., of civilians thus conventional war demands that the client nation army observe a strict code of morality toward the civilian population where battles are being fought. The antithesis is true with regard to clandestine warfare with regard to morality.

Attack by Strategy

- Take the enemies whole nation intact
 - To shatter the country and destroy it is not good
 - To capture an enemy regiment, detachment or company in its entirety is better than to destroy it
 - Again a fine line here with biblical standards which infer that it is essential that the enemies ability to wage war is totally eliminated and this may mean annihilation of ALL enemy combatants.
- To fight and conquer in all your battles is not supreme excellence
- **Supreme excellence is in breaking the enemies resistance without fighting**
- Overturn and disrupt the enemies plans
- Prevent the joining of the enemies forces
- Attack the army in the field when he is unprepared
- The absolute worst policy is to besiege walled cities because it is very time and

personnel consuming.

The Skilled leader's Functions

- Subdues troops without fighting
- Captures cities without laying siege to them
- Overthrows kingdoms without any lengthy operations in the field

Solution to Insurgency & Guerrilla War

Since the stake in modern warfare is the control of the populace, the first objective in counter insurgency is to assure the people of their protection by **giving them the means of defending themselves**, especially against terrorism. Then there must be the creation and training of organizations capable of detecting the elements the enemy insurgents will strive to introduce into one's territory preparatory to the open struggle. Finally, if hostilities break out, if terrorism and Guerrilla activity have established themselves over a large portion of one's territory, the counter insurgency organizations must combat them with the appropriate methods, which will be far more effective than those which would have been considered and used in peacetime. In these situations the inhabitant, in his own home, is the center of the conflict. Therefore, it is essential to prepare him for the role he will have to play and to enable him to fulfill it effectively to preserve his nation. For the inhabitant to elude the threats of the enemy, to cease to be an isolated target that no police force can protect, he must be able to participate in his own defense. To this end, he has to be provided with a structured organization encompassing the entire population. No one shall be able to avoid this service, and each person at any moment will be subject to the orders of his civil or military superiors to participate in protective measures. This must parallel the organization and methods of the enemy using his techniques of Insurgency in "modern warfare". (26)

First, an energetic and intelligent man must be designated in each city who will, with one or more reliable assistants, build the projected organization with a minimum of help from the authorities. The principle is very simple. The designated leader divides the city into districts, at the head of each which he places a chief and two or three assistants. These, in turn, divide the district into sub-districts and designate a chief and two or three assistants for each of them. Finally, each building or group of houses receives a chief and two or three assistants who will be in direct contact with the populace. Careful investigation is necessary before designating those to be members of the organization to prevent failures or betrayal. Nevertheless, making each member responsible for the designation and control of his immediate subordinates will permit rapid creation of the organization on a sound foundation.

This "inhabitants' organization" certainly runs counter to the traditional spirit of individualism and may promote dangers to liberties that must not be minimized. The analogy with certain totalitarian organizations will afford one's adversaries easy opportunities to attack with propaganda based on principle. But the counter insurgent organization cannot permit itself to be deluded. There must be a fundamental difference in this counter insurgent organization which must be a defensive one, the sole aim of which is to ensure the protection of the populace, particularly against the danger of insurgent terrorism. No individual entering it need

abdicate a particle of his basic liberties; but in the face of a common enemy, each will give, under self discipline, his total and unreserved assistance to his fellows and his superiors. Once the war is won or the danger has passed, the counter insurgent organization will have no reason to exist and be completely dissolved. One should not lose sight of the fact that this is the sole means available to assure the protection of peaceful citizens and to prevent terrorism from forcing them into a harsh and inhuman servitude.

Leadership Decapitation Effectiveness in Counter Insurgencies

- The Importance of Leaders.
 - Evidence suggests that killing or capturing militant leaders:
 - Increases the chances of a rapid end to insurgencies
 - Enhances the probability of campaign outcomes favorable to counter insurgents
 - Reduces the intensity of violent conflict
 - Shrinks the number of insurgent-initiated attacks, such as armed attacks, terroristic bombings and kidnappings.
- Martyrdom Effects.
 - Despite warnings by public officials and terrorism analysts, there is little evidence that killing or capturing insurgent leaders causes blow back violence.
- Counter terrorism Strategies.
 - Killing or capturing militant leaders can be a useful tool, though it may be more effective when integrated into a larger counterinsurgency strategy.
- Group Type.
 - Counter insurgents are more successful in campaigns in which they decapitate the insurgent leadership than in those in which they do not, regardless of the group's aims or ideology.

Failure to Understand Modern Guerrilla Warfare

Theoretically, no nation will deprive its army of material resources or moral support, although this has been the continued destructive function in the United States of America for most of the 20th and now the 21st centuries. The organized military should have its own system of justice, swift and severe, to pass judgment in the context of warfare on those soldiers found guilty of offenses or crimes, and this has been interfered with as well. There must be doctors to care for the wounded on the field of battle; chaplains to ensure spiritual support to the troops and peace to the dying, and this has very often today been totally denied. Members of the American armed forces in the middle east were prohibited from even possessing a bible while in country while in glaring contrast, General Douglas MacArthur after the surrender of Japan in World War II ordered the distribution of several MILLION bibles in Japan. The power of life and death over opponents within the framework of the rules of war has been distorted by the civilian government many times with the imposition of ridiculous ROE's, Rules of Engagement. In reality the nation should not ask the army to define problems, but only to win the war it is engaged in and to ensure the population's protection and security against any current or future threatening danger, AT ALL COSTS to the enemy. If the army is forced to NOT employ all the modern weapons of war and all the tactics and strategies of "Modern Warfare", it can not fulfill its mission and the nation would no longer be defended and the

civilization one holds dear, his very freedom WILL undoubtedly perish. Once committed to waging WAR the nations military control MUST be given over to the Military command structure UNTIL it is either victorious or totally defeated.

Summary of Principles of Counter Insurgency

Principle 1

Counter Insurgency is the destruction of insurgent enemy leadership, thinking, talent, planning and materiel. Every believer involved must transition from a prosperity scale of values to the historical crisis scale of values which still demands a status quo of Humility which includes Objectivity and Flexibility. The material possessions which a believer has enjoyed in prosperity must be instantly written off, abandoned or ignored in historical adversity. This requires great flexibility so that once one enters such great adversity, it is not what he has that counts but it is what he thinks which counts. The real secret to navigating pressure in life is to ignore everything which one possesses and everything one has attained and whatever rank, ability, success or recognition one has in normal times since these no longer count in abnormal times. One may have to abandon everything he has accumulated and everything he depends on for recognition and move into what he can do with what he has in his soul. The believer must recognize when adversity comes and must be able to switch his scale of values to weather the storm of crisis whether that storm is insurgent revolution, civil war, or conventional war with another nation. The believer must remain humble, flexible, objective and honorable and engage in the consistent function of the [Faith Rest Drill](#) (5 Stages) in reverse concentration. He must understand that there are much more important things in life than decoration or promotion and these include personal integrity and honor. In time of pressure and disaster it is not the rank or success one has attained in peace time or how wealthy or prominent one has become, it is what one has in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and his ability to apply Absolute Truth in the form of the Laws of Divine Establishment or Bible Doctrine through the Faith Rest Drill. Furthermore, in order to shift into the adversity scale of values the believer must have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and have it categorically stored so that it can be recovered and used in definitive [Doctrinal Rationales](#). The daily study of Bible Doctrine is designed to allow learning of Bible Doctrine and organizing it into categories in normal times so that in times of disaster or catastrophe one can identify the needed category and make instant application. Without the Faith Rest Drill and reverse concentration on previously metabolized Bible Doctrine the believer cannot apply the rationales of Bible Doctrine nor adapt his scale of values for adversity. The objective of sitting and learning is to learn to concentrate even when not motivated nor interested in the subject being taught and learn poise, which is the basis by which that same Bible Doctrine is then able to be applied under pressure. This ability to concentrate, and the content of what has been learned under concentration, is the very basis for survival in disaster. In addition, the concentration and the scale of values which brings survival in the abnormal times of disaster is what gives capacity for life, love and happiness in normal times. The absolute fact is that changing circumstances do not change the Justice of God nor any blessing from the Justice of God. Going from prosperity to adversity from normal to abnormal circumstances

does not change the Plan of God and does not change the blessings of God to the Righteousness of God imputed to every believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. These will always be compatible with the historical occasion. Believers must learn that happiness and contentment do not depend on having one's dreams fulfilled.

Principle 2

Always remember that while there are 2 scales of value, one for prosperity and one for adversity, for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Bible Doctrine must be first in both. Counter insurgency and Clandestine warfare operations or functions in general demand that the person involved possesses both honor and integrity along with patriotism and understanding that this type of warfare requires lying, cheating, stealing, killing, and exploitation of every sort of human weakness and vanity in his enemy. Believers in counter insurgency and clandestine warfare must not lose their honor, integrity nor their Bible Doctrine but, at the same time, must function under a new scale of values, one in which there is required more use of honor and integrity than in normal times. While the things necessary for effective function in clandestine war and counter insurgency are often considered sinful and evil in normal living they are a part and package of the normal Modus Operandi in secret service functions. Normal conventional moral standards cannot be applied to clandestine or counter insurgency war any more than normal conventional moral standards can be applied to normal conventional war. To succeed in the nasty business of secret service one must combine honor and integrity with lying, deceit, fabrication, bribing and general exploitation of every possible human weakness of the enemy. Just as killing in battle is not murder when in a just war to preserve one's country, lying, deceit and all the rest is not sinful in counter intelligence or counter insurgency. These principles also apply to Law Enforcement officers in Criminal Intelligence Division functions. Insurgency == Revolution and thus connotes and is derived from principles of EVIL thus Counter insurgency must be identified with preservation of establishment government and freedom thus has an honorable connotation derived from the principles of the Grace provision of Bible Doctrine.

Principle 3

Since revolutionaries believe the Evil Lie from Satan's policy that violence will provide equality for the masses, and does so under strong delusion and the arrogance of ignorance, God judges revolutionaries with their own weapons of lying, deceit, propaganda and counter violence. ([Ps 64:4-5](#)) Revolution lives by the Lie and thus it is fitting that it be destroyed by the Lie. Revolution succeeds by use of violence thus it is fitting that it be destroyed by counter violence. Revolution is the result of maximum involvement in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) thus it is fitting that it be destroyed and defeated by that same arrogance complex which produces both weakness and spheres of vulnerability which can be exploited by honor and integrity to guarantee defeat of the revolution. ([Prov 22:3](#)) Revolution in arrogance creates its own system of self destruction and, therefore, God both authorizes and approves of counter insurgency functions as a means of destroying revolution. ([2Sam 17:1-16](#), [Prov 24:19-20](#), [Ps 34:16](#), [Ps 76:10](#)) Part of the principle that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History is the fact that God uses the wrath of man to praise him and whatever is the remaining part of mans wrath He, God will restrain. ([Ps 37:16-19](#)) The believer MUST remember [James 4:6](#) and

1Pet 5:5, “God makes war against the arrogant but he gives grace to the Humble”. Counter insurgency involves clandestine warfare against the arrogance of insurgency and revolution and is part of God’s mechanism for making war against the arrogant who are in opposition to the client nation. Historical, Natural or National disaster never changes the Plan of God for the believer, described by the X + Y + Z radicals of the [Equation of Hope](#), and it continues in time of disaster as it does in time of prosperity. However, the material blessings of life must often be abandoned or ignored in these times but the loss of material things does not imply loss of the SOURCE of the blessing, the Justice of God.

Principle 4

The mole is an agent of one country or organization whose objective is to infiltrate the highest echelon of enemy command to gain secret information and also to plant disinformation and to neutralize leadership genius and capability by intimidation, blackmail, flattery and violence. This is clandestine war, espionage and essential for both counter insurgent or conventional war success. Being entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance guarantees the weakness and vulnerability of revolutionaries and conquerors to counter insurgent as well as a conventional warfare. Revolution very often gains an initial advantage and success because of the arrogance of the general population in a nation and also as a result of their strong delusion from a rejection of Absolute Truth in 3 categories: ([Ps 33:17-20](#))

- Laws of Divine Establishment for both believers and unbelievers
- Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for unbelievers
- The Entirety of Bible Doctrine for believers.

This HAS occurred and IS an ongoing situation in the United States of America so that the United States is on the very brink of total national disaster because of the incredible national arrogance here. The Lord’s choice and the people’s choice for anything are never the same. ([1Sam 16:7](#)) Whatever the potential or ability of the leaders and the architects of a revolution, their involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance destroys all their ability and potential. A Mole who infiltrates the highest echelon of revolutionary command must be able to weave truth into lies and form a destructive tapestry for clandestine support of both Counter Insurgency and Conventional War. The principle is that Crusader Arrogance + Criminal Arrogance == Revolution and as revolution progresses the ascendancy of criminal arrogance and violence over crusader arrogance very often results in civil war. A reign of terror, when it begins, shows the incompetence and inability of the revolution to provide any semblance of a legitimate government.

Principle 5

The transfer of power and authority from establishment government to revolution inevitably results in violence or a reign of terror. The reign of terror manifests criminal arrogance and also the brainwashing, irresponsibility and inability of revolutionary leadership and their followers to control the situation. Revolution always involves those who are in it for revenge and these use the coup DE tat to take personal revenge against their enemies. Revolutionary Arrogance produces subjectivity of thinking and inflexibility of administration which is what results in inevitable violence and injustice. Revolutionists are brainwashed and propagandized

into thinking that the ONLY sure way for success for their false cause of Equality for the masses is VIOLENCE against the establishment. Knowledge is the environment for thinking and Bible Doctrine (or any form of absolute truth) is the environment for making good decisions. The arrogance of ignorance in the revolutionists includes ignorance of Bible Doctrine (or any form of absolute truth) and results in making bad decisions. Good decisions increase options for more and greater decisions plus increase the freedom to do so. Bad decisions limit options for future decisions and for life, love and the pursuit of happiness and eventually result in loss of freedom and destruction of choices with nothing left but Divine Discipline. Arrogance is stronger than perfect environment (observe Adam and Eve) therefore stronger than any good environment from any good establishment government and when in authority arrogance often becomes [Inflexible about Non-Essential](#) things. Inflexibility in rule making can result in limiting the ability of any person to function under such rules.

Arrogant people are never content with good administration or ability in business or good government as demonstrated by the past history of the United States and the current function of both the democratic and republican parties whose primary focus has historically been simply on keeping their personal status quo in place. The Old Sin Nature of man does not want good government nor perfect environment since it originated from arrogance in rejection of the perfect environment of the garden and because it will reject 1000 years of perfect environment under the millennial reign of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as well. ([Rev 20:3-4](#)) [Arrogance](#) is more than sin it is a major system of Evil and the greatest power of Evil in this world. Demonstrated clearly in the United States in this 21st century, when people become arrogant, good government is rejected and they accept idiotic presidents or any level politician or leader in every area. Revolutionary arrogance rejects great freedom and the prosperity present under the Laws of Divine Establishment again showing that arrogance is stronger than perfect environment and also stronger than true love. Revolutionary arrogance rejected the greatest prosperity and freedom in all of Jewish history the reign of David when the people joined the Absalom revolution. Arrogance also takes magnificent love and turns it into hatred and as a system of Evil it is stronger than most of the systems of good, though God has provided a counter balance for this trend through Bible Doctrine.

[Principle 6:](#)

The transfer of power through the lawlessness and violence of revolution is a manifestation of man's inability to enjoy or appreciate freedom apart from the Laws of Divine Establishment and the strong system of authority which comes with it. This is why believers MUST appreciate police, fire fighters and military personnel despite the arrogance and failure of any single person or group of persons in these organizations. People fail in all areas of life but man cannot get along without the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions thus he needs police, fire fighters, military personnel, and all levels of government functioning on a professional level under systems of freedom and integrity. As long as there is establishment government in place, it must be honored and believers must honor all of those who allow us to retain it. Believers are mandated to NOT be involved in nor condone assassination or subversion of government because when violence comes in the form of revolution and lawlessness everything has been lost. God has given to mankind the Laws of Divine

Establishment and Divine Institutions to define the needed authority to maintain freedom and perpetuate the Angelic Conflict therefore, legitimate authority is essential for legitimate freedom. Unfortunately, and on a regular basis in this nation, there have been incompetent or simply stupid people put into controlling power by the stupidity of the voting of the unstable public. Revolution always seeks to demote establishment oriented rulers and ignores the fact that if God does not promote one then he is not promoted and if God does not demote one, he cannot be demoted. Revolution uses the ignorance of the people to allow the use of deceitful unlawful practices, even violence, to put incompetent EVIL individuals into power, in fact requires this in order to promote success for their revolution. This was the current situation in the United States of America during the election of 2020.

4th Generation Warfare

Tyrants beware, 4th Generation Warfare: How the next civil war will be fought.

This is, in part, an excerpt from the non-fiction introduction to “Absolved”: A cautionary novel of the Three Percent and 4th Generation Warfare by Mike Vanderboegh. (6) I have chosen to make some minor changes which I consider corrections where I believe concepts are constantly erroneously addressed. These concepts of 4th generation warfare are also the mechanisms used since the 1940s as described in “Modern Warfare” as detailed by Roger Trinquier (26)

“Direct military operations” are precisely what the 4th Generation Warfare insurgent seeks to avoid. His target is the mind and the will of the people and the political leadership of his enemy, to be specific, the few inches between their ears which are filled with brains to be influenced or, if not, popped like a grape with an unanswerable rifle shot from distance as an example to the others.”

“Whenever the legislators endeavor to take away and destroy the property of the people, or to reduce them to slavery under arbitrary power, they put themselves into a state of war with the people, who are thereupon absolved from any further obedience and are left to the common refuge, which God hath provided for all men, against force and violence.” John Locke, 2nd Treatise on Government. (32)

So reads the plaque on Phil Gordon's wall in his Sipsey Street home the moment before all hell breaks loose. In 'Absolved', I try to explore the depths of Locke's belief to discover where it might lead the United States in a civil war set in the near future. Another civil war in this country is the last thing I want.

It is the contention of Mr. Vanderboegh, that writing about the dire nature of a situation or series of events in some way brings these directly to the forefront of general thinking and thereby causes them to NOT become reality. I have a strong disagreement with this. In my considering his quoting of David Brin, author of the “The Postman” who wrote in a forward to a reprint of Pat Frank's classic “Alas, Babylon”:

Two books that emerged at roughly the same time as “Alas, Babylon” were Eugene Burdick's “Fail Safe” and Peter George's “Red Alert”, which later inspired Stanley Kubrick to make the magnificently humorous and thoughtful “Dr. Strangelove”. As archetypes of the useful dire warning, each dissected a specific possible failure mode, bringing it to the awareness of so many that, ironically, their particular type of debacle became much less likely. Indeed, the “self preventing prophecy” may be the highest and most useful species in all of the vast, imaginative genus of speculative fiction. In much the same way that Orwell's “1984” girded millions against “Big Brother”, these tales may have helped to keep their own nightmares from coming true. In other words, our most vivid nightmares may have been utterly practical, helping to save our lives.

David Brin

This has proven to be utterly false and wrong so that Orwell's “1984” and Heinlein's “Fahrenheit 454” have both come to fruition in the past century repeatedly and today in the United States of America BIG BROTHER, the NSA, is constantly watching every person through their cellular phones and internet conversations telling the people that they cannot work or travel without a pseudo vaccine, which does not prevent a disease but apparently advances its progression in killing off the excess population so that the world will not have to revert to “Soilent Green” for food. In addition, in other works of fiction the construction of and dissemination of a devastating disease, like the CCP Wuhan virus, was laid out in great detail more than a decade before 2019. It is my contention that PRIOR to September 11, 2001 someone in a position of leadership in a community or organization of radical islamic terrorists absolutely took Tom Clancy's “useful dire warnings” about a pilot deliberately flying a fuel-laden jet into the Capitol building and killing the President and top leadership in “Debt of Honor”, 1994 and “Executive Orders”, 1996 about enemies of this country crashing airliners into public buildings in Washington, D.C. as a potential weapon for Insurgent War.

This is not to say that fiction writers should avoid these types of scenarios and I agree that they should be exploited but with the ultimate result being to help move people to understand how to avoid them or combat them when needed as occurs in the “Patriot” and the survival series of novels by James Wesley Rawles.

Back to Vanderboegh:

In this potential civil war on one side, just as in 1775, will be the Three Percent, on the other, Locke's “Arbitrary Power”, and it will be a 4th Generation War. The “Arbitrary Power” continues today; “If I could have gotten 51 votes in the Senate of the United States for an outright ban (on so-called semi-automatic ‘assault rifles’), picking up every one of them. Mr. and Mrs. America, turn 'em all in, I would have done it.” Senator Dianne Feinstein, CBS-TV's 60 Minutes, 5 February 1995.

This was an ongoing process in the population control situation with Joe Biden and his idiotic executive orders and the ideas of his supporters and contemporaries including the unscrupulous Dr. Fauci attempting to install a government mandate that a person must be vaccinated against the CCP Wuhan virus in order to work or travel, when they, in fact, had a hand in setting up

the situations for its production.

When the Founders declared independence, they prefaced that declaration with a detailed indictment of the offenses of the King and his ministers. I will not waste time or space here by comparing the present federal government's excesses of arbitrary power with those of King George III. Go and read the Declaration and you will marvel at how today's advocates of central power not only track quite closely but make Lord North and Company look like kindergarten bullies in comparison. The important thing to understand about today's arbitrary power is that it, like its predecessor, is a corruption of, indeed, a subversion of, a constitution that should have restrained it. It was the failure of the English Constitution which led to our first Revolution. It will be the failure of our own Constitution which will lead to our next civil war.

I have contention here again with the quote here in part from "The Americanism of the American War for Independence", Myron Magnet, City Journal, Autumn 2012, in his description of the **American War for Independence** as a "REVOLUTION". It was not and cannot be by any stretch classified as one. A revolution seeks to overthrow the existing government. The colonies had an independent governing system in place and did not in any way try to assassinate or overthrow the young King George III nor Parliament in England. Therefore the War which was fought ONLY here on American soil was truly for Liberty NOT the equality or fraternity as in the French Revolution.

The Founders sought only liberty, not equality or fraternity. Their Lockean social contract political philosophy taught them that the preservation of individual liberty was the goal of politics. Its basis was the surrender of a portion of man's original, natural freedom to a government that would protect the large remainder of it better than any individual could do on his own. The freedom to make your own fate and think your own thoughts without fear of bodily harm, unjust imprisonment, or robbery. The Founders' study of history taught them that the British constitution under which they had lived; "originally and essentially free," as Boston preacher Jonathan Mayhew described it; was the ideal embodiment of such a contract. It was "the most perfect combination of human powers in society," John Adams wrote in 1766, "for the preservation of liberty and the production of happiness", until George III began to violate it. So Americans didn't take up arms to create a new world order according to some abstract theory. They sought only to restore the political liberty they had actually experienced for 150 years, and they constructed their new government to preserve it. So when, after 150 years of letting Americans run their own affairs, the British government began to meddle malignantly with their liberty, once 22 year old George III became king in 1760 following the death of his grandfather, George II, the colonists unsurprisingly responded to the interference with outrage. After decreeing new colonial customs duties and stricter enforcement in 1764, London imposed its first direct levy on the colonies in 1765 in the Stamp Act, taxing every colonial newspaper, journal, legal document, almanac, playing card, and other paper product, in flagrant contravention of the "standing Maxim of English Liberty," as Livingston had quoted it more than a decade earlier, "that no

Man shall be taxed, but with his own Consent.” As Washington wrote to a friend, “I think the Parliament of Great Britain hath no more Right to put their hands into my Pocket, without my consent, than I have to put my hands into yours, for money.” **Property doesn’t belong to the government**, and the social contract gives government no right to tell you what to do with your own. The American “WAR FOR INDEPENDENCE”, then, was doubly limited in its aims: limited to making only a political change without altering social or economic arrangements, and determined to set strict limits to its new government, fearful that any governmental power beyond the barest minimum necessary to protect liberty too easily could become a threat to liberty itself.

This prior quote in fact recognizes the illegitimacy of government trying to solve social problems in a nation in any way through legislation when its sole purpose is to protect liberty and remove internal criminals permanently from society and prevent external criminals from overthrowing society. I have taken the liberty to change a few points in this next quote in order to promote accurate thought regarding American origins and history.

And, as we now know, the Founders’ system of limited government has been crushed by a century of encroaching Federal power. This government has miserably failed to follow the statement of Justice Marshal, “All laws which are repugnant to the Constitution, are null and void.” Chief Justice Marshall, “Marbury v. Madison”. The advocates of the “arbitrary power,” of course, say that they have the right to tell you what to do because they were “democratically elected,” ignoring the fact that the Founders themselves feared pure democracy as much, if not more, than they feared any other kind of tyranny. Without the limits of a constitutional republic, “democracy” is three wolves and a sheep voting on what to have for dinner. The fact that the “arbitrarians” who win (in reality steal) elections and have rigged the court and voting systems to prevent their “mandates” or “diktats” from being overturned means nothing to people who, like the Founders, believe that their rights to liberty and property are God-given and inalienable. The most uncompromising of these are the Three Percent.

The Three Percent, the “bitter clingers”.

These are the natural leaders of the people. They are called various unflattering names today and are the butt of comic-strip buffoonery and the ‘villain’ of media presentations because they remain the individualist, a safe target, he is Donald Trump. Theodore Roosevelt could write of him; ‘The fathers followed Boone or fought at King’s Mountain; the sons marched south with Jackson to overcome the Creeks; the grandsons died at the Alamo.’ And, it should be added, the great-grandsons provided Lee and Jackson with the best fighting infantry the world had yet seen. Poorly clothed, half-starved, they responded magnificently to magnificent leadership and almost won America’s second war for independence as their forefathers had won the first.

Moreover, in all wars, they have always been the cutting edge and as F.N. Boney, the Georgia historian, puts it: ‘There is no shortage of rednecks in the neat, quiet American

military cemeteries which now dot the globe. However rejected in normal times, the redneck has always been welcomed when the nation went to war.’ Peace is the dream today, and the redneck shares that dream. For him it was often a “rich man’s war and a poor man’s fight.” He never started a war, but he was always ready when his home and personal liberty were threatened. And because of the readiness to do his duty, this nation was founded and kept alive. Given proper leadership, the mountain man can still be motivated. But in recent years such leadership has been largely lacking. The potential remains untapped, but it is still there. As my father used to say in Happy Valley, “you may turn the damper up, you may turn the damper down, but the smoke goes up the chimney just the same.” Hank Messick, King’s Mountain, 1976.

I would like to add here that though the Red Neck does still exist and the 3 Percenters are still alive and well, the children of this and the past generation have been and are continually being led down the path of ignorance of their American heritage and even brainwashed into the rejection of the principle of the ESSENTIAL nature of FREEDOM.

History, for good or ill, is made by determined minorities. It is estimated that during the American War for Independence, the active forces in the field against the King’s tyranny never amounted to more than 3% of the colonists. They were in turn actively supported by perhaps 10% of the population. Cheering on these dedicated revolutionaries were perhaps another 20% who favored their cause but did little or nothing to support it. Another one-third of the population sided with the King (by the end of the war there were actually more Americans fighting FOR the King than there were in the field against him) and the final third took no side, blew with the wind and took what came.

The Three Percent still exists today, described by Barack Obama a few years ago as “bitter clingers.” Put simply, these are the firearm owners who will not disarm, will not compromise and will no longer back up at the passage of the next gun control act. Today’s Three Percenters say quite explicitly that they will not obey any further circumscription of their traditional liberties and will defend themselves if attacked.

They intend, like John Locke and the Founders who studied him, to maintain their God-given natural rights to liberty and property, and that means most especially the right to keep and bear arms. Thus, they are committed to the restoration of the Founders’ Republic, and are willing to fight, die and, if forced by any would-be oppressor, to kill in the defense of themselves and the Constitution that they all took an oath to uphold against enemies foreign and **domestic**. It is the sons of Three Percenters who make up the bulk of the tip-of-the-spear units in today’s military simply because they were raised by families to whom service to the Republic is as automatic as breathing. Socioeconomically, today’s Three Percenters are not exclusively the descendants of the Scotch-Irish that Hank Messick describes above, but they are surely represented heavily. So, too, are descendants of the Texans, of whom S.C. Gwynne wrote in “Empire of the Summer Moon”, “The (vanguard of the) westward push of the Americans was not federal troops and federal forts but simple farmers imbued with a fierce Calvinist (Christian)

work ethic, steely optimism, and a cold eyed aggressiveness that made them refuse to yield even in the face of extreme danger. They were said to fear God so much that there was no fear left over for anyone or anything else”; Pg 20.

I would add to the understanding of Who and What the 3 Percenters are in saying that they are unquestionably the orthodox fundamental BIBLICAL Christian who understands and lives by the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions and the total content of the absolute truth of the Word of God. These are believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ who LOVE God so much and TRUST in his preserving and protecting promises to the absolute exclusion of FEAR of anything or anyone. These are the “Christian Soldiers” of the Hymn of that name by [R. B. Thieme Jr.](#)

When the Texans discovered the tactical utility that the Colt revolver gave them parity with the fearsome Comanche lance on horseback, it spelled the end of that tribe’s centuries long dominance of the plains. Again, S.C. Gwynne in “Empire of the Summer Moon”, “The game had changed completely. The Texans were not the Spanish or the Mexicans. They were tougher, meaner, almost impossible to discourage, willing to take absurd risks to secure themselves a plot of dirt, and temperamentally well-suited to the remorseless destruction of native tribes. They did not rely on a cumbersome, heavily-mounted, overly bureaucratized, state-sponsored soldiery; they tended to handle things themselves, with volunteers who not only were not scared of Indians but actually LIKED hunting them down.” Pg 82.

Texans certainly ranked among the Three Percenters of their day and of Today. Three Percenters today do not claim that they represent 3% of the American people, although they might. That theory has not yet been tested. They DO claim that they represent *at least* 3% of American gun owners, which is still a healthy number somewhere in the neighborhood of 3 million people. Remember, history, for good or ill, is made by determined minorities. They are one such minority. So too are the current domestic enemies of the Founders' Republic who seek to disarm them. What remains, then, is the test of will and skill to determine who shall shape the future of our nation. That test of will and skill will be fought ultimately at some point by warfare in the 4th Generation.

“Cherish your enemies – they teach you the best lessons” -- Ho Chi Minh.

4th Generation Warfare; Chinese “Unrestricted War”

This is most clearly described and defined in “Modern Warfare” by Trinquier. (26) For those unfamiliar with the term, here's one succinct definition from the best single book on the subject. “4th Generation Warfare uses all available networks; political, economic, social, and military to convince the enemy's political decision makers that their strategic goals are either unachievable or too costly for the perceived benefit. It is an evolved form of insurgency. Still rooted in the fundamental precept that superior political will, when properly employed, can defeat greater economic and military power. 4th Generation Warfare makes use of society's networks to carry on its fight. Unlike previous

generations, it does not attempt to win by defeating the enemy's military forces. Instead, via the “networks”, it directly attacks the minds of enemy decision makers to destroy the enemy's political will. 4th-generation wars are lengthy, measured in decades rather than months or years. Strategically, 4th Generation Warfare attempts to directly change the thinking of enemy populations and policy makers. This change is not to be achieved through the traditional method of superiority on the battlefield. The first through third generation wars of destroying the enemy's armed forces and his capacity to regenerate them is not how 4th Generation Warfare enemies will attack. Both the epic, decisive Napoleonic battle and the wide-ranging, high-speed maneuver campaign is irrelevant to them. Their victories are accomplished through the superior use of all available networks to directly defeat the will of the enemy leadership, to convince them their war aims are either unachievable or too costly. These networks will be employed to carry specific messages to policy makers and to those who can influence the policy makers.” “The Sling and the Stone”, p. 208 (38)

And what were the previous three generations of war? William S. Lind offers this in his essay, “The Four Generations of Modern Warfare” (33)

“The First Generation of modern war began with the Peace of Westphalia in 1648, which ended the Thirty Years War. It also marked the state's assumption of having a monopoly on war; thereafter, war became something waged by states, for *raison d'etat*, with state armies and navies doing the fighting. The First Generation ran from 1648 to about the time of the American Civil War, and it was characterized, on the whole, by a battlefield of order. The battlefield of order created a military culture of order, which endures to this day.

And there's the rub. For around the middle of the 19th century, the battlefield of order began to break down. Ever since, state military organizations have had to grapple with a growing contradiction between their internal culture of order and the external reality of an increasingly disordered battlefield.

The Second and Third Generation wars represent two different approaches to that problem. Second Generation war was developed by the French Army during and after World War I, and is best summed up with the French saying, “The artillery conquers, the infantry occupies.” Also known as firepower / attrition warfare, Second Generation war maintained the First Generation culture of order. Decision-making was centralized and hierarchical; orders were detailed and controlling, to permit synchronization of all arms; time was not particularly important; and success was measured by comparative body counts. Second Generation armed forces focus inward on methods, processes and procedures, prized obedience over initiative (initiative and synchronization are not compatible) and depend on imposed discipline. The American Army and Marine Corps learned Second Generation war from the French during the First World War and still practice it today, with exceptions based on individual commanders.

Third Generation war, also known as maneuver warfare, was developed by the German

Army in World War I. By 1918, Blitzkrieg was conceptually complete, lacking only the tanks necessary for operational mobility. The Prussian / German roots of Third Generation war go back earlier, to the Scharnhorst reforms that followed Prussia's defeat by Napoleon. One of those reforms changed what was required of a Prussian officer; instead of being responsible for obeying orders, he became responsible for getting the result the situation required regardless of orders (in 19th century war games, it was common for junior Prussian officers to be given problems that could only be solved by disobeying orders). This in turn created a military culture that was focused outward, on the enemy, the situation and the result the situation demanded instead of inward on rules, orders and processes. In effect, Prussia had broken with the First Generation culture of order.

The new Third Generation tactics developed by the Germans in World War I were the first non-linear tactics. On the defense, the objective became sucking the enemy in, then cutting him off, rather than holding a line. On the offensive, the attack flowed like water through the enemy's defenses, always seeking the weakest point to penetrate, then rolling him up from his own rear forward. Operationally as well as tactically the goal was usually encirclement. Speed replaced firepower as the most important tool, and dislocation, mental as well as physical, was more important than attrition. Culturally, not only was the German Army outward-focused, it prized initiative over obedience and it depended on self-discipline rather than imposed discipline. This was George Patton in World War II, the reasons for his success and for his dislike by those in higher command positions and civilian government.

Much of the American military reform movement of the 1970s, 80s and early 90s was an attempt to move the American armed forces from the Second to the Third Generation. While the Marine Corps formally adopted maneuver warfare as doctrine in the 1990s, most of what the Marine Corps does remains Second Generation. The other American services remain almost wholly Second Generation, to the frustration of many junior officers.

4th Generation war is the greatest change since the Peace of Westphalia, because it marks the end of the state's monopoly on war. Once again, as before 1648, many different entities, not states, are fighting war. They use many different means, including “terrorism” and immigration, not just formal armies. Differences between cultures, not just states, become paramount, and one culture will not fight the way another fights. All over the world, state military organizations are fighting non-state opponents, and almost always, the state is losing. State military organizations were designed to fight other state military organized like themselves, and against non-state enemies most of their equipment, tactics and training are useless or counterproductive.

I would classify this as a combination of both clandestine insurgency and guerrilla warfare. It is clearly and lucidly described by Trinquier in “Modern Warfare”. (26) It is also the exact way in which counter insurgency must function when needed to overcome insurgent revolution.

Of course there have been 4th Generation insurgencies (and counter insurgencies) for thousands of years, as well as the use of 4th Generation Warfare tactics and strategies by state military organizations against other state military. {Sun Tzu's The Art of War, ([9](#), [10](#))} The American War for Independence began as a counter insurgency of largely non-state actors and used militia guerrilla tactics throughout the war even after the development of the Continental Line. ([35](#), [36](#))

The most remarkable and effective field commander of the American forces was Daniel Morgan, whose ability to integrate militia and regulars at the battle of Cowpens set up Cornwallis' ultimate defeat at Yorktown. ([37](#))

This was Daniel Morgan. ([37](#)). A veteran of the French and Indian War, Morgan commanded one of Virginia's two rifle companies sent to support the Siege of Boston in late June 1775. Morgan had served as an officer in the Virginia Colonial Militia since the French and Indian War. He recruited 96 men in 10 days and assembled them at Winchester on 14 July. He then marched them 600 miles to Boston in only 21 days, arriving on Aug. 6, 1775. Known as Morgan's Riflemen, they soon discouraged British raids out of Boston with the accuracy of their long-range fire, something the British could not match. He also initiated tactics which first targeted the British formation's Indian guides, then their officers, then their NCOs. The British found this to be "barbaric."

In effective counter insurgency and guerrilla war functions the leadership both militarily and politically should be targeted and eliminated by destroying their plans as did David's Spies to Absalom in that revolution or by their execution or assassination.

Morgan was an impressive field commander, big in size yet poorly educated, he enjoyed drinking and gambling but his troops never forgot who was in command. Morgan had served as a civilian teamster during the French and Indian War. After returning from the advance on Fort Duquesne by General Braddock's command, he was punished with 499 lashes (a usually fatal sentence) for punching his superior officer. Morgan, not surprisingly, hated the British army. He later served as a rifleman in the Provincial forces assigned to protect the western border settlements from French-backed Indian raids, and in 1774 he served in Dunmore's War, taking part in raids on Shawnee villages in the Ohio Country.

During the Saratoga campaign, Morgan's riflemen played a key role at the preliminary battles of Freeman's Farm and later at Bemis Heights, where at his order the British General Fraser was mortally wounded by rifleman Tim Murphy. This was the single most important rifle shot of the war, since the loss of Fraser caused the British attack to collapse and the subsequent surrender of the entire British force persuaded the French to enter the war.

After Cowpens, Morgan went home on sick leave, but he had certainly paid the British back for those 499 lashes. There were many American officers and men who had acquired their military experience in the French and Indian War. And like Morgan, many of them had also acquired an acute understanding of what the British army could and could not do in the terrain of North America. This formation of young soldiers in the crucible of war is a constant found throughout history. The primary lessons were moral ones, not military. And morale is critical in 4th Generation Warfare.

If the intention is to preserve this nation Americans must learn the lessons of clandestine, counter insurgency and guerrilla warfare and be WILLING and able to apply them when needed to off set the insurgency which is now occurring in the civilian, military, law enforcement, judicial and political arena's in the United States of America.

As Hammes describes, (38) "From 1987 to 1990, I got a small taste of the practical aspects of insurgency. I spent those years training insurgents in various locations of the world. This was the tail end of the Cold War and the United States still had vested interests in the outcome of a number of insurgencies. The most intriguing part of the tour was the opportunity to talk to these men. I was particularly impressed with two aspects of the men I met. First was their **utter determination** to continue the struggle despite the odds. They were not deterred by fear of death. In each case, they were engaged in a struggle with a government force that possessed many times their military power. In each case, they knew the odds and were not deterred. They believed in their cause and were sure that belief was powerful enough to defeat the government. The idea they fought for was central to their resistance. In fact, they were counting on political power generated by that idea to neutralize the overwhelming military power of the government. As I worked with these men, I realized this fact should be obvious to Americans. An idea kept our American War for Independence alive during seven long years of war. (It should also be noted that for most of the key leaders of our War for Independence, the struggle began a decade earlier with the Stamp Act crisis.)"

The second outstanding trait was the **remarkable ingenuity** they displayed for overcoming problems. Whether the problems were tactical, logistical, doctrinal, or political, they often attacked them from a direction that simply would not occur to a Western trained soldier. *I found insurgents are not impressed with conventional power. They respect it but seek ways around it, and have consistently succeeded in finding those ways.* They often used tactics and techniques that were outside the training and experience of the government forces. Despite years of war, they consistently surprised government forces with their ingenuity and determination. Insurgents are living proof of why man is at the top of the food chain. We are the most creative, treacherous, loyal, aggressive, and determined life form to yet evolve. *Any nation (or organization) that assumes it is inherently superior to another is setting itself up for disaster.* I would add to this last sentence that the same goes for political elites, only more so. This is perfectly understood by 4th Generation Warfare fighters.

Michael Collins, (39) perhaps the 20th Century's most accomplished virtuoso in 4th Generation Warfare, fought in the disastrous 1916 Easter Rising, and afterward was being paraded with other prisoners through the streets of Dublin on their way to prison. As the column passed the ruins of Liberty Hall, a young woman caught up with her cousin (Collins) and called out to him. "What will you do now?" "Do?" asked Collins, "Do? Sure I'll get ready for the next round of course. I've got some of the names taken down already. The best of men." His cousin was flabbergasted. "But, What? How are you going to train them?" she called out. Collins replied, "Sure won't His Majesty's Government train them for me?" Collins' best field commander in West Cork, Tom Barry, a British Army veteran of the Iraq theater during World War I, is reflected in "Guerrilla Days in Ireland". (40)

This is something that the governments who seek to fight 4th Generation Warfare don't understand. The 4th Generation Warfare warrior thinks in terms of decades, not months or years. He or she will fight until victory or death. The long wars in Vietnam, Iraq and Afghanistan, then, can also be seen as universities for American armed citizens in 4th Generation Warfare tactics and techniques.

Who Invented 4th Generation Warfare? Col. Hammes (38) says "This new form of war did not arrive on the scene as a fully developed instrument but has evolved over decades and continues to evolve at widely scattered locations. We are not in the middle of a revolution in military affairs but rather an evolution." Different authors assign different origins to 4th Generation Warfare. Hammes traces it to Mao Tse-Tung, yet we know that much of Mao's theory was based upon the ancient Sun Tzu. Hammes then discusses the "Vietnamese modification" and the "Sandinista refinement." In each of these latter cases the insurgents were fighting for control of the mindset of the United States Congress through popular opinion within our country. But of course this is precisely how the Founders of our own country defeated the British; the defeat at Yorktown caused Lord North's government to collapse and the new government that replaced it came in with a promise to end the North American war, which it promptly did. "Street Without Joy" by Bernard B. Fall, (41) suggests that the principal theorist of 4th Generation Warfare on the communist side in Vietnam was neither Ho Chi Minh nor Vo Nguyen Giap but Truong-Chinh.

The reality of fact is that 4th generation war or Clandestine, Counter Insurgent, Guerrilla war has been going on throughout all of history. A detailed analysis of [2nd Samuel chapters 15-17](#) and more will provide suitable examples of how the insurgency of Absalom, King David's Son, used this very process in fomenting revolution against his father. Also how King David used clandestine operations to foil plans for his destruction by the advisers of Absalom during the revolution. These events occurred in history some 3000 years ago and are simply being rediscovered today. So it is appropriate to understand as Solomon, David's Son said, "Nothing is NEW under the sun".

Michael Collins (39) added his own improvisation to 4th generation war which proved

decisive when he evolved a new concept of guerrilla warfare that in time would be copied by guerrilla leaders all over the globe from Mao to Shamir. The Collins philosophy was based not on the capture of enemy bricks and mortar, but of its information. Traditionally Dublin Castle, the seat of British administration in Ireland, had used a network of spies and informers to infiltrate and then snuff out movements directed at securing Irish independence. Collins perfected a system of spying on these spies. Every important branch of the Castle system, whether it was banking, policing, railways, shipping, the postal service, whatever, was infiltrated by his agents. These were not highly trained, CIA-style operatives, but ordinary men and women, little people, whom nobody had ever taken notice of before. Collins gave them a belief in themselves, a courage they did not know they possessed, and they in return gave him a complete picture of how their masters operated. For the first time in their history the Irish had a team of assassins trained to eliminate informers.

Held back from making a full-scale use of their Army by the force of world opinion, largely Irish-American opinion, the British tried to fight a ‘police war’, carried on by hastily-formed forces of ex-servicemen and officers troubled by little discipline and less conscience. The Black and Tans and the Auxiliaries wrote new chapters of horror in the bloodstained story of the Anglo-Irish relationship. In the reprisals for these activities Collins and his colleagues included the burning of homes and creameries, random murder and the widespread use of torture. In addition to his campaign of warfare, he ran a national loan, which was banned by the British so that either its advertisement or sale became illegal. Yet the loan was fully subscribed, and every subscriber got a receipt. (39, 42) As brilliant as he was, Collins would later claim that he drew much of his own inspiration from the lessons learned by the Boer commando Christiaan Rudolph de Wet.

It is safe to say that 4th Generation Warfare has been evolving over at least the past couple of centuries, (actually and historically since the dawn of civilization surely even before 1000 BC) not the decades Col. Hammes suggests (38), and certainly in terms of timeline, the American War for Independence of 1775 can lay as good a claim as any to being its inventors. This is an opinion that the current American Three Percent have no problem adopting. However, a 4th Generation Civil War waged by men and women who are loyal to the Founders’ concepts would not fight an unrestrained Al Qaeda campaign but one specifically targeted to spare civilians and to target the decision makers. (26) The next American civil war will either successfully break new ground in 4th Generation Warfare tactics and techniques or it will descend into a welter of blood and massacre. Governments generally have a tendency to do that when they’re losing. The 4th Generation Warfare warriors who claim to represent the Founders’ Republic will have to require of themselves far more discipline and intelligence, no Fort Sumters and no Oklahoma City bombings.

“War amongst the people” (43, 51) is both a graphic description of modern warlike situations, and also a conceptual framework. It reflects the hard fact that there will generally be no secluded battlefield upon which armies engage, nor are there necessarily

armies, definitely not on all sides. To be clear, this is not asymmetric warfare, a phrase I dislike invented to explain a situation in which conventional states were threatened by unconventional powers but in which conventional military power in some formulation would be capable of both deterring the threat and responding to it. This “War amongst the people” is different, it is the reality in which the people in the streets, houses and fields, all the people, anywhere, are the battlefield. Military engagements can take place anywhere, in the presence of civilians, against civilians, in defense of civilians. Civilians are the targets, objectives to be won, as much as they are an opposing force. (26) Labeling wars as asymmetric is to me something of a euphemism to avoid acknowledging that one’s opponent is not playing to my strengths and I am not winning.

The advocates of the disarmament of the American populace always begin by saying that no group of citizenry can oppose the might of the federal government because the vast array of weaponry including aircraft, artillery and even nuclear weapons that the federals could bring to bear if they are opposed trumps any number of armed “insurrectionists” with rifles. This *ludicrous* argument is not only contradicted by many examples throughout history but begs the moral question of resistance to a predatory government itself. If a government is so depraved as to use nuclear weapons against its own people on its own soil, it will not long survive the condemnation of even the people who otherwise support it. The same goes for artillery and air strikes, even so called “surgical, decapitation operations.” Such weapons are, in 4th Generation Warfare, merely expensive but useless, appendages, especially in an uncontrolled media environment.

Unfortunately in our time in these United States a vast amount array of the media is no longer uncontrolled and independent but is in fact the source of the government’s and other player’s propaganda to subvert the true normal functions of this constitutional republic. Mr. Vanderboegh does address this a bit later and this may now be changing with the new administration in 2025.

The fact that collectivist familiars even suggest the nuclear boogeyman as a real threat by the federal government merely marks them as moral pariahs, inciters of holocaust, and tells you everything you need to know about such people. THEY are apparently the ones who are willing to see millions of their own citizens dead in pursuit of gun control and a government monopoly on violence. They are bloodthirsty people indeed. The utility, practical or moral, of using even precision-guided munitions from artillery or aircraft in a civil war upon one’s own people, in one’s own territory and athwart one’s own logistics tail is also militarily problematic, especially in a media environment that includes the Internet, even more especially in a country such as the United States which depends upon it for so much of its own economic activity that it cannot be totally shut down.

First, such strikes are not entirely “precision-guided” as we have seen in Iraq and Afghanistan, leading to “collateral damage” (a military euphemism for dead civilians) and moral discredit. Remember such a civil war would be “amongst the people” in

General Smith's term and seeking their loyalty. Thus any smart 4th Generation Warfare operator is going to desire to eliminate the possibility of his side creating "collateral damage" as much as possible. Notice I said "eliminate the possibility." Only a fool or a foreign government agent would try to advance his or her cause by committing an Oklahoma City bombing with a day-care full of innocent kids in it. Remember, too, that 4th Generation Warfare warfare is designed to change the minds of the "war making elite" in their opponent's capitol. (26) Oklahoma City type bombings merely strengthen their hand, not discredit it. (Recall that after he was re-elected in 1996, Bill Clinton told reporters on Air Force One while traveling back to DC from Arkansas that "Oklahoma City broke the spell.")

Indeed, if you are looking for a weapon that is in fact "precision-guided" you need look no further than a bolt-action rifle aimed at an identified target and wielded by someone who knows what to do with it. This, in fact, defines the Three Percenters, who, being limited to rifles, know them very well and compete with each other to win matches somewhere in this country every weekend. Can this be why Senator Dianne Feinstein, a long-time advocate of "turn 'em in, Mr. and Mrs. America", is so obsessed with "sniper" rifles that can "puncture a limousine" or "take down an aircraft"? (13)

Second, such bad publicity might be endured if the civil war was quickly put to an end by such tactics, but in 4th Generation Warfare this is not only uncertain, it is fantasy. The final critical characteristic of 4th Generation Warfare is that its timelines, organizations, and objectives are different from those of earlier generations. Of particular importance is understanding that the timelines are very much longer. The United States wants to fight short, well-defined wars. America went into Vietnam, Bosnia, Kosovo, Afghanistan, and Iraq convinced she could "clean it up" quickly. In each war, our leaders told the people America would be out in a year or so. For the United States, a long war is five years.

Unfortunately, 4th Generation Warfare wars are LONG. The Chinese Communists fought for twenty-eight years (1921-1949). The Vietnamese Communists fought for thirty years (1945-1975). The Sandinistas fought for eighteen years (1961-1979). The Palestinians have been resisting Israeli occupation for fifty years so far (1975-2025). The Chechens have been fighting for more than ten years. Al-Qaeda has been fighting for their vision of the world for more than forty years, since the founding of MAK in 1984. Numerous other insurgencies have lasted decades. Accordingly, when getting involved in a 4th Generation Warfare fight, organizations should be planning for a decades-long commitment. From an American point of view, this may well be the single most important characteristic of 4th Generation Warfare.

Next, we need to understand that 4th Generation Warfare organizations are different. (26) Since Mao, 4th Generation Warfare organizations have focused on the movement's long term political viability rather than its short term tactical effectiveness. They do not see themselves only as military organizations but as webs that generate the political power

central to 4th Generation Warfare. Thus, these organizations are unified by ideas. The leadership and the organizations are networked to provide for survivability and continuity when attacked. And the leadership recognizes that their most important function is to sustain the idea and the organizations, not simply to win on the battlefield. (38, p221-2)

Much is made in Third-Generation Warfare of “getting inside the enemy’s OODA Loop” (observe, orient, decide, and act function ‘loop’) in order to disrupt their operations. Hammes points out that 4th Generation Warfare warriors don’t even try. Finally, because of the long timelines, even the objectives are different. 4Th generation warfare operations do not seek to service more targets faster to disrupt an enemy’s OODA loop. They do not seek to destroy an opponent’s industrial base using the U.S. Air Force’s concept of targeting key segments of an opponent’s society. Nor do they seek to dislocate the enemy’s armed forces so that their decision cycle fails and the enemy collapses. In fact, it is essential to 4th Generation Warfare strategists that the opponent complete his strategic OODA loop, with the resulting decision that the war is too costly to continue. *For the advocates of the government monopoly of force, I would like to point out that it is impossible to nuke an idea to extinction, especially on your own soil.*

Hammes (38, 26) concludes the chapter with: 4th-generation-warfare opponents focus on the political aspects of the conflict. Because the ultimate objective is changing minds of the enemy’s political leadership, the intermediate objectives are all milestones in shifting the opinion of the various target audiences, the people. They know that time is on their side, Westerners in general, and Americans in particular, are NOT known for their patience. Americans are not a people who think in terms of struggles lasting decades. 4Th generation warfare enemies will not seek immediate objectives but a long term shift in the political will of their enemies. They will accept numerous tactical and operational setbacks in pursuit of the goal.

Colonel Harry Summers (14) noted that after the Vietnam war he told a North Vietnamese colonel that the United States had never been beaten on the battlefield. The North Vietnamese Colonel replied, “That is true. It is also irrelevant.” It is essential to understand that 4th Generation Warfare opponents do not focus on swift battlefield victories. They focus on the long term strategic approach. They focus on winning wars, not battles.

In an American civil war between an ideas based Three Percent and a disarmament bent federal government, who then would lose interest first? You cannot destroy an idea, not even an obviously bad and Evil one, witness collectivism in all its forms. And Gen. Hammes further points out “At the operational level in 4th generation warfare, all an opponent has to move is ideas. He can do so through a wide variety of methods, from email to snail mail to personal courier to messages embedded in classified advertisements. He will try to submerge his communications in the noise of the everyday activity that is an essential part of modern society. It will be extraordinarily

difficult to detect the operational level activities of a 4th Generation Warfare opponent.” (38, p218.) Yes, it will. Especially in a civil war set in your own highly developed country.

Potential 4th Generation Warfare Targeting

Potential 4th Generation Warfare Civil War Targeting by the The Federal Government and the Three Percenters would include:

- Military Targets (ordnance)
Any industrial plant, city, or other object, or any person, group of persons, or force marked as a target for destruction, damage, injury, or capture because of its direct or indirect use in the conduct or support of an enemy's military endeavor. In restricted usage, a military person, force, installation, or area marked as a target because of its use, or potential use, in direct military operations. (43)

This definition is made obsolete by 4th Generation Warfare because “direct military operations” are precisely what the 4th Generation Warfare insurgent seeks to avoid. His target is the mind and the will of the people and political leadership of his enemy.

Considerations for Government in 4th Generation War

In addition to all of the above information, any federal government of the United States which wishes to make war on its own people must overcome a few statistics unrelated to the Three Percent or 4th Generation Warfare. The United States is made up of 3.79 MILLION square miles with somewhere around 380 million people living there. This makes it the third largest nation in the world by both land area and population. There are, not unimportantly, something on the order of 150 million firearm owners scattered across this vast country and today over 300 million firearms privately owned along with over 5 trillion rounds of ammunition. This is about 42% of the population who claim to possess at least 1 gun. The U.S. has just 4% of the world's population but has about 40% of civilian owned guns globally, according to a 2018 [report](#) from the Switzerland based Small Arms Survey. (52) The Small Arms Survey estimates that American civilians own 393 million guns, ranking the U.S. number one in firearms per capita. (45)

By comparison, Iraq is only 168,754 square miles in area (about the size of the state of California) with only 31 million in population. Afghanistan is a bit bigger with 250,000 square miles in area and a population also of around 30 million. What kind of **bloody-minded fool** would deliberately ignite an insurgency in a country, especially his own, 9 times larger than both of those combined and containing 5 times the population, many of them armed and skilled at the use of those arms?

DECAPITATION:

“Don't you ever stand for that sort of thing. Someone ever tries to kill you, you try to kill 'em right back.” Captain Malcolm Reynolds, Firefly, Movie, 2002. After more than a decade in Afghanistan and Iraq, the American policy elite believed it had a pretty good bead on counterinsurgency in 4th Generation Warfare which rests principally on one

tactic: decapitation of terrorist leadership. Leadership decapitation (46) is a high-profile tactic that involves the capture or killing of top insurgent leaders. It is frequently used against guerrilla insurgencies. In the past two centuries, top insurgent leaders have been killed or captured in just under 50 percent of counter insurgency campaigns. Yet we know little about the nature of the relationship between leadership decapitation and counterinsurgency effectiveness. Is capturing or killing insurgent leaders an effective tactic? Or is it counterproductive, radicalizing insurgent movements, strengthening their resolve, and making them more difficult to defeat? Or does it have no effect at all? The general consensus is that leadership decapitation of guerrilla groups is ineffective. These conclusions should give scholars pause because they are based on unsystematic research designs, minimal empirical data, and incomparable units, usually terrorist organizations or foreign leaders. (46)

Johnston himself believes decapitation is effective and though he criticizes the critics of decapitation, his work shows an almost entire ignorance of 4th Generation Warfare which presumably decapitation is supposed to defeat. How does a drone strike, for example, kill an idea? A broader consideration with a little history is found at Michael Zenko's blog at the Council on Foreign Relations. (47) "The United States did not always carry out targeted killings (or assassinations) of perceived national security threats. To the contrary, the norm against targeted killings outside of battlefield settings was established by President Gerald Ford in 1976, when he issued Executive Order 11905: 'No employee of the United States Government shall engage in, or conspire to engage in, political assassination.' Until the late 1990s, U.S. targeted killings were officially proscribed and rarely seriously considered or authorized by senior officials."

Daniel Byman, a professor in the Security Studies Program at Georgetown University and the research director of the Saban Center at Brookings, (48) wrote: "Targeted killings work, just not in all places and at all times. They can steadily attrite a terrorist group's leadership and, over time, leaving it with fewer impressive leaders and fewer skilled personnel. Their biggest impact, however, is often in what the terrorist organization does not do. Leaders must spend their time hiding and changing locations in order to survive. They must curtail phone communications and avoid interacting with large groups of followers, all of which make them far less able to guide the organization, inspire followers, and enforce their will. Leaders often instigate witch-hunts in order to go after supposed traitors who provided the lethal intelligence, further reducing the group's effectiveness.

Targeted killings, however, are a TACTIC, not a strategy. The inevitable civilian deaths that occur can at times, but do not always, create significant numbers of additional enemies as well as carrying a moral burden. And politically it is tempting to ignore the broader dimensions of counter terrorism and counterinsurgency as long as bad guys are dying on a regular basis. These faults and limits, while serious, should not lead to the rejection of targeted killings but rather a recognition of its costs and why alone they will not suffice.

Again, this shows an imperfect understanding, even by Al Qaeda and the Taliban, of 4th Generation Warfare. *4th Generation Warfare, (and also clandestine counter insurgent guerrilla warfare) does not initially require organizations to be successful, merely the transmission of ideas to independent actors of like beliefs who organize locally and attack locally, even if the targets are not of national or even international, significance.* (26)

Sarah Holewinski, executive director of Center for Civilians in Conflict, a human rights advocate and critic of U.S. drone policy, comes closest to understanding the limited use of decapitation in a 4th Generation Warfare world. “They may kill some of the people they’re intended to kill some of the time. But as a stand-in for long-term counter terrorism policy, covert drone strikes in particular may be doing more harm than good to national security. They’re supposed to rid the United States of enemies without the cost of troop lives or the muck of a traditional invasion. But on the other side of the balance sheet, drone strikes are creating anger, not only among locals in Pakistan and Yemen, but among people elsewhere who want an excuse to hate America. Even for America’s fans, drone strikes call into question U.S. commitment to responsible use of force, thanks to the information vacuum around who can be targeted, why, under what legal framework, and how CIA and Special Forces protocols protect civilians. A fight worth fighting comes with sacrifice. Drones have relieved much of the sacrifice born by the soldier but not the civilian, who lives in constant fear of sudden death. Regardless of civilian casualties, which are highly disputed, the psychological trauma, displacement, and suspicion among neighbors of colluding with one side or the other has turned communities into war zones, even with no visible boots on the ground. No wonder ordinary people are chanting ‘Death to America’ after strikes. There are no numbers on how many formerly agnostic civilians are now skeptical about U.S. power nor how many terrorists may arise as a result of the current drone policy. That X factor is reason enough to pause before claiming a counter terrorism panacea.”

The American people are largely supportive of decapitation as applied in Afghanistan and elsewhere, but what happens when the targets are in Marion, Ohio or Salt Lake City, Utah? What happens when the killings of their friends and neighbors go on and on because the federal government can think of no better way to compel obedience to unjust, unconstitutional diktats contrary to the Founders’ Republic? Back on 17 September 2009, in a column on my blog “Sipsey Street Irregulars”, I noted Patrick Johnston’s embrace of decapitation strategies; “Dark Thoughts, Misadventure, Spasm & Decapitation. How I spent Constitution Day”; and commented on how, hypothetically, that might play out. The thing is, once started, the regime will find it almost impossible to stop on any terms besides their own unconditional surrender as they would be fighting an enraged but dispersed network counter insurgency. It is likely that after a few weeks of such blood-letting, the administration will be unable to find anybody left alive with sufficient influence among the counter insurgents with whom they can negotiate an end to the horror. The fact of the matter is that they would have done their best to kill the

folks they would need to stop what they started. And they will want to stop it, oh, yes, out of concern for their own miserable hides if nothing else. For they will have provoked a conflict that will not be directed at the war-fighters, the grunts, even those in the outnumbered federal police, but rather at the war makers, i.e. themselves. In this they have only Bill Clinton to blame. When the Philanderer in Chief, frustrated with Serbian intransigence in 1999, changed the rules of engagement to include the political leadership, news media and the intellectual underpinning of his enemy's war effort, he accidentally filed suit under the Law of Unintended Consequences. The Serbians knuckled under, yes. But the rest of the world took note, including the Three Percent. I assure you, the appeal to the higher court of history in that case has yet to be decided.

Decapitation, I have tried to explain to people, works both ways in 4th Generation Warfare. Johnston is as wrong as he can be when comparing past history to 4th Generation warfare, distributed networks and leaderless resistance, especially as will be practiced in the United States when it ever goes to war with itself. He is wrong, but the powerful men and women he is writing for think he's right. Unfortunately for them, in the situation the administration would find itself after Waco Two, the “decapitation” strategy would for them more resemble Russian Roulette played with an automatic pistol.

A Hypothetical Scenario

They kill some of the Three Percent, at first accidentally perhaps, but almost immediately thereafter intentionally. The spasm of defensive killing begins, targeted at their leadership. They spasm in return. They would not be able to scuttle into their “green zones” fast enough. For each clumsy attack on the Three Percent, they receive a lesson in the 500 meter war, one bullet, or many bullets, at a time. They commit “collateral damage” of innocents, the Three Percent stays within their rules of engagement and kill only war planners and war wagers. I have asked this question before. *These leaders will fight to the last ATF agent or to the last oath breaking soldier. Will they fight to the first senior bureaucrat, the second Congressman, the third newspaper editor, the 4th Senator, the fifth White House aide? Can they stand Bill Clinton's rules of engagement?* This is what 4th Generation Warfare will involve in the next American civil war in the 21st Century.

Can you understand now why I am trying to get that “useful dire warning” out to as many people as possible? Only if both sides understand the possibility of how bloody this civil war will inevitably be can it be avoided.

Unfortunately in this early stage of the 21st century revolution in the United States the political leaders have no intention of stopping their insurgent aspirations to change this nation into a socialist empire for their own picking. They have no intention of not steam rolling over the freedom, privacy, property and lives of the citizens if it will serve their purposes. Mr. Vanderbourg's desire to bring out this “useful dire warning” as useful, will in fact be useful IF the three percenters will read and take to heart his presentation of what will be necessary to return the United States of America to its function as a constitutional republic guided by the

This brings us to today. (49) We constantly hear at many levels demands for bans on semi-automatic rifles and for federal control of all private transfers of all firearms, the so-called “gun show” loophole. It has been said, there will be no “grandfather clause” of existing weapons and that confiscation of all military-pattern semi-auto rifles is intended. Yet, the Three Percent will not obey such laws and they will defy the federal government to do anything about it. I was once told by a “gun safety” advocate back in the Nineties that he favored total civilian firearms confiscation. Only the military and police should have weapons he averred and what did I think about that? I began to give him a reasoned answer and he cut me off with an abrupt, “Give me the short answer.” I thought for a moment and said, “*If you try to take our firearms we will kill you.*” It was true then, it is true now. The “arbitrarians” believe that they can continue to encroach upon the liberty, privacy and property of their fellow Americans without consequence to them. They cannot. When FREEDOM turns to tyranny under democratic socialism, the armed citizen still gets to vote, *with his rifle*. Any grasping would be tyrant who ignores that truth does so at his or her own peril. I pray, then, that “Absolved” is viewed as a useful dire warning in time to prevent the 4th Generation Civil War it describes.

I have taken the liberty to modify some of the terminology and ideas presented very well by Mr. Mike Vanderboegh to bring some statistical information up to date and also to present his ideas in the light of Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment principles.

[The American Revolution of the 21st Century](#)

The principles and functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and the Spiritual Life of the client nation must continue no matter who is king, ruler, or president. A change in the administration of the client nation must not change the establishment Modus Operandi or the communication of Absolute Truth nor distract the Spiritual Life of the believer in the client nation. When the 2nd civil war starts here in the United States of America there will be no Laws of Divine Establishment or Divine Institutions function on the insurgency side. Therefore, it is highly possible that the next civil war will most likely NOT be based in a revolution as the main cause. However, it is abundantly clear today that the Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine are both being actively suppressed under socialism and anti-Christian religious sentiments. The Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions must continue to pump truth into the people of the nation whenever it is possible and this is the only hope for any nation in time of disaster. In a client nation in disaster situations, no matter what the situation may be, for there to be any hope for recovery, believers must have the same freedom to choose for Bible Doctrine and unbelievers for the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions as in times of prosperity and they will not have this unless these Absolute Truths from Bible Doctrine are taught. In the current ongoing revolution in the United States any place the revolution controls is no place for someone to be

communicating Bible Doctrine. However, if there is any Positive Volition in any area, no matter how difficult the historical circumstances, Bible Doctrine will be available. Continual teaching of Bible Doctrine in civil war, when possible, will result in any present Positive Volition being able to be added to the potential pivot to secure the nation when the war ends. There will be no instability for anyone with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine only historical pressure. However, when under great pressure, those who stop to weep are the arrogant but those who weep and keep doing what they are doing are humble. There are the 2 prerequisites to divine solutions for the believer in disaster:

- God helps the helpless ([2Cor 12:10](#))
- God gives grace to the humble ([1Pet 5:5](#))

The reality found in doctrinal truth is that “God makes war against the arrogant and gives grace to the humble”. ([James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#)) Believers must understand that only God can deliver in historical crisis and no one has any special power to deliver except by means of the use of the same [Faith Rest Drill](#) ([5 Stages](#)) that all other believers have.

Decline of the United States

The United States of America is living under pseudo prosperity and in a fools paradise on the verge of total destruction which is manifest on a daily basis from the truth of Bible Doctrine and from an understanding of the Lies under the Policy and Plan of Satan put out by the majority of news media. American interpretation of Human History is terrible and the blame for historical pressure and disaster is erroneously ascribed to communism, islam, the Evil of the American government, loss of freedoms, etc. In reality the true blame is with the individual believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ who has neglected or totally rejected accurate Bible Doctrine and accepted substitutes under the process of the apostasy of [Reversionism](#) and degeneracy of [Arrogance](#). The Apostasy of Reversionism is one of the primary causes of the decline of any nation from ancient Assyria to any modern nation. The entire fault must lie with the individual who is under [Negative Volition](#) to Bible Doctrine. This is the Believer who rejects Bible Doctrine and the authority of the teaching of Bible Doctrine and the principle of right pastor and who falls willingly into some form of reversionism. Also the unbeliever who rejects the doctrinal principles detailed in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The communists, moslems, mediocre government and the many other things which are currently and actively destroying this nation are operations under the Plan and Policy of Satan but are also used, basically allowed, as instruments by God to punish this nation for its so obvious failures. Therefore the real fault lies with the believer who has rejected the word of God and also with the unbeliever who rejects establishment principles and functions in the nation. Behind all the failures of the client nation is the spiritual degeneration arising from collective reversionism. God has blessed this country just as He had blessed Judah in their past and believers must recognize that this blessing and the nation as a whole can be removed in an instant at any time by God, just as Judah was removed even to this very day. Today the United States is composed of confused people and races and nationalities and is NOT by any stretch of the imagination “One Nation Under God” any longer. The people of this country today are totally mixed up emotional reversionists undergoing Emotional Revolt of the Soul and going to their destruction with NO concept of what true Freedom is and what it requires of them. In part this destruction of the United States of America is being caused by the softest

attitude toward the trash and scum of the society ever in existence, as was the case in Rome just prior to its destruction. The nation no longer has a pivot of mature believers and the only hope of the nation is in the souls of the remnant of mature believers scattered throughout the nation, these are known in the Old Testament Scripture as (heb) [Jeshurun](#). Therefore, in order to save this nation there needs to be a very large number of believers who make a concerted push to reach [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and receive their Escrow [Super – Grace](#) blessings.

The United States of America is totally saturated with all categories of the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) and is involved in an ongoing revolution in this 21st century and does not even recognize it. When the Laws of Divine Establishment authority is completely removed, no matter how bad it may be being used at that time, then revolutionary catastrophe is inevitable. The principle is that the things which are considered ‘BAD’ with a national government will always be far worse in revolution. Criminals often pretend to be crusaders and thus becomes a facade for their own revolution. In overt revolution the criminal uses the crusader to foment the revolution and gain public opinion and support. Ultimately these crusader “dupes” in the revolution are discarded and very often destroyed if the revolution is successful. It is very difficult to differentiate criminal from crusader when they are combined in one person. Such finesse requires maximum arrogance and it leads to involvement in many of the categories of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Then when a revolution removes a governmental leader there always results something far worse than the bad leader, ANARCHY.

The overriding questions for every person in the United States especially every believer should be:

- “What is our establishment authority?”
- “Where does our constitution fit into this picture”?
- “Was the constitution actually set aside in the first American civil war, the War Between The States, and if so does it still apply today?”
- “How is it going to be possible ever to reestablish the constitution as a strong legal foundation for our nation?”

During revolution and “change” in a nation, a Liberal Government always cooperates in this matter by actually being wrong and promoting EVIL according to biblical standards in the form of:

- Socialism
- Welfare state functions
- Redistribution of wealth
- Tax upon profits including savings and retirement
- Downgrading military
- Promoting a disrespectful attitude toward Law Enforcement
- Criminal rights
- Mental Attitude, Verbal and Overt Sin
- Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I Involvement
- Human Good production to save mankind

Adding ambition to arrogance results in Evil being intensified by the emergence of revolutionary leadership. The people are always promised that they will gain from the revolution but they always lose. These are the people, who have been forged into the weapon of revolution, but who are inevitably destroyed by arrogant manipulation at the hands of the hard core revolutionaries. In the atmosphere of revolution there is only the advancement of EVIL and temporary or semi permanent profit, but ONLY to the hard core conspirators. Therefore, Revolution is the Oligarchy of EVIL.

American Low Intensity Conflict 2021

“In Focus, Forward Observer” 26 Oct 2021, Mike Shelby. <https://www.forwardobserver.com/>

Throughout history, smaller or lesser armed insurgent and revolutionary movements have pursued subversion, sabotage, terrorism, and other guerrilla tactics to wear down the WILL of the state to resist the revolution. The strategy of these movements includes:

- Reduce the state’s capacity to act by depleting the resources of the government
- Undermine government legitimacy, most often by provoking overreactions which anger the populace
- Challenge the authority of the government in areas where support for the revolution is strong

We’ve seen the most recent iteration of this strategy developing since at least 2016, and it is one of the reasons the United States is locked in a low intensity conflict, which is likely to worsen throughout this decade. The nature of low intensity conflict is that it doesn’t cross the threshold into conventional open warfare involving troops, tanks, artillery and bombers, and the capacity for violence is not the decisive factor in victory. This is a 4th Generation of War which one does not win on the battlefield with conventional military or armed violence, but is a low intensity conflict only possible to be won through turning the support and consent of the people toward the conflict. It is mostly a politico-socio-psychological conflict. A clandestine war, a 4th generation war of insurgency. (26) Weapons of psychological war and law fare, or legal warfare, are by far more important in this arena than arms. As we see right now, the overwhelming majority of “enemy action” is happening in traditional media, social media, banking and finance, courtrooms and district attorneys offices, and other non-military spaces, not traditionally associated with war. Yet it is all low intensity warfare.

Over the past several years, I’ve highlighted the large disparities between the strengths and weaknesses of left wing and right wing groups involved in our ongoing Low Intensity Conflict. While Far Left groups, such as radical anarchist and armed revolutionary socialist groups, lack extensive military-type arms, they excel in the psychological and social aspects of war. This is what can be called “soft power.” Right wing groups, on the other hand, have long had a focus on developing capabilities needed for conventional conflict, what can be called hard power, largely at the expense of developing soft power. In our own domestic low intensity war, the Far Left has the clear strategic advantage as long as the conflict remains politico-socio-psychological, (clandestine) which is likely. But there is evidence that Far Left groups are continuing to prepare for armed political

violence. {This is the historical progression of this type of conflict as detailed by Trinquier. (26)} Often this is couched in the verbiage of self-defense where armed socialist groups encourage acquiring and training with firearms and tactical gear to become the backbone {the military arm} of a revolutionary socialist political movement. Five years ago, these Leftist groups were armed with grandpa's shotgun or a bolt-action rifle. Today, we continue to see pictures and videos of range days signaling advancing capabilities, including AR-15s and AK 47 type rifles with appropriate and sometimes high quality accessories. Over the past couple years, we've reported on the Far Left's attempt to develop their own tactical industries, including gun stores, ranges, and tactical trainers catering specifically to the Far Left. One trend that continues to this day is the manufacture and distribution of body armor. An individual involved in this effort recently claimed to have now supplied 300 Portland anarchists with Level 3 or 3+ body armor.

As we've experienced and seen throughout modern history, political parties often have militant wings composed of armed militias. Sinn Fein and the IRA in Northern Ireland, and the Sadrist Movement and Jaysh al-Mahdi in Iraq are a couple examples. This decade, these hand-holding relationships are likely {the actual historical progression} to further develop between political movements and armed groups on both the Right and Left. Continued development would absolutely signal the rising risk of organized political violence. (26 – Modern Guerrilla Warfare} Although the United States was largely in a lull of low intensity conflict, especially compared to 2016 and 2020, there are reasons to believe this conflict will heat back up as we head into the fantastic overarching changes being implemented by Mr. Trump and his Administration now that the GOP has taken the House and Senate. This has led to claims of the illegitimacy of the last minute Biden legislation, which may still act as an accelerator of low intensity conflict as the nation moves into the next midterm elections. {This actually did occur in 2024 just after Mr. Trump won Re-election}

The “armed Left” tends to be the butt of jokes for many on the Right, however, we are seeing numerous veterans of Iraq and Afghanistan involved in training armed socialist and anarchist groups. If these groups continue to progress at the rate we've seen since 2016, they will likely develop into a formidable cadre of mentors and trainers as the “democratic socialist” movement grows more prominent this decade. If you read enough history, then you're likely to arrive at the conclusion that the establishment of capable cadres, combined with reliable financial support and the “mobilization of the masses,” is a future risk that should not be overlooked.

Intelligence gathering

“In Focus, Forward Observer” 26 Oct 2021, Dustin Mascorro

<https://www.forwardobserver.com/>

DRONES: A Federal Communications Commission (FCC) source said the agency must impose restrictions on Chinese drone maker DJI Technology because of national security risks. Commissioner Brendan Carr described the company as “Huawei on wings” and

called for the FCC to prohibit the purchase of DJI products with federal funds. “They are collecting vast troves of sensitive data on Americans and U. S. critical infrastructure, including high-risk images, using facial recognition technology, and remote sensors that can measure an individual’s body temperature and heart rate,” Carr said. The Department of Homeland Security and Defense Department separately affirmed the Chinese drone maker is “providing sensitive U. S. infrastructure & law enforcement data to Beijing.” (AC: Security researchers have warned about this type of surveillance since at least 2016. The Chinese likely have a map of the “human terrain” in the U. S. from exploiting surveillance cameras, drones, and social media applications which allows them to exploit social bases through gray zone warfare. {It almost appears in 2025 that the U.S. government has waited too long to avert any disaster which may be the direct result of this intelligence gathering by China})

Excerpts from, “In Focus, Forward Observer”, Tuesday, 9 November 2021, Mike Shelby
<https://www.forwardobserver.com/>

Various far Leftist groups are focusing primarily on three things:

- Environmental and indigenous rights activism
- Mutual aid
- Intelligence gathering.

In the 28 September 2021 In Focus Early Warning, I discussed Far Left activities targeting railways, pipelines, and other critical infrastructure, both over the past several years and potential plans for the future. {China has to this day in 2025 demonstrated the clear ability to disrupt a major part of the critical infrastructure of the United States including communications, water and power sources not to mention port functions} Far Left groups are again focusing on mutual aid projects, especially collecting coats and winter clothing for the homeless and other groups. Mutual aid is a common effort intended to help those in need, HOWEVER, it does bring the benefit of building popular support for anti-capitalist and other revolutionary goals. These mutual aid projects, such as soup kitchens and winter clothing drives, are in part intended to undermine government legitimacy by showing the ineffectiveness of the government at solving these problems. {Which in fact government is not designed or authorized to solve in the first place.} Additionally, if the United States does face an eviction crisis, {today in 2025 this is mass deportation of alien residents} anti-eviction activism and similar mutual aid projects will become a top priority for far left groups nationwide. Last year’s Red House Autonomous Zone in Portland, Oregon, for instance, was grown out of anti-eviction efforts. For now, a number of Leftist ‘gun groups’ are promoting mutual aid events in the Pacific Northwest, Colorado, and the East Coast. Mutual aid is a key part of community organizing and building popular support. Far Left groups continue to develop these networks, which can be relied on during the next wave of revolutionary and antifascist activism.

Far Left groups maintain a persistent focus on intelligence gathering. This is by far the most important point. We routinely see photographs taken by Far Left activists of legitimately fascist (Patriot Front) and Neo-Nazi gatherings. Photographs are typically

accompanied by identities of those pictured and a history of their activities. Developing intelligence remains a top priority for the Far Left. As we've covered numerous times in the past, the importance of security and the value of information is stressed in Far Left organizing and activist doctrine. Several blogs and websites host various manuals on intelligence and security, including Marighella's communist [Mini-Manual of the Urban Guerrilla](#). The accumulation of intelligence combined with mutual aid and community organizing will greatly aid Far Left revolutionary aims. These groups now have less than three years to continue organizing and preparing ahead of the 2024 elections. {2025 has shown that these efforts have fallen short of what were desired results by the far left}

The Southern Border

Rena Eze, Texas Governor Greg Abbott's spokeswoman, told sources that he "directed state agencies to begin placing large storage containers end to end at low-level water crossings to physically block any illegal immigrants from entry." The containers are expected to help "curb this invasion" according to Texas Rep. Troy Nehls (R-TX), and Abbot says there are still 733 miles of Texas border that need a physical barrier. Despite the additional \$750 million budget allocated to a border wall in Texas, there are no plans for when construction workers will be contracted or the wall will be completed. Troy Watson

Escalation of Current Situations

Forward Observer, Early Warning, Tuesday, 4 January 2022

<https://www.forwardobserver.com/>

U.S. COMMERCE DEPT SANCTIONS CHINA FOR "BRAIN CONTROL" EXPERIMENTS: The Commerce Department imposed sanctions on Chinese technology companies and announced last week that China's military is engaged in dangerous work related to "brain control" research. Commerce sanctioned 11 Chinese institutions, as well as China's Academy for Military Medical Sciences, who are involved in military research to disrupt or impair human neural activity through the use of external electronic devices. The objective of the research is to create "brain control" weaponry that can be employed in both **gray zone** and traditional armed conflicts. The research focused on the use of computer-generated neural signals deployed through RF transmitters to disrupt target functions and enhanced defenses from brain warfare weapons via programmable embedded microchips. (*Analyst Comment: China is demonstrating that it is not bound by conventional Western ethics when developing new cutting-edge weaponry for use in unrestricted warfare operations. This type of weapon will likely be used on China's ethnic and religious minorities in the testing phase and then deployed against political targets abroad. (Max Morton)*

REBELLION AND VIOLENCE: A recent poll conducted by the University of Maryland found that 1 in 3 Americans believe there are times when violence against the government is justified. This is the highest number for American's that hold these views recorded in twenty years, with previous poll percentages in 2015 and 2010 at 23% and 16%, respectively. (*Analyst Comment: Degraded trust in government and public*

institutions, and the inability of government to solve real problems, contributes to a growing willingness to use violence. {This is the desired result of insurgent modern guerrilla warfare. 26} With an increasing likelihood of violent unrest in the future, security considerations in many local areas will continue to increase in priority. (Dan Fleming)

<https://www.forwardobserver.com/>

The 2nd American Civil War

Last month, three major news outlets took aim at another American Civil War. Three retired U.S. generals claimed in a Washington Post column that the U.S. is headed for another armed insurrection {This is a definite misuse of the term insurrection in that the insurrection has already occurred and the United States is involved today in ongoing modern insurgent guerrilla war and the proper term here would be counter insurgency or counter revolution.} if nothing is done. source:

- <https://www.washingtonpost.com/opinions/2021/12/17/eaton-taguba-anderson-generals-military>

“Newsweek” warned that “millions of angry, armed Americans stand ready to seize power if Trump loses in 2024.” The article explains that neither side will be satisfied in a close race, with Democrats claiming voter intimidation for the loss or Republicans blaming voter fraud. With an “asymmetric capability to inflict violence,” the political Right, explains the article, stands ready to fight a war over the 2024 election. Source:

- <https://www.newsweek.com/2021/12/31/millions-angry-armed-americans-stand-ready-seize-power-if-trump-loses-2024-1660953.html>

The UK’s “DailyMail” quoted a political science professor and CIA advisor who warns that the U.S. is “closer to civil war than any of us would like to believe.” The U.S. is in “dangerous territory” like you would find in pre-conflict Ukraine or the Ivory Coast. Source:

- <https://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-10329219/CIA-advisor-expert-foreign-conflicts-believes-closer-civil-war-thought-possible.html>

More recently, Canadian media outlet “The Globe and Mail” published a special opinion piece warning that the United States may suffer a political collapse in 2025 and become a right-wing dictatorship by 2030. Looking at the United States, the author sees “a political and social landscape flashing with warning signals.” Source:

- <https://www.theglobeandmail.com/opinion/article-the-american-polity-is-cracked-and-might-collapse-canada-must-prepare/>

Recently also British media outlet “The Guardian” published an article proclaiming that the next US civil war has already started. “The legal system grows less legitimate by the day. Trust in government at all levels is in free fall, or, like Congress, with approval ratings hovering about 20%, cannot fall any lower. Right now, elected sheriffs openly promote resistance to federal authority. Right now, militias train and arm themselves in preparation for the fall of the Republic. Right now, doctrines of a radical, unachievable, messianic freedom

spread across the internet, on talk radio, on cable television, in the malls.” Source:

- <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2022/Jan/04/next-us-civil-war-already-here-we-refuse-to-see-it>

<https://www.forwardobserver.com/>

These articles offer a one-sided point of view, that the American right wing would be the instigator of armed conflict. As I’ve documented for years, Far Left groups were at the forefront of attempts to launch a popular revolution in 2020, some even threatening to sabotage and shut down the economy if Trump had won reelection and remained in office. Some revolutionary Far Left groups are arming and training. While news outlets ignore these facts, the headlines are generally correct; we are headed for another conflict.

As we approach the one year anniversary of the Capitol protest on 06 January, we’re probably looking at what’s called “shaping operations.” Shaping is a military term that describes setting conditions on the battlefield for a decisive victory. In Iraq and Afghanistan, this often included psychological operations targeting the populace in an effort to gain their support, or at least deter their opposition, and turn them away from supporting the enemy. There’s a solid case that the coming barrage of articles about the one year anniversary of 06 January, and the continued opinion pieces about the risk of an armed right wing uprising, are likely intended to shape public opinion and justify an aggressive campaign against dissidents heading into 2024 elections. {This was maintained for the last 4 years to disrupt the attempts of Mr. Trump to gain reelection and have finally been set aside with his election in 2024}

More broadly, these shaping operations will support efforts to reinvent America and redefine American identity, erasing Old Ideas, Old Culture, Old Habits, and Old Customs, just as Chairman Mao Tse-tung ordered the erasure of the “Four Olds” during the Chinese Cultural Revolution. While the media focuses on how the Right is arming and preparing for opposition, they ignore the Cultural Revolution happening now that replaces Old America with New America and ushers in New Ideas, New Culture, New Habits, and New Customs. This is the crux of our coming domestic conflict. (Mike Shelby)

<https://www.forwardobserver.com/>

How to Take a Stand in National Crisis

In any society there is legitimate delegated authority from God based on the categories of truth given to us by GOD. These Absolute Truth categories include concepts and principles of:

- The [Laws of Divine Establishment](#)
- The [Divine Institutions](#)
- The Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ
- The Orthodox Fundamental Biblical Doctrines.

A Historical or National crisis is the time when God makes war against arrogance. ([1Pet 5:5-6](#))

This is always a blessing in disguise especially in the client nation, because in historical crisis where God makes war against the arrogant, the humble or Grace Oriented believer survives. It is the “humble” believer who is Grace Orientated and avoids the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) having the flexibility to separate from the illegitimate authority. These believers have Honor because of integrity built up from [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) forming their Norms and Standards so that in their souls, Metabolized Bible Doctrine + Loyalty as a virtue results in perception and APPLICATION of Bible Doctrine as HONOR. Those believers who will not survive cannot recover from the disaster of historical crisis because of a lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and their saturation with arrogance. In these individuals, arrogance and dishonor keeps them in the state of inflexibility having neither moral courage nor humility to apply any aspect of Bible Doctrine to separate from the illegitimate authority. One cannot retain honor and be loyal to conspiracy and revolution founded by *illegitimate authority*. Therefore, illegitimate authority is based on categories of Evil formed from misplaced loyalty to false principles. False principles are derived from the rejection of Absolute Truth in any category and thus involvement in the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and / or the apostasy of [Reversionism](#) saturating the thinking of a person or group. Thus, false principles always oppose the Laws of Divine Establishment and all other categories of Absolute Truth and include but are not limited to:

- Socialism
- Communism
- Welfare State Functions
- Redistribution of wealth
- Inordinate taxation
- Failure in separation of Church and state
- Failure in separation of economics and state.
- Failure in support of military functions
- Failure in jurisprudence
- Failure of judges to enforce written law but instead interpreting law based on sociology
- Failure of legislators making laws to solve social problems rather than for national benefit
- Humanism
- Atheism
- Religion
- ETC.

Pseudo or illegitimate authority is established on the basis of pleasing personalities and attractiveness and thus is Evil based authority which inspires Evil based loyalty. Loyalty to Truth + Integrity == Honor while Loyalty to Lies – Integrity == Dishonor. Therefore, loyalty is in competition with true Integrity when it is directed toward false issues or people without honor. People in a nation develop personal arrogance and distort their loyalty as a result of involvement in strong delusion and believing the Lies of Evil in propaganda when they individually or collectively reject Absolute TRUTHS. ([2Thes 2:11](#)) Their arrogance may take the form of Crusaderism, Selfcenteredness or Self Righteous Arrogance or many other things. As they become more entangled into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, becoming involved more and more in the arrogance system and more influenced by greater numbers of the

categories of arrogance, they develop strong delusions about life and become disoriented to reality. This disorientation to reality results in their becoming ONLY able to believe the Lies of Evil motivated propaganda produced by conspiratorial revolutionary leadership and the dishonorable, dishonest, subversive media. Today in the United States of America, the people are constantly inundated by Lies motivated by Evil from the media and by false principles from almost all sources of entertainment. In the entertainment media there is a constant violation of the principles of truth in scenarios which once were enjoyed and even able to be related to such as:

- Promiscuity as an acceptable alternative to legitimate marriage
- Criminals held up as heroes
- Crusader principles placed above legitimate establishment principles
- Homosexuality as an acceptable alternative to heterosexual love relationships

When facing national crises believers MUST maintain loyalty to truth thereby developing integrity supported by *moral courage* to function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions despite all other influences or pressures. Therefore believers must remain loyal to legitimate authority and reject illegitimate authority.

Legitimate authority in the United States of America is supposed to be based on the American Constitution which is, as the supreme law of the land, designed to promote and protect freedom above all else. Freedom is essential for the promotion of Truth in the nation especially in the form of the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and the Bible Doctrines of the Word of God. Illegitimate authority in the United States of America is focused on destroying the Constitution and promoting pseudo equality in place of freedom. Destruction of the Constitution is based on the promotion of false religions and Evil ideologies above the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and all Biblical Christian doctrines. Illegitimate authority over a prolonged period of time has in the United States of America systematically passed laws or interpreted laws to distort and water down the principles of the Constitution in an effort to promote Radical Liberal Crusaderism and false Evil functions in government and society. The absolute principle is that Freedom and equality are antithetical and absolutely mutually exclusive. The essentials of functioning in national and historical crises are to remain loyal to the legitimate authority of the nation and reject the illegitimate authority. For the believer this will require greater and greater moral courage as the nation degenerates into either revolution or civil war. In both of these cases the believer's loyalty MUST be focused on legitimate authority and avoid strong delusion and accepting propaganda, always remaining focused and concentrating on the truth of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions. Individuals must be focused on protection of free, uncoerced volitional use, privacy, property and life for themselves and others as well. These efforts will require greater and greater moral courage and even the willingness to sacrifice everything and anything necessary to accomplish these ends and restore the integrity of this nation, IF THAT IS EVEN POSSIBLE. Just as all believers must all pass the injustice test in the Spiritual Life they must all pass the conspiracy test as well. Believers invariably have been or inevitably will be tested to enter conspiracy against authority in business, military, social life, spiritual life, etc. When a believer does not agree with the leadership in an organization then

he must separate from it QUIETLY. Conspiracy is a test and as small cases come to the believer he must apply Bible Doctrine and resist becoming involved in such things. Today, in this early 21st century, it is a time in this nation of America of the GREATEST conspiracy ever in it's history and believers MUST maintain personal and collective integrity and to resist this conspiracy in any way possible and exercise the greatest moral courage no matter the cost. The key principle for the believer to remember always is that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History:

- Individually
- Locally
- Regionally
- Nationally
- GLOBALLY

This has been formally stated by a legal group "Liberty Legal Foundation" putting the situation in the United States in perspective which is paraphrased in the article:

"The powers that be are engaged in a REVOLUTION to fundamentally transform America". It appears that in the United States of America the revolution to fundamentally change the United States of America into a socialistic democracy may be the cause of civil war thus the issue will be Truth. However, the country may be involved in a combination of causes where political antithetical principles may also be a cause thus the issue will also be freedom. The country may be in a unique situation where the causes of the coming civil war are both freedom and truth. Today the country is having miniature revolutions in its cities and will continue to have them until there is the overt national revolution. In order to stop a revolution there must be a means of stopping the controlling group or political party. Today the country must split the focus of the democratic party in the United States of America. {This has actually occurred with a dissatisfaction of a part of the democratic party with the continued support of Biden and Harris in the 2024 election} If total consolidation of the power of the nation is allowed under the democratic party the revolution of socialism in the United States of America will be complete."

The first 2 generals who transgressed against the new Hitler government in Germany were shot and killed without cause. Hitler established his own KILL List just as Barak Obama and the Clintons had done. The United States government has authority delegated to it by THE PEOPLE under the umbrella of the Constitution of the United States which is an establishment document of the greatest degree. The people in control of the country today are anti establishment in every way giving over the establishment principles of the constitution for control to eliminate all freedoms. The people in public office today UNIVERSALLY have been placed there by others who have no concept of nor any respect for the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, nor the Doctrines of God. ([Rom 13:1-5](#)) *The Principle is that GOD will never place a criminal in a high administrative position in a client nation UNLESS that nation is saturated with National Arrogance.* Now reflect on the ascendancy of Clinton, Obama and now Biden. Prayers by believers are to be directed on behalf of those in control of our nation and because of the focused EVIL coming from the

government officials today, a proper prayer is now the whole corrected translation of [Ps 109](#) modified to reflect the application to the situation in the United States of America. In addition this type of prayer should include the request that the “OVERRULING will of God be done” in support of this nation.

The duty of believers as conservative patriots is to the Constitution not the individuals in the government when they subvert it and try in fact to by pass it in every possible way. ([1Tim 2:1-2](#)) Believers are to subordinate to the Divine Institution of LEGITIMATE government which functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment. The American system is UNIQUE in the world and in history in that Americans have a supreme law of the land so that all laws enacted by legislative action, NOT BUREAUCRATIC RULE MAKING, MUST be based on that standard. Obviously, that system has failed because of ARROGANCE in the legislative government and also in the judicial government branches with their creation of unconstitutional laws and misrepresentation or misinterpretation of existing law. With the election of Barak Obama the executive branch began trying in every possible way to destroy the standard itself, the Constitution, and convert the United States from a “free society” as a client nation into a society of slaves controlled by the federal government under socialism, Marxism and eventually communism. Believer therefore today have a choice to make where both options are correct:

- OBEY the twisted laws which violate freedom and privacy and property
- OBEY the principles and laws of the constitution which protect these

In either case the believer MUST be aware and ready to assume the consequences of his personal decisions.

The issue in this country may come down to separation from a false government just like the colonies did in 1776. ([1Pet 2:13-14](#)) There is no place for legitimate Law Enforcement under a revolutionary government. Law Enforcement becomes a source of tyranny under a revolutionary government and revolution is anti-establishment and anti-establishment is NO environment for proper law enforcement. Law enforcement can only function honorably in dejuri status under a legitimate law system in an establishment oriented government. Law enforcement and police functions in an establishment government are for the defense of freedom and part of the umbrella of authority which protects human freedom. Therefore, law enforcement functioning outside the system of the Laws of Divine Establishment becomes a system of tyranny. Law enforcement is inevitably tied into the Laws of Divine Establishment and is the key to establishment freedom which is in fact that which determines the outcome of the Angelic Conflict.

Strategies in National Disaster

When one is completely at a loss regarding what is going to happen next in a disaster situation it is best to assume the worst case and try to determine how one would act in the situation of being the aggressor. The arrogant revolutionary aggressor can only think subjectively while the humble counter insurgent believer with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thinks objectively. REVOLUTION is always wrong and never right and NEVER condoned by God. In all cases the cause of establishment functions must be protected. When a revolutionary disaster begins it is wise to retreat from highly populated

areas in the initial stages of battle or in revolution because too many malcontents live in the cities and are the “dupes” of the revolutionaries. These are the shiftless scum of society, the people who do not work for a living nor understand nor appreciate freedom. In addition predominately in the cities there is the criminal element which would work as a 5th column for the conspirators and pillage the urban areas which would then require extra troops to quell or prevent this anarchy. These criminal elements would be city or “urban” guerrillas functioning only for their own benefit. Retreat to less populated areas should be used to spare innocent people and gain the advantage of maneuvering outside of the cities and gain time to organize for resistance and counter insurgency. When a revolution has great momentum and is well organized time is on their side, therefore, time must be gained for those opposing the revolution. The strategic use of time in any military campaign is an essential part of strategy. To gain time strategic withdraw of staff and other people must occur as quickly as possible and in an orderly fashion. This was the obvious and blatant failure of the United States government in Benghazi and Afghanistan in the 21st century, but was in fact the Obvious and Blatant success of King David during the Absalom Revolution in Judah in about 1000 BC.

Christianity and the application of Bible Doctrine demand that the believer be well organized in his mind and also in his life. The Believer will be tested each day to see if he can decide what to do each day without someone telling him what to do. From Bible Doctrine motivation and application under the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 Stages\)](#) he should always remain organized. People who are unable to organize their lives on a daily basis are going to be extremely disorganized under great pressure. Promptness of function is a key to organization in life and lack of this might be acceptable to some degree in normal times but under the pressure of disaster or revolution there will be no time for the silliness of being late for everything. No one can serve in any position of authority effectively and at the same time be irresponsible. A great leader is always thoughtful of those who oppose him as well as those who are loyal to him. Most revolutionary armies are uncontrollable without having had discipline instilled in them and without the military organization or police to protect the civilian population of the areas they move into. Therefore, it is better to remove fighting elements from areas where these armies will move into rather than risk the frustration of the revolutionaries being taken out on innocent civilians when confronting them in the urban environment. It is Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of leadership which results in humility, integrity and sense of responsibility to all people which will combine to give a correct estimate of the situation and to issue the proper orders during conflict.

The Believer's Preparation for the Crisis

Principles of Preparation for Crisis

- Emotional ‘Courage’ derived from anger or hatred is useless, meritless, meaningless, and neutralized unless you are able to THINK in terms of absolutes and are prepared.
- Do not Lock Up Guns ever and always keep them loaded.
 - Train children with firearms and to respect them and that they are NOT toys to play with

- Never sacrifice yourself in a hopeless situation.
- Emotion is useless in a crisis.
 - Women as emotional creatures and must NEVER disobey a direct order from their husbands in a crisis or disaster.
- Thinking under pressure, true COURAGE by definition, is essential to overcome adversity.
 - Thinking under pressure is impossible if one is ignorant and has no information based on absolutes with which to think.
- Therefore, one cannot function at all effectively in a crisis if he is ignorant and / or emotional
- Knowledge regarding absolutes and technicalities must be applied to any crisis through courageous action.
- Never allow any situation to freeze the thinking processes.
- *Never ever quit fighting, never give up.*

Believers who function consistently under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine should be ready for any crisis which may come their way. Doctrine is the knowledge which will allow them to continue to think under pressure. Logistical Grace is the system from God designed to support the believer from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to his death in order to provide the necessary assets for his spiritual growth and advancement, therefore, it is total support for the believer by GOD in all crises.

Distractions in Crisis

There are 2 distractions for believers which are of antithetical nature regarding crisis situations:

- Preoccupation with the disaster
- Preoccupation with the divine provisions of Logistical Grace

The believer can be so preoccupied with disaster that he fails to remember that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History at every level:

- Personal
- Local
- Regional
- National
- Global

He can be so preoccupied with the disaster that he is distracted from the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine or the reverse concentration on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. He can be so preoccupied with disaster that he forgets who and what The Lord Jesus, The Christ is. Therefore, to survive any pressure or disaster or crisis the believer must keep his eyes, or focus his concentration, on the giver while he is enjoying the gifts of deliverance. The believer can become so preoccupied with a disaster that he becomes involved in social action, crusades and human solutions for the disaster problems. On the other hand he can be so preoccupied with the material accouterments of Logistical Grace that he forgets the source of Logistical Grace provisions so that having become distracted from the source he is weakened rather than strengthened by the support. Therefore, both the obsession with impending disaster or with the material things provided by the Integrity of God can in subtle ways destroy the focus on the source of provision for the believer, the one who

controls Human History. Either situation can become a preoccupation which will destroy focus on the giver causing failure in the crisis.

Grace in Crisis

When Logistical Testing is faced by the believer it is to see if he will loose focus regarding the source of those provisions and he must remember the SOURCE is where all that he has comes from. Everything the believer has or loves in life or counts valuable in life, he has because of who and what The Lord Jesus, The Christ is. It is essential to remember that GOD is OBLIGATED to provide Logistics for the believer to keep him alive and if something is missing which is essential for life then simply recognize it and ask God to provide it because he is required to do so by his very essence, his very character demands it and because of the nature of his plan. The believer must never be so preoccupied with what he has been given that he loses track of the source. The source of all things for the believer, The Lord Jesus Christ, through the Justice of God will also provide discipline or punishment for failure to those who have forgotten the source. Therefore, the believer MUST focus on the giver not the gifts because all successes in life are from the imputations from Christ to each believer personally. It is ONLY maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which offsets the potential for preoccupation with either disaster or the material parts of Logistical Grace support and clearly brings recognition of the provider.

In a crisis of national, natural or historical disaster and catastrophe, no matter how helpless the believer may be the SOURCE of his very life is never helpless. While believers are helpless the source, God, does not have any more difficulty in providing for 1 or 2 helpless people than for 100 helpless persons. When there are 100 helpless people and 1 leader that leader has the added pressure from the helpless people. This leader is in the same helpless situation but also has responsibility for the other 100 but in fact the leader is also helpless. However, the source, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, is never helpless. Therefore, 2 helpless people or 100 or 1000 helpless people in a HOPELESS situation who are under humility and Grace Orientation provide the perfect situation for the Source to provide deliverance options. In Hopeless situations, when people are together they must mutually and collectively turn to the source for their help and must be occupied with the source. (2Cor 12:10) Therefore, when in groups, believers in crises must function together in order to pass the tests of focus on Logistical Grace or Disaster. As a result of Humility (gate #3 of the Divine Dynasphere) and Grace Orientation from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, whatever the situation may be in life, in any disaster or crisis or catastrophe, if the believer is still alive and still has the ability to eat and breathe, The SOURCE, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, will still provide sustaining logistics for him. When the believer loses track of the source then what he has in this life becomes meaningless and inevitably results in great misery and discomfort. It is occupation with the source which avoids obsession with the material things or the people provided under Logistical Grace. Always remember that upon receiving any grace provision or blessing, God is glorified and the believer is benefited, therefore, the abilities or skills of man are meaningless because God uses weak, helpless, hopeless people and His policy of grace demands helplessness and hopelessness in order to provide help. God then meets hopelessness with hopefulness and help and when Grace Orientation produces humility in the

believer, the power of God is revealed in the helplessness of man. It is Grace Orientation, a basic Problem Solving Device, which produces humility while preoccupation with material things or disaster produces [Arrogance](#) which inevitably results in fear. The believer must live life totally as unto the Lord so that he will never be disturbed by approbation or lack of it from other people. When one lives life as unto the Lord, he will be properly oriented to reality and will have a happiness, a satisfaction and contentment, most people can never imagine and never have, an overriding tranquility for any and all circumstances in life.

God has a plan for his creation including the Human Race and God is perfect therefore that plan is also perfect but it encompasses IMPERFECT beings both angelic and human. In Human History, God uses people in his plan and the believer must always remember that *if GOD wanted something perfect to handle and execute his plan he would never use people who have Free Will Volition and an Old Sin Nature which invariably makes all people completely unstable.* However, the people God uses can only be used on the basis of His Grace Plan under His Grace Policy and not ever based on their own plans. The Grace Plan and Grace Policy of God involves every individual's understanding of and function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions designed specifically to protect and preserve the Human Race in history and to avoid Power Politics and social action and focus on [Pivot Politics](#), spiritual growth and consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, the restoration and deliverance of this nation, the United States of America as a client nation to God, can only occur as a result of believers who advance to Spiritual Maturity and form the pivot of maturity by which God delivers both individuals and nations. The believer MUST recognize that Divine Policy emphasizes **THE INDIVIDUAL** and his relationship with the Lord and the Lord's perfect plan. Resistance to or rejection of Bible Doctrine, the revelation and explanation of that plan, results in the inevitable development of Scar Tissue of the Soul as a part of [Reversionism](#) and the vast intensification of individual Arrogance involvement. This results in the believer being able to ONLY accept the LIE of Evil the plan and policy of Satan and thereby become involved in the human good of social action crusading. These types of human solutions to the problems of life produce greater and greater arrogance in the individual while divine solutions derived from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the individual produce humility, happiness and tranquility.

God's Provision

When God commands movement or taking a stand, he also provides the security for the movement or the stand in place. A part of Logistical Grace for every believer is the Wall of Fire protection designed to keep him alive in the world ruled by Satan. All problems in life especially during crises must be handled by use of the [Faith Rest Drill](#) (5 Stages). Shelter, clothing, food, water even transportation and especially Bible Doctrine, all qualify under the concept of [Logistical Grace](#) and when any are missing God is OBLIGATED to provide them for the believer. However, don't expect a mansion and beef filet for dinner but be happy with a tent and roast rabbit. Believers being minus Bible Doctrine will often be bitter with regard to their situation in life or their losses during crises, this is complete failure to understand and be a participant in the Plan of God. The believer will not ever advance in the spiritual life until he

understands the principles of Logistical Grace and God's OBLIGATIONS to all believers. The situation of every believer's life is under the oversight of God ([2Chron 16:9](#)) and no believer can ever advance in the spiritual life until he understands Logistical Grace. These principles pull together the character and attributes of God, the Essence of God, with the Status Quo of the believer in time of testing, discipline or disaster. When there is testing for the believer from God the issue is GRACE and the purpose is accelerated spiritual advance and blessing. When there is Divine Discipline from God, the issue is Sin or some other failure on the part of the believer to continue to function within the Plan of God. The answer to all testing is the Faith Rest Drill while the answer to *Divine Discipline* is function under the Rebound Procedure and to keep moving ahead in the Spiritual Life with renewed consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

All testing is designed to focus the believer's attention on the one and only celebrity of the universe, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, while all Divine Discipline is designed to focus his attention on the Plan of God, especially his failure to remain in it, and the provision of and use of the rebound procedure to recover. The believer who does not understand Logistical Grace and Undeserved Suffering Testing vs Divine Discipline will live a life of total confusion and great misery being totally and completely divorced from reality. The mature believer who has passed Logistical Grace testing cannot do the thinking for another believer who is under Logistical Grace testing but he can provide new thoughts the immature believer does not possess and give them doctrinal promises and principles to rely on. However, one cannot run through life by grabbing promises and singing his way through life but he must think doctrine and develop and deploy Doctrinal Rationales and come to doctrinal conclusions in order to weather the pressures and also the pleasures of life. God has provided and preserved Bible Doctrine for between 5 and 10 thousand years, therefore, the believer must avail himself of that doctrine and once inculcated he **MUST THINK** for himself. The believer must have the necessary Bible Doctrine so that he can stay at home or go to the hospital or fight on a battlefield and live or die while he constantly thinks doctrine. Every person has to die for himself and the lost principle is that *every person must also live for himself by thinking for himself*. Therefore, when God promotes a believer, He gives him a few little crises on which to sharpen his thinking skills for the big crisis or disaster of his life. If the believer cannot pass the testing of the little crises, "the charge of the Mosquito" he will never pass the test of any big crisis, "the charge of the elephant". Therefore, God's man for the major disaster crises goes through a series of FTXs (Field Training Exercises) in the realm of small crises. After he perfects the solutions for these FTX testings then he is given an opportunity to do it again under the action conditions of 'combat' in some great disaster situation. After successfully accomplishing the right thought process in small crises, he will therefore be ready for the big crisis. Life is a training ground, it is NOT la, la land, and the believer is to be trained every day of his life with some problem or situation where he has to think his way through it with the Metabolized Bible Doctrine from his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Testing, small or great, is being in a hopeless situation where money, friends, or influence cannot get one out of the situation and where one's Metabolized Bible Doctrine must be applied.

Stand Fast and Watch the Deliverance

Moses was given instructions by God regarding the Jews and what they were to do when they had left Egypt and reached the Red Sea or Marsh Sea and they were in fact trapped between 2 mountain ranges and the Red Sea. He was to tell them to STAND STILL, to stand in place, to be stabilized in their thinking and concentrate on the Bible Doctrine in their souls. The principle is that once a believer takes a rest, standing fast in a promise from God, then he must focus on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and MOVE OUT in life to confront the issues of life. Believers must get into the promises of God and the doctrines of GOD and then MOVE, MOVE, MOVE toward whatever objective is before them. Therefore, the believer must STAND STILL on the inside in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and constantly MOVE on the outside to address the problems facing him.

- An Example: If the believer loses his employment situation he does not sit on the park bench and wait for a job to hit him on the head from God. He must get up early, claim the promises of God for logistics, deploy the Logistical Grace rationale and look everywhere and anywhere for any kind of job he can find. If he can make 5 cents that day it is better than NOTHING and most emphatically better than accepting a handout from the government. There must be rest, calm and stability in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with peace and tranquility while there is great activity on the outside to address the problems or situations of adversity in life.

To Stand Still also means that GOD helps the helpless, ([2Cor 12:10](#)) those who have no solutions available but GOD does not help those who help themselves. To Stand Still means to have perfect confidence with NO FEAR and complete mental stability in the Right Lobe under any adversity or crisis of life. Therefore the concept is that in any crisis the believer must REST mentally but MOVE physically! There may be constant pressure on him but the believer does not fall apart in hysterical fear but constantly trusts in the Lord and has complete mental stability. During this time God is glorified as a result of the activity which the believer has engaged in to overcome the adversity being completely based on the promises and [Rationales](#) of Bible Doctrine which praises and honors God.

Principles Regarding Logistical Grace

Logistical Grace always emphasizes the Integrity of God so that once the believer has an understanding of how the Integrity of God works, providing logistics from the Justice of God to the imputed Righteousness of God in the believer, he can use this in any situation under any condition, whether it is at home or on any battlefield in combat or any other situation. In time of great prosperity it helps generate humility and in times of disaster and crisis even battlefield combat or any other situation it provides assurance, confidence and courage regarding the provision and protection of God for the believer. Logistical Grace support from the Justice of God emphasizes GRACE and never the sins or failures of the believer. When under testing, even if the believer fails the test, the emphasis is not on failure but on the Integrity of God in providing for the believer continued Logistical Grace under testing. Many people erroneously assume that which God has never intended for crisis situations. They condemn themselves to death for some real or imagined failure and second guess God while

God has not indicated in any way that it is his intention that they should die and the Plan of God has not called for them to die. In any situation in life, especially in disaster or catastrophe or any crisis the believer must never die in his own mind before God is ready to take him and therefore must not die mentally but continue to THINK in terms of Divine Viewpoint and Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Facing a HOPELESS situation does not mean that death is imminent but it does mean the believer must know and lean on the Integrity of God. It is LOGICAL to consider that if and when God is trying to teach a believer about His Integrity then HE INTENDS TO KEEP THAT BELIEVER AROUND SO HE CAN LEARN. Mentally giving up and in essence dying before God says come home is cowardice and being divorced from reality, and missing the blessings which God has for you in testing and adversity. This breakdown, though it is a bad situation, is not critical when a single individual does this, but when a whole nation does it that nation is in great trouble. This was the situation in the United States of America in the time of the nuclear weapons build up in the cold war of the 60's and 70's and also recently as a result of the CCP Wuhan Virus of 2019. The situation resulted in the people collectively thinking "Something must be done and there must be peace because if someone presses a button and bombs fly everyone will die"; OR, "People must wear masks and get an untested pseudo vaccine so that this deadly virus will not kill everyone, especially ME." People must wake up to the reality that people die everywhere, every day and under every circumstance and automobiles and bananas have not as yet been regulated or confiscated. Whether in crisis, disaster or prosperity until it is God's time to take one home He intends for that one to live and IF He intends for that one to live He will give the wherewithal for him to live called Logistical Grace, EVEN IN DISASTER, CATASTROPHE AND CRISIS.

The United States of America is today, and has been for many decades, a frightened nation and has been constantly running scared from every opposing world group from the communists with their nuclear and biological weapons and hypersonic rockets, from the terrorists and their suicide bombers, from the moslems and their believe or die religion, from the invading criminal illegals, from every imaginable affront or offensive group in the entire world. If this continues there will be wholesale slaughter of Americans who will stop thinking as a result of their overwhelming FEAR. Nothing in the bible commands the believer to have fear, with only one exception, in [Hebrews chapter 4](#) the believer is commanded to FEAR NOT reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and NOT receiving his Escrow Super – Grace blessings. He is never otherwise to fear, especially not the communists, the most evil bastards who ever lived, no matter their build up of nuclear or biological or chemical weapons. The propaganda put upon believers today by ALL the media and government sources has declared that everyone will die from innumerable varying situations unless the people capitulate and relinquish their freedoms so the government can decide how to take care of them, but the absolute truth is every believer will be here until GOD, himself alone, calls that believer home from this life. The Believer must understand and always remember that he cannot run scared from any other person or group but that "GREATER is he who is in you than he who is in the world". Today the people of the United States of America have become a nation of cowards and fear criminals, minorities, moslems, illegals, communists, homosexuals, radical public opinion, etc., and spend their entire lives patronizing these idiotic individuals and groups. Believers must

never become cowards and must remember in fact that every person is born to die. In any pressure, adversity, crisis or disaster, possessing this type of fear, means that believer will die 1000 deaths and fear even his own shadow in life. The believer must use all hopeless situations to refocus on the Integrity of God. Under Logistical Grace man's extreme situations are God's opportunities to demonstrate His Power. Logistical Grace focus' attention on the Integrity of God and the weakness and failure of the believer. Logistical Grace logic says, as long as the believer is alive God has a plan and a purpose for his life. Failure is the result of involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins and when the reality of economic depression or warfare is faced the believer must not fail to face the GREATER reality of the principle of Logistical Grace whereby "My God shall provide all of your needs according his riches and glory in Christ Jesus." This emphatically applies in situations of all categories of Warfare and combat. The believer cannot ever afford to be ignorant of the [Rationales](#) and logic of Logistical Grace, the Essence of God, and the Plan of God developed from Eternity Past for the believer in time.

Principle of Priorities

Priorities in life for every believer must be established from the application of Bible Doctrine in order to function effectively in any pressure situation. Acquiring maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul results in a change in the Frame of Reference, Norms and Standards and Scale of Values producing Divine Viewpoint priorities for the believer. The believer with proper priorities will be in complete control of any disastrous situation. It is only the true testing of hopeless situations which are unable to be corrected by human solutions, which challenge the believer to perpetuate the final 2 stages of the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages). No believer can function under Faith Rest as long as they entertain fear in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. Fear an emotional sin is a by product of Emotional Arrogance involvement which produces Self Righteousness without pressure and Self Pity under pressure. Self Pity leads to discouragement and thus fear, therefore the believer must remove the FEAR PANIC PLOY from his soul through use of stage 2 of the Faith Rest Drill. Faith must reach out and claim a promise from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul or accept the authority of a stronger believer and claim the promise he has made. To establish proper priorities of grace for a group, a strong mature believer must have the authority in the situation. He must have Bible Doctrine and doctrinal rationales in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. He must be able to apply that Bible Doctrine so that he is in charge of the situation. He must use his authority and be dogmatic and unwavering and in complete control and those who operate on the basis of grace in this manner never lose control of the situation. In a crisis the believer must have something to believe before he can go into action otherwise the action will be disastrous. The believer is not ever prepared for any crisis unless thought precedes action in order for thought to exist in action. When a harsh or demanding command is given by one in authority it is often done to shake those under him out of self pity so that they can then think in terms of Faith Rest. God provides Logistical Grace for both advancing and failing believers however crisis does not require the one who is leading to be thoughtful, courteous or kind but often requires a line of function which is tough and sometimes seemingly brutal.

A good principle to remember is to never judge people by their language, though it often reflects what and how people are thinking, but many of God's Men have at times very poor language. It is often better for believers to think in terms of 3 and 4 syllable words than 1 syllable ones but a believer becoming upset because someone uses bad language or becomes forceful and is very loud while addressing him will guarantee failure under pressure and in disaster. The believer must be able to think under pressure and if he is to be the man for the crisis he must be able to think under pressure using Divine Viewpoint. The purpose of the life of the believer must be related to Bible Doctrine motivation when under pressure so that despondency and self pity are completely avoided and replaced by Bible Doctrine and the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages). What is done in pressure situations must be meaningful when considered in the light of Bible Doctrine. For the believer who has been under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, who has reached and / or exceeded [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), there will be a time in life when others are involved with him in crisis and it will be HIS reverse concentration which will carry the day. If the orders of this mature positive believer are universally obeyed and followed, all will make it out of the crisis. However, if the orders are rejected all will fail. It is the promises from God supported by Bible Doctrine principles resulting in [Bible Doctrine Rationales](#) which bring conclusions which eliminate the fear panic ploy and stabilize the thinking of believers so that they can begin to act and function under pressure. Once the believer's mind is stabilized by claiming the promise of God this provides a start for stage 3 of the Faith Rest Drill where Bible Doctrine principles are used to support the promises. This requires the believer to draw on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and build the categorical knowledge he has of doctrinal principles into Bible Doctrinal rationales to apply to the situation. Finally the 5th stage of the Faith Rest Drill is drawing a Bible Doctrine Oriented conclusion based on that promise, the Bible Doctrine principles, and the Bible Doctrine Rationales, which will carry both the mature believer, and the others following him, through the pressure situation. These conclusions establishes the REALITY of God's power and Grace in the minds of these believers rather than the reality of the disaster.

When 2 realities meet in conflict during disaster, the reality which wins determines the outcome of the disaster. There is the reality of disaster and there is the reality of Bible Doctrine related to the Plan of God for one's life. When the reality of Bible Doctrine wins the disaster will be canceled, therefore, the believer must not be preoccupied with the disaster but must be preoccupied with the promises and Bible Doctrines given by God and thereby become the beneficiary of the blessings of Logistical Grace support and disaster deliverance. Logistical Grace basically says that no matter the disaster or crisis God intends for the believer to have support, so no matter what the circumstances of life a believer finds himself in, Bible Doctrine must be the greater, predominating, reality during the time of 2 conflicting realities. When in a crisis if a believer is lacking sufficient Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul to handle the situation then he should look for the nearest believer who has it. Ultimately everything in life depends on the character and attributes of God related to Eternity Past. The believer must realize and truly appreciate that Jehovah, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, is the only source of [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Once a believer possesses the imputed Absolute Righteousness of God, which is provided for him at Salvation and which is the only true

recipient for Logistical Grace, he must clearly realize that this Logistical Grace is the only source of support for all believers in time, those believers who fail miserably as well as those who succeed. What God says by way of His promise in time is what He THOUGHT IN ETERNITY PAST before any pressure, adversity or disaster situation existed for the believer. What God knew was to become reality was fed into the Divine Decree and His person and plan, being perfect from eternity past, preexisted all human creatures and their pressures, crises and disasters, therefore, his promises and doctrines contain ALL solutions to all situations of human life. God has never been caught off guard by man's failure nor by Satan's revolution. Therefore, believers will never have a problem not known to God FROM ETERNITY PAST and SOLVED in ETERNITY PAST. The solutions then and now are perfect and in compatibility with His perfect plan and His perfect character and His solutions are found in Logistical Grace.

Survival & Solutions in Disaster

The believer is responsible for every decision he makes because decisions are made by the use of personal volition and personal volition is the basis for the individual to participate in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. Therefore, God holds believers responsible for Evil motivation and thinking and the resultant Sin, Crime and any Human Good production decisions because these take, or are the result of the believer being, OUT OF THE PLAN OF GOD. If the believer has no standard by which to differentiate between these things then his only purpose in remaining alive is to be disciplined by God and then ultimately taken out of this life under the absolute misery of dying Divine Discipline under the Sin Unto Death. The absolute worst thing any believer can do is to become stupid and reject Bible Doctrine so as to become ignorant of Bible Doctrine. Without Bible Doctrine the believer has nothing with which to make correct decisions. This is also true for the unbeliever who must clearly understand and adhere to the Bible Doctrine principles found in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. It is imperative that every believer understands that God has a plan and a purpose for his life and that purpose is to THINK but he must have something to think with. Man is clearly said to be what he thinks in his soul. ([Prov 23:7](#)) Therefore, what is in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is much more important than what is physically possessed by the individual. There may come a time when the Lord will turn the believer loose with nothing but what he has on his back and what he has in his soul. What is or is not in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will then determine whether he survives any great disaster.

With Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and IF he uses his volition properly, disaster will not have any truly adverse effect on him. Today the believer must use the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to rise to any occasion and glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ and advance into the pivot in order to preserve the United States of America as a client nation to God. Assuming an equality of intellect between two opposing individuals, when there is a battle of wits between them, the humble man will always win. Involvement in the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) neutralizes all talent, ability, intelligence, and above all any spiritual gifts or spiritual growth. Therefore those believers who avoid or recover from the Interlocking System of Arrogance will survive pressures, adversities and disasters and go on to greatness in life. Without humility the believer has nothing, is nothing and does nothing of any consequence in life and is therefore in

a state of ZERO. When the believer gets to the point of realizing that he is unimportant and non-essential in the overall Plan of God THEN God can use everything that believer is or has to advance his plan.

To Stay or Run

In any crisis of natural or national disaster, if one decides to stay and defend his home and family, the question for him is will he allow some unlawful government thugs to take his only means of defense, his weapons, like they did during the crisis of Hurricane Katrina in Louisiana and leave him defenseless against the roving looters and thieves? Will he put trust in the bureaucrats who helped put him into the turmoil he is facing or will he unite with patriot brothers and take a stand? As far as families & homes are concerned individuals will need to plan for and provide for the possibility of no public utilities or maybe even the lack of social services from police, fire, ambulance, etc., for extended periods. One will need to consider and plan for how to provide for families, how to cook, heat & light homes and especially how to defend them!

The Essentials Needed

The things needed first and foremost are potable water, non perishable food items, medicines & medical supplies, sanitary supplies and disposal of waste because with little or no running water waste will need to be burned or buried. Defense of lives and homes is a serious matter to consider! A fireplace or wood stove is a great way to heat your home and cook but you must lay up a good supply of wood ahead of time. Also a good kerosene heater will do fine but extra wicks are essential, etc., and when using it for cooking & heating remember to ventilate. An extra 275 gal fuel tank or two filled with K1 kerosene will last a year or more and can be used to heat small sections of one's home! Solar and / or rechargeable lights, flashlights with extra batteries and even a couple of kerosene lamps again with extra wicks, and lots of candles are essentials. Keep a good running vehicle with a full tank of gas and use fuel stabilizer for extended periods of non-use and have a few 5 gal cans of gas also stabilized. Run the vehicle once a week for 5 or 10 min to keep it lubricated and the battery charged. Bicycles are a great means of alternative transportation since a person is his own fuel supply. Always in times of crisis or disaster remember your fellow patriots and neighbors; YOU WILL NEED EACH OTHER!

Berks County Patriots

Family Home Preparedness Check List Sheet #1

In the event of a natural or man made emergency these are the things you will need to consider and do to secure your home and be sure it is safe.

- Gather your family and get them to safety. Gather outside your home get them into a safe vehicle or even just outdoors if it is safe to do so. Obviously the various scenarios will determine your course of action at the time.
- Once your family has been taken to safety you will need to secure your area. If the public utility infrastructure has been destroyed or disabled you will first need to turn off the natural gas supply to your home if you have one! The service valve on a natural gas service will be right at the meter located either in your basement or outside your

home. The valve can be turned off with a large adjustable wrench, large pliers or a pipe wrench. It would be a good idea to hang a wrench or pliers at the meter now so that in the event of an emergency you will not have to find one it will already be there. Once you have turned off the valve $\frac{1}{4}$ turn perpendicular to the supply line check to be sure there is no leakage. It will smell like rotten eggs if gas is present. **Do Not** light any flames, turn on any electrical lights, switches etc before and until you confirm the gas is not leaking in your home. If you have bottled gas supplied to your home there will be a hand valve located on the storage tank located outside your home. That is where you will need to turn it off just turn the hand valve in all the way clockwise until it is closed.

- Once the gas has been secured then next go to your main water valve and turn it off. It is usually located in a corner of your basement on the street side of your basement wall. Obviously if you have a well then do not worry about it.
- Then finally go to your electrical breaker box or fuse box and shut off the main breakers or pull the main fuses.
- Thoroughly assess the damage if there has been any to your home and determine if it is safe to return with your family. Or follow your own individual planned family escape system. Again the individual scenario will determine if you will stay or need to leave.
 - **Note:** The purpose for shutting off all utility supplies to the home is first to be safe while you assess the damage if any. Next if there are any gas leaks due to damage your home will be a time bomb waiting to explode. There is also possibility of tainted water entering your home from the public supply! And the electric structure inside your home could be damaged and cause a fire due to a short circuit etc.

You should have a minimum of at least 1 month's essential supplies.

- Potable water will be your first priority! If you can afford it you should consider storing potable water in your basement or storage area and cycling through it restocking it as you use it. Bottled water when purchased by the case is relatively cheap and has a shelf life of a couple of years. You can also fill used milk jugs etc and put a teaspoon of unscented regular household chlorine bleach in it to keep it potable. One teaspoon diluted in one gallon will hardly be noticed or tasted. Keep it in the coolest place you can and out of the sunlight and it will keep for a fairly long time. Once all of the public water supply lines to your home are shut off open the highest faucets and drain the pipes into a suitable storage container for later consumption. Also canned fruits and vegetables all have been packed in water, the hot water heater should be drained, also the tank of your toilet.
- Boil questionable water for at least 5 minutes which will kill any bacteria. Acquire portable ceramic filters or activated charcoal filters to filter questionable water.
- Food is next, MRE's can last a long time but require water to be used. Canned Soups not condensed soups, canned fruits and vegetables, baked beans, spaghetti or noodles with jarred sauces, canned meats spam etc., large bags of rice or beans will go a long way and keep for years.
- Start a garden or garden boxes and grow some simple vegetables. Tomatoes, peppers, potatoes, lettuce, carrots, radishes, cucumbers, zucchini, etc. Buy various seeds now and

store them in a tightly sealed container on the bottom shelf of your refrigerator in the back corner out of the way. By storing them in the refrigerator the seeds will remain dormant and last years beyond their expiration dates!

- Obtain supplies for special needs! Baby formula, diapers, etc. Medical needs including any medications? Eyeglasses hearing aid batteries, feminine care products, soaps and shampoos etc. Pet supplies? Paper plates, paper cups, napkins, paper towels and plastic ware.
- Home defense should include a good 12 or 20 gauge pump shotgun and plenty of ammo! Also consider non lethal forms of defense, mace or pepper spray, bear spray in large 16 oz cans, ordinary wasp and hornet spray is very effective but sometimes it is lethal.

Three day survival pack.

- Three-day supply of non-perishable food per person (preferably items that do not need to be cooked).
- Three-day supply of water – ¼ to ½ gallon of water per person per day or a viable filtration system.
- Portable radio, solar or battery-powered or windup powered with extra batteries.
- Flashlight, battery-powered with extra batteries or windup.
- First aid kit with manual.
- Sanitation and hygiene items moist towelettes and toilet paper or oak leaves (hehehe).
- Plenty of matches in a waterproof container or other fire starting implements like flint, steel and Magnesium.
- Loud whistle.
- Good hunting knife & sharpener.
- Reliable pistol with extra ammo.
- 50ft of good rope nylon or Dacron (does not stretch and is stronger)
- Extra clothing, polypropylene or fleece: Jacket or coat, pair of long pants, long sleeve shirt, sturdy comfortable footwear preferably hiking style boots, socks, hat, mittens, and scarf, sleeping bag or warm blanket per person.
- Small pack-able one man shelter, tube tent etc.
- Cooking accessories and utensils, including a can opener.
- Photocopies of credit and identification cards.
- Cash and coins.
- List of phone numbers and addresses with plan where to meet if separated.
- Special needs items, prescription medications, eye glasses, hearing aid batteries, etc.
- Items for infants, such as formula, diapers, bottles, clothing and pacifiers.
- Items for pets, such as food, water, medicine, leash, crate, etc.

Ten things that will make you better prepared

- 20 lbs of rice, 20 lbs of pinto beans, 20 lbs of oat meal.
- 5 lbs mixed beans, 5 lbs of white sugar, 5 lbs of iodized salt, one gallon of olive oil, 5 lbs oats, 10 lbs each of white or wheat flour and cornmeal.
- 20 cans of canned fruits and 20 cans of canned vegetables.
- 20 cans of various meats, salmon, stews, spam and tuna.

- 2 40 oz peanut butter jars.
- Two 72 Ounce Tang Orange drink canisters, Six 19-Ounce Containers of Kool-Aid Drink Mix.
- Pick up 400 tablets “one a day” type multivitamin and mineral supplements.
- 4 five gallon water containers.
- Buy 250 rounds of ammunition for your primary defensive weapon.
- The best LED flashlight you can afford & extra batteries.
- Grab two boxes of wooden matches and several multi-purpose lighters.

Also:

- 5 lbs of powdered milk.
- A case of Ramen noodles.
- Get a good manual can opener.
- An assortment of spices Garlic, Black Pepper, Cyan Pepper, Turmeric, Ginger as essential anti inflammatory aids, and Oregano as an immune system aid.
- Pick up 3 large tubes of toothpaste, 3 brushes, Shaving razors or blades
- A comprehensive first-aid kit including over the counter pain meds, Motrin, Tylenol, aspirin etc.
- Pick up enough “feminine” supplies to last three months or longer if needed some of these supplies can be used for trauma bandages as well.
- [Portable Toilets](#) sold in the sporting goods department or make a [sawdust toilet](#) from a five-gallon bucket.
- Toilet paper or Oak Leaves!!!! Use a corncob, cloth, Roman [sponge on a stick](#) or paper from discarded books or newspapers.
- A supply of disposable plates, bowls and plastic utensils.
- 2 or more gallons of regular, unscented bleach.
- Stock up on prescription meds.
- A carpenters hammer, vice grips, adjustable wrench, screw driver set, duct tape, electrical tape, axe, pry bar, crosscut saw, hacksaw and large can of [WD-40](#).
- A [propane camp stove](#) and propane tank and [hose adaptor](#) or get a [Volcano Stove](#) because it can use propane, wood and charcoal.
- The best two-way radios you can afford

“On the plains of hesitation lie the bleached bones of those who on the very threshold of victory sat down to rest, and while resting died.”

Glossary

Adjustment to the Justice of God – Divine grace is administered through the essence of God. Ultimately, all blessing or discipline from God to us must be filtered through His justice. As goes the justice of God, so goes blessing or cursing to us. It occurs in 3 areas, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God, Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God – this is the status quo of the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and continued to successfully progress through No Man's Land of Cosmic Dynasphere testing to receive from God his Ultra – Super Grace blessings and the Mantle of Suffering reward where pressure and adversity only serve to enhance his blessing and happiness.

Afortiori Logic – This is a Greek debaters technique which basically says that if something which is more demanding or difficult or requires more effort to accomplish IS accomplished then that which is LESS demanding or difficult or requires less effort is sure to be accomplished.

Angelic Conflict – The unseen war which exists between Lucifer, son of the morning, called today Satan or the Devil and those angelic creatures who chose to follow him and GOD, which originated because of the Arrogance of Lucifer deciding he could do the same job as God in running the universe when he said, “I will be like the most High”.

Apostasy – Falling away from the system of belief arrived at through the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization and Application of Bible doctrine, 2Th 2:3. Rejection of Bible Doctrine for the believer is entering into reversionism which is apostasy.

Baptism of God the Holy Spirit – One of seven salvation ministries of God the Holy Spirit whereby the omnipotence of the Holy Spirit enters the believer into union with Christ, making the Church Age believer a part of the royal family of God.

Blackout of the soul – The status of the believer with persistent negative volition to doctrine, which results in erasure of any Metabolized Bible Doctrine previously accumulated in the soul.

Category I Love – The love for God expressed as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ but also includes loving God the Father and God the Holy Spirit.

Category II Love – The romantic love involved with 1 special person in life of the opposite gender in romance and ultimately marriage.

Category III Love – The love involved in close friendship with other individuals.

Church Age – The dispensation of intercalation inserted when the **Age of Israel** was temporarily halted by the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline in 70 AD as a result of Jewish overwhelming apostasy.

Client Nation – a national entity under the principle of divine institution #4, nationalism, which is responsible for custodianship and dissemination of the Word of God, Bible doctrine in the Church Age taking the place of Israel which is under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline.

Cosmic Dynasphere I – The system of Satan to control this world based on the Interlocking System of Arrogance which involves many areas of Arrogance sins and function.

Cosmic Dynasphere II – The system of Satan to control this world based on the Interlocking System of Hatred which involves Emotional Sins.

Dispensation – An administrative period of Human History under the auspices of God. A divine categories of human history; therefore, both the divine outline and the divine interpretation of

human history. A period of time during which a particular revelation of God's mind and God's will is operative, and during which man is tested as to his obedience to that specific manifestation of God's will, purpose, and plan.

Divine Decree – The decree of God is his eternal, holy, wise and sovereign purpose comprehending at once all things which ever were, are or will be in their causes, conditions, successions and relations and determining their certain futurity. The decree of God is his eternal and immutable will regarding the future existence of events of time and the precise manner and order of their occurrence. It is the sum total of the Plan of God for the Human Race encompassing all of Human History anticipated by the omniscience of God in Eternity Past and simultaneously put into the decree as reality. It is the purpose of God relating to all events in history as one single all encompassing, all comprehensive, intention perceiving all events, the free as free, the necessary as necessary, together with all their causes, conditions and relations as one indivisible system of things every link which is essential to the integrity of the whole.

Divine Discipline – The punitive action taken by the justice of God under his Grace Policy to correct, punish, encourage, train, and motivate the believer's free will toward the plan of God for all dispensations. This occurs collectively for nations under the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline.

Divine Dynasphere – God's Power system for the believer in the Church Age with 8 areas or gates of entry and function including Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, Enforced & Genuine Humility, Bible Doctrine Orientation to reality, Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind, Momentum Testing, Spiritual Maturity.

Divine Good – Production in the Spiritual Life of the advancing or mature believer under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

Divine Institutions – The systems created by God for the proper function and protection of the Human Race in the Angelic Conflict to allow a resolution of the Angelic Conflict appeal trail. There are 4 Divine Institutions including, Freedom (Volition), Marriage, Family, and Government each with its own specific area of and structure for function.

Divine Viewpoint – Orientation of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul.

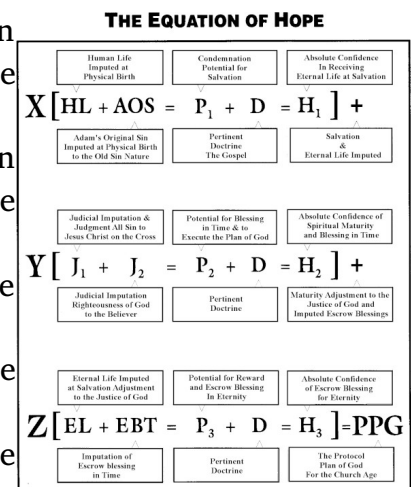
Election – A system of privilege designed by the Integrity of God in Eternity Past relating each believer to the Plan of God through Grace without regard to his status in the Spiritual Life .

Enforced Humility – Any system of discipline instilled and based on the proper function of some organizational authority whether it be outside the individual or based on his personal self discipline.

Essentials – The absolute truths in life of the gospel of Christ, the Laws of Divine Establishment, and all other Bible Doctrines

Equation of Hope – The outline of the Plan of God by R. B. Thieme Jr.

Evidence Testing – This occurs for the believer who reaches the status of receiving Ultra Super Grace blessings in advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in 2 Categories:



For a detailed explanation of this equation see R. B. Thieme Jr., *The Gospel of God* (Houston, R. B. Thieme Jr. Bible Ministries, 1988), 174-184. Philippians 5:12
22 May 1993, Lesson Numbers 61-6
© 1993 by R. B. Thieme Jr. All rights reserved.

- In relationship to Life or Man
- In relationship to God

This requires of the believer a maximum orientation to GRACE and a maximum Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

Evil – The plan and policy of Satan to rule this world. It is satanic THINKING and satanic doctrine.

Filling of God the Holy Spirit – Is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in every believer to control the soul which is initiated at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and is lost as a result of the believer committing any sin but which is regained by the use of the rebound procedure of 1John 1:9.

Foreknowledge – Is the understanding of God of what has been decreed as reality from the omniscience of God which knows what will occur as opposed to what might occur.

Forward Line of Troops – The development and deployment by the believer from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine of the 10 Problem Solving Devices into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to provide a defensive barrier against all soul interference and distraction.

Genuine Humility – The voluntary conformity to the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and / or Bible Doctrine developed as a result of properly functioning under Enforced Humility.

Grace – The plan and policy of God toward mankind which is all that God can do for man which he CAN NOT earn nor deserve based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross.

Grace Apparatus for Perception – The mechanic for the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for the believer based on the ministry and Filling of God the Holy Spirit under [Operation Z](#). This involves the Concepts and Principles of the 4 Rs:

- Reception – the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under Stage 1 of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories)•
- Retention – the Faith transfer of the learned Bible Doctrine under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it is stored as memory, vocabulary and categories of Bible Doctrine
- Recall – the Faith application of Bible Doctrine by the:
 - Claiming one or more of the 7000+ promises of God in the bible.
 - Using doctrinal principles to support these promises.
 - Developing doctrinal Rationales from the combination of these promises and principles.
 - Reaching doctrinal conclusions to control or overcome the situation.
- Resistance – to the influence of Evil and temptations to function within the Cosmic Dynaspheres

Hamartiology – The study of Sin.

Human Good – The function or production resulting from operating under the principles of the satanic plan and policy for this world, EVIL.

Human Viewpoint – Orientation of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer and Unbeliever based on maximum involvement with EVIL.

Jeshurun, (heb) – The remnant of mature believers who have advanced into and beyond Super

Grace Statue Quo in the face of a declining number in the Pivot. Moses was the founder of the unique fraternity of mature believers that think that Bible doctrine is more important than anything else in life, Jeshurun. This Hebrew noun is used four times in the Old Testament—JESHURUN, and it was taken verb (heb) JASHER, which means to go straight to an objective, to be upright, to be blameless, to be righteous in a good sense, to have integrity. The noun denotes believers whose spiritual life is compatible with the righteousness of God. Therefore the noun (heb) JESHURUN means “righteous ones” and from that comes the fraternity of “upright ones.” The Hebrew noun is found in **Deut 32:15; Deut 33:5; Deut 33:26** and **Is 44:2**. Entrance into this elite fraternity of believers is by becoming a spiritually mature believer. You stay in the fraternity by the consistent use of rebound and consistent persistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Jeshurun is the surname of that group or fraternity of Jews who lived in harmonious rapport with God after salvation. Jeshurun is not formed through physical birth, nor does salvation guarantee it. It is a result of harmonious rapport with God by the believer who fulfills the spiritual life provided for him by God. There are a small group of Jeshurun believers in every generation of human history, even when the sustaining pivot of mature believers of the client nation is gone, but they are removed when the fifth cycle of discipline to a nation is administered. Jeshurun are ordinary people with extraordinary invisible impact. The fullness of blessing from God is the love gift of God to the Jeshurun. In every generation of the Jewish Age and Church Age God is glorified by this small group of believers called the Jeshurun. Jeshurun exist during the Church Age but not under that title because we have a universal priesthood of believers. Jeshurun ends with the Rapture of the Church. This status of the believer is the highest rank of promotion in all human history. In order to make it this far in the spiritual life you must not ever be discouraged by your sins but remain consistent in the use of Rebound and then keep moving forward as did Paul ([Phil 3:13](#)). Spiritual maturity plus cognitive invincibility plus occupation with Christ plus evidence testing equals maximum glorification of God or the status of Jeshurun.

Judicial Imputation – Is when some aspect or characteristic or attribute is provided as a result of the Sovereignty of God and Righteousness of God and Justice of God deciding to so provide it without the recipient deserving to receive it and without it having a home or target in which it should reside. At the point of the crucifixion of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, while he was on the cross, for 3 hours God imputed to him all human sin for all of Human History and then judged them in him. Therefore also as a result of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, the believer becomes the recipient of the Absolute Righteousness of God as a judicial imputation which balances the scales.

Just Warfare – War is JUSTIFIED or considered JUST WAR when the purpose is to defend, preserve, protect or restore the FREEDOM derived from the divinely provided Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions as legitimate functions for any type of government in any nation.

Kardia – Greek for Heart referring to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul never the physiological heart in scripture.

Law of Expediency – Is directed primarily toward the unbeliever dealing with the believer's testimony in witnessing or evangelism of the unbeliever. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will restrain his liberty, in conduct and responses, with regard to the

erroneous thinking of false standards in order to provide the unbeliever with a clear understanding that the primary issue of his life is the Bible Doctrine of the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and that Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. ([1Cor 9:16-23](#))

Law of Liberty – Is directed toward self so that the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God has the right to do certain things that will not cause him to sin and lose fellowship and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. He is at liberty to conduct himself following a Modus Vivendi along the lines of Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth in the society in which he lives without succumbing to legalistic taboos from religion or false doctrine. 1Cor 8:4+9)

Law of Love – Is directed toward God in motivational virtue as Personal Love for God the Father and toward Man in functional virtue of Impersonal Love for Mankind. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will restrain his conduct in public or in the presence of immature positive believers or positive unbelievers regarding his freedom and liberty or any other false issues in order to NOT distract these weak believers from the primary issue in life, Bible Doctrine. ([1Cor 8:13](#))

Law of Supreme Sacrifice – Is always directed toward God and requires the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to often forsake normal living and legitimate functions in life to serve the Lord in a specialized capacity or in a historical crisis. This believer while engaged in undeserved suffering for blessing as a part of his testing in the Spiritual Life will never make an issue of his condition or situation but maintain the primary issue for all immature believers and unbelievers as Bible Doctrine. Under this law a few normal things in life are set aside when they interfere with concentration on a special ministry or leadership function in the Spiritual Life. This status is designed by God for maximum production and is where God has provided something better in place of whatever the believer normally would have had in life, as with Jeremiah and Paul. ([Jer 16:2](#), [1Cor 9:1-15](#))

Law of Volitional Responsibility – The principle of the Plan of God recognizing the concept of Cause & Effect where every human being is held responsible for his PERSONAL Thoughts, Motivations, Decisions and Actions and accountable for his involvement in or production of Sin, Crime or Human Good. ([Gal 6:7](#), [Col 3:25](#))

Laws of Divine Establishment – Laws or rules God has ordained for the survival, protection and freedom of the human race during the course of human history to allow completion of the Angelic Conflict appeal. They provide the freedom to fulfill the divine plan as ordained in the divine decrees and are designed and directed toward both believer and unbeliever.

Liberalism – Is the toleration of all systems of thinking despite not agreeing with them nor accepting them. This is NON-EXISTENT today and what is called Liberalism is in fact RADICALISM.

Logistical Grace – The provision of support for every believer designed to provide for him everything needed to keep him alive in the world ruled by Satan in order that he might have the opportunity and choice of advancing in and executing the Protocol Plan of God.

Loser Believer – The loser believer combines emotional sins of the Interlocking System of Hatred and arrogance sins of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and functions under the 3 Arrogance Skills. He has problem solving incompetence resulting in perpetual carnality and has severely neglected or totally rejected Bible Doctrine and as a result is the Enemy of the Cross, the Enemy of God, and has become a Hater of God. ([John 15:23](#))

Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God – Is the result of the believer fulfilling the Plan of God and his purpose in life of consistent and persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine moving from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual infancy through progressive stages of development to Spiritual Maturity having accumulated a maximum quantity of Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is where he receives a package of 5 categories of incredible blessings for his life in time and a guarantee of special blessings for his life in eternity.

Metabolized Bible Doctrine – Bible doctrine which has been taught, understood academically and accepted by faith under the ministry and Filling of God the Holy Spirit therefore usable for application to life's experiences.

Momentum Testing – Occurs to test the believer in spiritual adulthood prior to reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in 4 categories:

- Thought Testing
 - Mental Attitude vs Mental Attitude Sins
- People Testing
 - Dealing with obnoxious people
- System Testing
 - Unfair systems or organizations such as in Job or Education or Military functions.
- Disaster Testing
 - Historical, Natural, and National catastrophe and disaster.
- Prosperity Testing
 - Unexpected prosperity to determine the advancing believer's readiness to receive his Escrow Super – Grace blessings for his life in time.

Negative Volition – Using one's own free will in one of two categories to refuse or rebuff Bible Doctrine.

- Primary Negative Volition is neglecting or failing to make oneself available for bible teaching because of some overriding interest.
- Secondary Negative Volition is rejecting whatever Bible Doctrine which has been accurately taught.

Nous – Greek for the Left Lobe of the Soul where academic comprehension or understand of Bible Doctrine occurs when it is perceived.

Non-Essentials – The accoutrements and accouterments of life, the DETAILS of life, over and above Bible Doctrine.

Operation Z – The structured involvement and mechanical process of learning Bible Doctrine based on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Positive Volition Faith as a non-meritorious system of perception on the part of the believer. It involves God the Holy Spirit providing Bible Doctrine to the Human Spirit when it is taught by a qualified prepared Pastor Teacher. This Doctrine is then in addition transferred to the Left Lobe of the Soul for academic comprehension where it is staged for the believer to accept or reject it on the basis of Faith. Accepting the Bible Doctrine by faith results in its being transferred by God the Holy Spirit to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for saturation and distribution into the Memory and Categorical storage areas, the Norms and Standards, Frame of Reference, and Viewpoint of the compartments of the soul and made available for eventual application to life. This process is a GRACE benefit from God and is therefore labeled the [Grace Apparatus for](#)

Perception.

Postulates of Divine Integrity

Advantage == Integrity of God, Capacity from Metabolized Bible Doctrine + Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Potential == Imputed Absolute Righteousness

Capacity == Metabolized Bible Doctrine from GAP, the thinking of Christ, the Justice of God.

Potential + Capacity == The Advantage, the Righteousness of God + the Justice of God == the Integrity of God in the believer.

Advantages == blessing from the Integrity of God

Personal Postulates:

There are no advantages to the advantages without the advantage.

If you have the advantage; Absolute Righteousness imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for capacity and maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God for reality; you have the advantages

Without the advantage; Absolute Righteousness imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for capacity and maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God for reality; there are no advantages, no blessings from the Justice of God.

Disadvantages and Maladjustment to the Justice of God cannot cancel the Advantage, imputation of Absolute Righteousness.

Potential + Capacity PROVIDE Advantages

National Postulates

No nation can have the advantages, blessing by association with a large pivot of mature believers, without the advantage, a large pivot of mature believers with total relationship with the Integrity of God.

A nation without the advantage, having a small or shrinking pivot of mature believers, loses its advantages, blessing by association with a large pivot of mature believers.

No nation can recover its advantages, blessing from the Integrity of God by association with a large pivot of mature believers and imputed Absolute Righteousness and capacity from comprehended Bible Doctrine and reality of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, without the advantage, the potential of imputed Absolute Righteousness, capacity from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and reality from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God of an enlarged or large pivot of mature believers.

Loss of both the advantage and the advantages removes that nation from Human History through administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline

Therefore: Atrophy of the pivot of mature believers results in national disaster.

Problem Solving Devices – The mechanics for overcoming all pressure, adversity, disaster and

testing in the life of the believer as he advances in the Spiritual Life. There are 10 Problem Solving Devices including; Rebound, Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Faith Rest Drill, Grace Orientation, Bible Doctrine Orientation, Personal Sense of Destiny, Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind, Sharing the Happiness of God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

Predestination – Also called Foreordination or Predetermination and doubles for the divine decree as well as a statement of output from the decree and is only used for the believer NEVER for an unbeliever. It refers to the Plan of God for the believer ONLY inferring that being in the Plan of God means God is responsible for him in all situations thereby removing any possibility of the fear/panic ploy and is thus an application of the mature believer is super faith rest functions.

Problem Solving Incompetence – Failure to develop and deploy the 10 Problem Solving Devices and then use them to apply Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the circumstances of life.

Providential Preventative Suffering – Is suffering for blessing for the adolescent believer to offset the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Arrogance Skills and Interlocking System of Hatred influence by forcing the consistent application of the basic Problem Solving Devices and to provide the blessing of enhanced momentum for the Acceleration of Spiritual Growth into the Adult Spiritual Life.

Radicalism – Is the total rejection of any and all opposing thoughts concerning conservative values or fundamental Christian principles.

Real Imputation – Is when some aspect or characteristic or attribute is provided to a recipient which deserves to receive it and as a result of that characteristic having a home or target in which to reside. Because man is born with an Old Sin Nature as a result of the genetic distortion caused by Adam's Fall in the garden being passed down in the Human Race by all males during conception, all human beings receive from God the REAL imputation of Adam's Original Sin to the Old Sin Nature at physical birth.

Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God – The Grace process provided by God for the believer to be able to be restored to fellowship with God and regain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine and function under the Royal Ambassadorship for Christ. ([1John 1:9](#), [1Cor 11:31](#))

Reverse Process Reversionism – The final stage of reversionism in the soul of the believer where he now subject to the ultimate Divine Discipline of life, the Sin Unto Death as a result of being useless to God as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict appeal trial. It is a saturation of the soul with the Moral Degeneracy of Legalism or with the Immoral Degeneracy of Antinomianism from an interaction with the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Reversionism – The 8 stage process in the soul of the believer where he reverts to a status in his Spiritual Life which is equivalent to his being an Unbeliever as a result of rejection of Bible Doctrine. It is a reversal of priorities, attitudes, affections, accompanied by the destruction of impersonal love, and a change in the manner of operation and personality to what it was prior to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul – Is called the (gr) Kardia or Heart in the scripture and is the residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul of the believer from which this doctrine can be applied to life.

Royal Family of God – Is the title and station given to the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in this dispensation of the church age which has been inserted into Human History in order to allow Christ to have a royal family for his royal patent of King of Kings and Lord of Lords his titles for his battlefield royalty having achieved a strategic victory in the Angelic Conflict as a result of his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sin on the cross. This is the result of every believer at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God being placed into union with Christ by means of the ministry of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit. This makes every Church Age Believer ARISTOCRACY.

Royal Ambassador – is the title and function of the Church Age believer encompassing his responsibility to represent The Lord Jesus, The Christ to mankind and involves the function of Divine Good production by the mature believer.

Royal Priest – is the title and function of the Church Age believer encompassing his responsibility to represent himself before God and the means by which he can achieve spiritual growth and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God – In the relationship between God and Man in Human History man must adjust to God and must do so according to the standards of the Righteousness of God under the auspices of the Justice of God. In other words man must adjust to God through his justice in order to have a relationship with God. This can only occur for mankind by Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone at the instant of Salvation.

Scar Tissue of the Soul – This is the distortion of the soul as a result of persistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine which results from Emotional Revolt of the Soul where the emotions no longer respond to the Right Lobe but now control it, Black out of the Soul where all previously metabolized Bible Doctrine is systematically erased and replaced by Human Viewpoint Evil of the plan and policy of Satan. This makes it unlikely that the believer will respond to Bible Doctrine at any time.

Sin unto Death – The death of the believer who has rejected God, Bible Doctrine and the Spiritual Life of the Church Age for function under the plan and policy of Satan, EVIL. This results in his no longer being useful in the Plan of God as a witness for the prosecution in the Appeal of the Angelic Conflict Trial therefore being taken out of this life by God under a system of maximum misery.

Spiritual Adolescence – The status of spiritual growth between spiritual infancy which occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual adulthood which occurs when the believer has accumulated enough Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to have developed Grace Orientation to life and Bible Doctrine orientation to reality.

Spiritual Adulthood – The status of the believer who has accumulated enough Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe to have developed and deployed the Adult Problem Solving Devices of a Personal Sense of Destiny, Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal Love for Mankind onto his Forward Line of Troops of his soul.

Spiritual Infancy – The status of the believer immediately following Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and remaining until there has been sufficient Bible Doctrine intake to provide a basic understanding of the Spiritual Life in the Plan of God.

Spiritual Skills – Include the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the

Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, 10 Problem Solving Devices developed and deployed onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul.

Spirituality – The ABSOLUTE status of the believer being under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit or NOT as a result of consistent use of the Rebound procedure after personal carnality to restore this status.

Stress in the Soul – Stress in the soul results from sinful reaction to outside pressures in life which may involve adversity or prosperity. This is the reaction to outside pressures in life with fear, panic, guilt, anger, hatred, worry, bitterness, or any other aspect of Motivational Arrogance from Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins. This reaction allows the outside pressures to penetrate the soul and create this internal stress. Once the outside pressures invade the soul, then the Old Sin Nature is able to dominate the soul and all stress is intensified.

Super Grace – The Status Quo of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he receives 6 categories of EXTREME or SUPER Grace blessing from God as a result of his execution of the Protocol Plan of God. These blessings include:

- Spiritual
- Temporal
- Association
- Heritage
- Historical
- Dying

Surpassing Grace – The Status Quo of the believer in eternity who has demonstrated his successes in execution of the Protocol Plan of God in time by accumulation of a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore is the recipient of unimaginable blessing and reward for all eternity.

Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God – The process which is supposed to occur in the believer on a daily basis resulting in consistent and persistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond.

The Church – The Body of Christ, the sum total of all believers in the Church Age from approximately 30 AD to the removal of all believers at the rapture of the church which is at the beginning of the Tribulational Period of the end of the Age of Israel

Ultra Super Grace – The Status Quo of the believer who is persistent in his progression in the Spiritual Life after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving his Super Grace package of blessings, where he is the recipient of blessing beyond imagination in time despite extreme pressure in life.

Undeserved Suffering for Blessing – As the believer advances from spiritual infancy to Spiritual Maturity by the consistent accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, in order for this doctrine to be of any value to him in application to his life he must be able to access and use it. Therefore as different levels of spiritual advance occur different levels of testing are provided by God to allow the believer to use his accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in application to the tests. This testing is designed to enhance and accelerate the spiritual advance of the believer and move him ever closer to completion of the Protocol Plan of God. This testing occurs as several categories and at

different levels of intensity including:

- **Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering** (5 Categories) at 4 levels
- **Evidence Testing** (2 Categories)

Virtue – The quality of the individual based on the content of his soul and the decisions and actions he makes in life which includes:

- | Motivational Virtue | Functional Virtue |
|--|---|
| • Personal Love for God | Impersonal Love for Mankind |
| • | Impact Virtue – Sensitivity toward All others |
| • | Impact Virtue – Thoughtfulness toward All others |
| • | Impact Virtue – Courtesy toward All others |
| • | Impact Virtue – Good Manners toward All others |
| • | Impact Virtue – Accommodating to All others |
| • | Impact Virtue – Kindness to All others |
| • | Impact Virtue – Understand toward All others |
| • | Impact Virtue – Lack of prejudice toward all others |
| • Confidence toward God | Courage toward Man |
| • Worship toward God | Morality toward Man |
| • Genuine Humility toward God | Enforced Humility toward Authority |
| • Inflexibility regarding God & Bible Doctrine | Flexibility regarding every detail of life |
| • Faithfulness to God | Consistent Unwavering Responsibility toward Man |

Virtue Love – Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal Love for Mankind

Wrongdoing – Wrongdoing is NOT the same as sin, but is greater than sin. It is rejection of the power of the Spiritual Life given to us by The Lord just before he left this earth. Wrongdoing encompasses such things as the Activism and Crusader functions of whitewashing the devil's world along with greater involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

The Reluctant Sparrow

There once was a little sparrow who lived in the northern states of this great nation. It was a delightful summer with warm sunshine in the day with some cleansing rain shower occasionally to wash off the dust from his wings in the evenings. There was plenty of food in worms and fruit on the trees as the spring and summer unfolded and this sparrow was exceedingly pleased with his life and circumstances. As summer turned to fall and the weather became a bit cooler his friends the other older sparrows began to ready themselves for the long flight south to warmer climate to avoid the chill of winter in the north. The little sparrow however did not want to go through all the effort to fly all that way just yet. The fruit on the trees was ripe and much had fallen to the ground and there was plenty to eat and still some warm places to sleep. As fall continued and the weather got colder and the fruit rotted away finally the little sparrow decided he might just have to endure the long flight south. So one particularly bleak day with great clouds in the sky and a strong chill in the air he began his flight south. As he flew along the weather turned very cold and it began to snow very hard. He fought his way through the icy cold snowy wind but eventually his wings froze over with the moisture from the snow and he plummeted to the ground. Fortunately for him he landed with a splat on the back of a large cow. The cow trying to avoid the irritation of the cold sparrow on his back shook him off into a large fresh cow patty. The little sparrow raised his head from the stench

of the manure thinking how terrible and embarrassing it was to be covered with fresh cow manure. Suddenly he realized that his wings were thawing and he was warming up even though the snow was falling even harder. So to celebrate his incredible good fortune he stuck his head up above the manure and began to sing a sweet and pleasant sparrow song. Nearby, a vigilant barnyard cat heard the pleasant singing and began to search for its source. Finding the sparrow stuck in the fresh cow manure he instantly plucked him out and cleaned him off and promptly ATE HIM.

The moral of the story is:

It is a prudent insightful thing to Plan Ahead in your life.

If your plans fail OR if you find yourself deep in the unpleasant SHIT of life remember that those who sometimes put you in the SHIT are not always your enemies.

Also, If find yourself deep in the SHIT of life remember to keep your mouth shut because all of those who help to get you out of the SHIT are not always your friends.

References

1. R. B. Thieme Jr., Bible Ministries, P. O. Box 460829, Houston Tx 77056-8829, (713) 621-3740
2. Early Warning a daily intelligence brief from “Forward Observer” 26 Oct 2021, Mike Shelby
3. Early Warning a daily intelligence brief from “Forward Observer” 27 Oct 2021. Dustin Mascorro
4. “The Wilderness of Mirrors”, David Martin, 1 April 1980, 1 July 2003, Harper Collins Inc.
5. The Life of David, 1972, Series 496, (And other studies) R. B. Thieme Jr., Bible Ministries
6. “Absolved: A cautionary novel of the Three Percent and 4th Generation Warfare” by Mike Vanderboegh, <https://archive.org/details/absolved-by-mike-vanderboegh/mode/2up>
7. “The Spike”, Robert Moss; Clandestine Warfare; KGB infiltration of Washington based on fact
8. “Solo”; Jack Higgins, (Harry Patterson) The Mentality needed in terrorism and clandestine warfare.

9. “Sun Tzu, The Art of War”, Translated by Samuel B. Griffith
10. “The Art of War”, Sun Tzu, Anderson House
11. “The Terrorists, Their Weapons, Leaders and Tactics”, by Dobson and Payne
12. “Counter Insurgency problems and implications”, by Edgar S Furniss Jr, 1966, New York: Council on Religion and International Affairs;
<https://archive.org/details/counterinsurgenc0000furn/mode/2up>
13. “A Short History of Long Range Shooting in the United States” by Hap Rocketto, The Rifleman’s Journal, September 2009
14. “On Strategy: A Critical Analysis of the Vietnam War”, by Colonel Harry Summers, 1982 Presidio Press, <https://archive.org/details/onstrategycritic0000summ>
15. “[Propaganda Brainwashing Psychological Warfare](#)”, by Dr. Frank P. Ferraro
16. “[Flexibility vs Inflexibility & Essentials vs Non-Essentials in the Christian Way of Life](#)”, by Dr. Frank P. Ferraro
17. [Guns & America](#), How Many People In The U.S. Own Guns?, Sep 17, 2020
18. “The Effectiveness of Leadership Decapitation in Counterinsurgency”, by Patrick Johnston
19. “Politics, Power, and Preventative action” blog by Michael Zenko’s, The Council on Foreign Relations
20. “A High Price: The Triumphs and Failures of Israeli Counterterrorism”, by Daniel Byman
21. South Park Bible Church, Pastor Robert K Lyon, <http://www.southparkbible.org/>
22. Project Gutenberg Ebook, “On War”, by Carl von Clausewitz, 1946, Update 1/10/2021, 1st Translation By Col. J. J. Graham 1874, Organizers, Charles Keller & David Widger
23. Internet Archive, “Strategies for Revolution”, Regis Debray, 1970, New York, Monthly Review Press
24. Internet Archive, “Blood, Brains and Beer”, David Ogilvy, 1978, New York: Atheneum Publishers
25. Internet Archive, “Reflections on the French Revolution”, 1910, LONDON: J. M. DENT & SONS LTD., NEW YORK: E. P. DUTTON & CO. INC.

26. "Modern Warfare, A French View of Counterinsurgency", Roger Trinquier, Translated by Daniel Lee, Pall Mall Press LTD, London, 1964,
{<https://www.armyupress.army.mil/Portals/7/combat-studies-institute/csi-books/Modern-Warfare.pdf>}
27. Internet Archive, "The Psychology of Totalitarianism, Dr. Mattias Desmet, Chelsea Green Publishing, London 2022,
https://archive.org/details/the-psychology-of-totalitarianism-2022-mattias-desmet_202308
28. "Mini Manual of the Urban Guerrilla", by Carlos Marighella, 1969, Abraham Guillen Press & Arm The Spirit, December 2002
29. "War in the Shadows, The Guerrilla in History" Robert B. Aspery, Doubleday & Company, Garden City, New York
30. "Beating the Guerrilla", Lt. Colonel John E. Beebe, Faculty of the U.S. Army Command and General Staff College, Military Review, December, 1955
31. "The Assyrian Crisis", Series 809, R. B. Thieme Jr. Bible Ministries, www.rbthieme.org
32. "Second Treatise of Government", John Locke, 1632-1704, London 1690, also 1980, 2003, 2021.
33. "The Four Generations of Modern Warfare" at the Lew Rockwell blog,
(<https://www.lewrockwell.com/2004/06/william-s-lind/the-four-generations-of-modern-war/>);
34. "Washington's Crossing", David Hackett Fischer, Oxford University Press, 2004
35. "Paul Revere's Ride", David Hackett Fischer, April 14, 1994
36. "A Devil of a Whipping, The Battle of Cowpens", Lawrence F. Babits, February 26, 2001, https://archive.org/details/devilofwhippingb0000babi_g5x5
37. "Revolutionary Rifleman", Don Higginbotham, 1961, University of North Carolina Press,
<https://archive.org/details/danielmorganrevo0000higg/mode/2up>
38. "The Sling and the Stone, On War in the 21st Century", Col. Thomas X Hammes, USMC, Zenith Press, 2004, <https://archive.org/details/slingstoneonwari00hamm>
39. "Michael Collins", Tim Pat Coogan, Hutchinson, 1990,
<https://archive.org/details/michaelcollinsbi00coog>
40. "Guerrilla Days in Ireland", Tom Barry, 1949, Irish Press Limited

41. "Street Without Joy", Bernard B. Fall, 1961, 1964, 1994, Stackpole Books
<https://archive.org/details/streetwithoutjoy0000fall/mode/2up>
42. "G2 In Defense of Ireland: Irish Military Intelligence 1918-1945", Maurice Walsh, October 4, 2010
43. "The Utility of Force: The Art of War in the Modern World", Gen. Rupert Smith, Penguin Books, 2006, pp. 5-6, https://archive.org/details/isbn_9780141020440/mode/2up
44. McGraw-Hill Dictionary of Scientific & Technical Terms, 6E, Copyright © 2003
45. "How Many People In The U.S. Own Guns?", [Guns & America](#), Lisa Dunn, Sep 17, 2020.
46. "The Effectiveness of Leadership Decapitation in Counterinsurgency", by Patrick Johnston, June 2012, International Security
<https://www.belfercenter.org/publication/effectiveness-leadership-decapitation-combating-insurgencies>
47. "Politics, Power, and Preventative action", Michael Zenko, Council on Foreign Relations, <https://www.cfr.org/blog/politics-power-and-preventive-action>
48. "A High Price: the Triumphs and failures of Israeli Counter Terrorism", Daniel L. Byman, June 15, 2011, Oxford University Press
49. "Political power comes out of the barrel of a gun." Mao Tse-Tung, from Problems of War and Strategy (6 November 1938), Selected Works, Vol. II, p. 224.
50. "Witness", Whitiker Chambers, New York, Random House, 1952
<https://archive.org/details/witness00cham/mode/2up>
51. "War Amongst the People, Critical Assessments", by Dr. David Brown, Dr. Donette Murray, Dr. Malte Riemann, 2019, Howgate Publishing Limited,
<https://www.howgatepublishing.com/product-page/waramongstthepeople>
52. "Estimating Global Civilian-held Firearms Numbers", by Aaron Karp, 2018 Small Arms Survey Report, Geneva, Switzerland,
<http://www.fullarmorfromgod.epizy.com/Files/SAS-BP-Civilian-Firearms-Numbers.pdf>

Passages

1Chron 5:18-22; The sons of Ruben, the Gadites, and the Half tribe of Manasseh, had valiant men who carried the

shield, the sword, and shot with the bow and were skillful in battle were 45660 who went to war. They made war upon the Hagrites, Jethro, Naphish, and Nodab; and when they received help against them, the Hagrites and all who were with them were given into their hands, for they cried to God in the battle, and he granted their entreaty because they trusted in him. They carried off their livestock: fifty thousand of their camels, two hundred and fifty thousand sheep, two thousand asses, and a hundred thousand men alive. For many fell slain, because the war was of God. And they dwelt in their place until the exile.

1Chron 28:20; Then David said to his son Solomon, Be strong and courageous, therefore be decisive, do not fear, do not lose your poise, for the Lord MY GOD is with you in blessing by association, he will never fail you he will never forsake you until the work for the service for the house of the Lord is completed. (Logistical Grace)

1Cor 2:5; That your FAITH or Bible Doctrine cannot or should not, stand or be or exist in the wisdom of men or demon influence, but in the power of God the Divine Dynasphere.

1Cor 2:16; For, Who has known the thinking of the Lord that we should instruct him, (NO ONE) but we keep on having the thinking of Christ.

1Cor 10:13; No Testing nor bearable suffering has caught up with or overtaken you except the human category or that which is common to or previously faced for blessing by other men, moreover God is faithful who will not permit you to be tested beyond your capabilities or what you can endure, but with the testing he will also provide a way of escape (for the rebounding Believer ONLY), so that you can endure or carry the pressure.

1Cor 11:31; And if we keep on judging ourselves rightly or accurately (1John 1:9) and nothing else, but we (Corinthians) are not and should be, we will not receive judgment from the Justice of God.

1Cor 15:34; Awaken from your drunken stupor of Human Viewpoint to righteousness, or come to your senses righteously, after being deceived by blurred doctrinal thinking or strong delusion from deception; and cease sinning. For some believers have acquired no knowledge of God though available. I speak this to your humiliation or shame in time or this life.

1John 1:9; If we Believers would acknowledge, admit, name, cite, confess our personal Post salvation sins, maybe we will and maybe we will not; He, GOD the Father, always keeps on being Faithful or dependable and Justified or Righteous, with the result that he might (If we will do this he WILL ALWAYS) forgive, cancel, pardon us the sins and cleanse or purify us from all unknown wrongdoing or wickedness or unrighteousness

1John 5:16; If anyone sees a brother sinning a Sin face to face with or leading to Death, he shall ask and he God will give Life to those who commit sin not leading to or terminating in Death, there is a sin terminating in Death, I do not say you should pray for this sin.

1Kings 12:19; So Israel has been in rebellion against the house of David to this day.

1Kings 17:1; Now Elijah of Tishbe who settled in Gilead, said to Ahab, “By the life of invisible LORD The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the God of Israel, before whom I stand, there shall be neither dew nor rain these years, except by my word.”

1Kings 19:1; Now Ahab told Jezebel everything that Elijah had done, and how he had killed, all the prophets of Baal with the sword.

1Pet 2:13-14; Subordinate yourselves for the Lord's sake to every human institution, whether to a king as supreme, or to a governor as sent by him for punishment of those who do evil and recognition of those who do good.

1Pet 5:5-6; Likewise you younger (immature Believers) submit yourselves to the Pastor – Teacher, the elder, all of you others in the congregation fasten to one another or clothe yourselves with grace thinking and humility towards

one another, being oriented to the Grace of God, because The God makes war against the arrogant Believer (not making Adjustment to the Justice of God) but gives grace to the Humble Believer who makes Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore become grace oriented or Humble yourselves under the Mighty or Powerful or ruling hand of God (DDS) and his delegated authority, that he may exalt or Promote you in the proper time (Gate 8)

1Pet 5:7; Cast all your anxieties from terrorism on him, because he cares about you.

1Sam 16:7; But the Lord decreed to Samuel, "Do not look or on regard with respect Eli'ab's appearance or his outward stature, because I have permanently rejected or refused him, because God does not see as man sees, for Man looks on the outward appearance but God looks on the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

1Sam 16:11-13; And Samuel said to Jesse, "Are all your sons here?" And he said, "There remains yet the youngest, but behold, he is keeping the sheep." And Samuel said to Jesse, "Send and fetch him; for we will not sit down till he comes here." And he sent, and brought him in. Now he had red hair, and had beautiful eyes, and was handsome. And the LORD said, "Arise, anoint him; for this is he." Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him with the commission from the Lord in the midst of his seven brothers; and the Spirit of Elohim descended upon David to produce prosperity from that day forward. And Samuel rose up, and went to Ramah.

1Sam 17:11; When Saul and all the army of Israel, who have been successful in battle before, heard this challenge of the Philistine, they were totally terrified for 40 days.

1Sam 17:46-47; This day, which the Lord has given me again, the LORD will deliver you into the power of my hand, and I will cause you to die violently, and I will cause your head to be removed from your body; and I will give your body and the corpses of the armies of the Philistines this day as food for the vultures of the air and to the hyena's of the earth; that all the land of the earth may keep on knowing that there is a God in Israel, and that all this multitude or assembly of cowardly maneuvering men of the armies of Israel, may know that the LORD not with sword and not with the spear shall deliver; the battle is the LORD'S and he, God, will give you into our hand."

1Sam 17:47b; The Battle is the Lord's

1Sam 18:12; And Saul was afraid of David, because the LORD was with him but had departed from Saul.

1Sam 18:29; Saul was still more afraid of David. Therefore Saul became David's enemy continually.

1Tim 2:1-2; First of all, therefore, I summon, request, order, that petitions and prayer for people in need, earnest solicitations, entreaties, and thanksgivings must be made on behalf of all mankind. On behalf of rulers or kings and all who are in authority (executive, legislative, & judicial branches of government, in client nations), which may lead to an undisturbed and tranquil life, in all godliness (Christian Way of Life) and integrity, in reverence and respectfulness in prayer

2Chron 10:19; So Israel has been in rebellion against the house of David to this day.

2Chron 16:9; For the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to show himself strong on behalf of those whose Right Lobe of the Soul is perfect toward him, being spiritually mature with a completed Edification Complex of the Soul. Herein or in this, You have done foolishly, not constructing your own Edification Complex of the Soul; therefore from now on you will have wars."

2 Chron 21:7; Yet The Lord was not willing to destroy the house of David because of the Covenant he made with the house of David and since he had promised to give a lamp to him and to his sons forever.

2Cor 4:4; in whose case the god of this world (Satan) has blinded the thoughts of the Unbelievers (Black Out of

the Soul) that they might not see the light of the gospel which is the glory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is the exact image of God.

2Cor 5:7; Therefore We walk by means of Bible Doctrine, Faith, and Not by Sight (this is the way we must live)

2Cor 5:6-8; Therefore being always confident or of good or Great courage, and knowing that while we are at home in this body (living NOW), we are absent from the Lord, but when we die, then we are absent from the body and Face to Face with the Lord. Therefore We walk by means of Bible Doctrine, Faith and Not by Sight (this is the way we must live and is stage 1 of the Faith Rest Drill) Therefore we keep on having confidence are of good courage, and take mental delight in the fact rather to be absent from the body and at home, face to face with the Lord.

2Cor 9:8; God is able (omnipotence) to make all Grace abound to you, that always having all sufficiency (temporal security) in everything you may have an abundance (super grace blessing) for every good function.

2Cor 12:10; Therefore, being self evident because in Status Quo Super Grace with the omnipotence of Christ taking up quarters on me, for Christ's sake or on behalf of Christ, I find contentment in the sphere of weaknesses caused by helpless and hopeless situations of Providential Preventative Sufferings with the infirmities of physical illness and loss of health, in the sphere of insolence of insults or malignings, in the pressures and distress of needs or lack of the details of life from disasters, in the sphere of persecutions from religion or collective or individual legalism, in the sphere of distresses or anguish from disappointment in human relationships from those whom you love, in the sphere of all difficulties or stresses in life, for on the occasion when I am weak or helpless under Providential Preventative Sufferings, THEN at that time and only at that time, I keep on being strong.

2Kings 8:12; And hazael said to Elisha "why does my Lord weep", and Elisha said to him "I know the evil you will do to the people of Israel; You will set afire their fortifications, you will kill their young men with the sword and their little children you will bash their heads in and their pregnant women your soldiers will rip open".

2Sam 14:33; As a result Joab went to the king, and told him about this matter, making a complete report of the conversation with Absalom; therefore he, David, summoned into his presence Absalom. And he, Absalom, came to the king, and bowed himself on his face into the ground in great humility before the king; and the king lifted him up and embraced and kissed Absalom.

2Sam 15:1-6; So it came to pass after David's public recognition of Absalom in court, that Absalom. provided for himself a chariot of state and horses, and fifty men acting as couriers or administrators for him. And Absalom. was strongly motivated to arise early in the morning and start the day, and to stand and be seen beside the castle gate road; and it came to pass that any man who had a controversy or legal complaint or grievance to bring before the king for justice, then Absalom. would call out to him in greeting, and would say, "From what city are you personally?" And so he would reply, "YOUR loyal subject is from 'one of the tribes' of Israel," Furthermore, Absalom. would say or reply to him, "Now look, your complaints or grievances are valid and legitimate; but to try or judge your case, there is no one authorized for you from the king." Then Absalom. would add, "Who would appoint ME a judge in the land! Then every man who had a legal complaint or grievance or cause would come to me, and I would see to it that he received justice." Now it came to pass also, whenever anyone approached to do obeisance or bow down or salute him, he would extend his hand, and take hold of him, and greeted him with a kiss. Consequently, Absalom. behaved in this manner to all of Israel who came to the king for justice; so Absalom. stole by deception the Right Lobe of the Streams of Consciousness of the Soul of the men of Israel.

2Sam 15:10; Meanwhile Absalom. sent slandering propagandists to all the tribes of Israel, saying, "As soon as you hear the special sound of the trumpet, then shout the slogan, 'Absalom. is king in Hebron!'"

2Sam 15:12; Now while he was offering sacrifices as a hypocritical facade of religion, Absalom sent for Ahith'ophel the Gi'lonite, David's advisor or counselor, from his home town of Giloh. Therefore the conspiracy gained

momentum, and the general public kept coming to Absalom. in constantly increasing numbers.

2Sam 15:13-14; And a intelligence officer who had been sent (by Joab) to David, reported (here in summary), “It has happened the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the people of Israel follow Absalom, the revolution has begun.” Then David commanded all his loyal staff officials who were with him at Jerusalem, “Arise this is a Red ALERT, We must flee; for none of us will escape from Absalom.; Be quick and ready to move out immediately, lest he, Absalom, pursues rapidly and overtakes us, and bring down evil upon us bringing disaster to our cause, and massacre and destroy by violence the city with the edge of the sword.”

2Sam 15:15-16; And the king's staff replied to the king, “According to all that my Lord should choose or decide, here are your loyal subjects or You loyal staff are ready to do whatever my Lord the king should decide”. So the king departed, and all his family after him, except ten women, his former mistresses, left behind under orders to keep and maintain the organization of the palace servants.

2Sam 15:32-37; Now it came to pass after David approached the summit of the Mt of Olives, where people were accustomed or used to to worship pagan gods, behold, Houshai the Archite came out from hiding and met him and he approached with his robe torn and dust upon his head. Then David said to him, “If you march on with me, then you will become a burden to me. But if you return to the city, and it is true you will because of your integrity do this, and if you would say to Absalom., ‘I will be your loyal servant, O king (a lie); as I have been your father's servant in time past, so now I will be your loyal servant’; therefore you will help me by frustrating the counsel of Ahith'ophel. Is there not with you there Zadok and Abi'athar the high priests? Therefore it will come to pass that all the information you will hear from the palace of the king, you will report to to Zadok and Abi'athar the high priests. Behold, their with them are there two sons, Ahim'a-az, Zadok's son, and Jonathan, Abi'athar's son; and by them you shall send me all the information you happen to hear.” Now David’s friend Hushai, returned into the city, just as Ab'salom was entering Jerusalem.

2Sam 17:1-16; Then Ahith'ophel presented a plan and requested of Ab'salom, “Please, Sir, Let me select twelve thousand men, and I will organize and move out with alacrity and pursue David tonight. Consequently, I will come upon him and surprise attack by night him while he is weak and fatigued from nervous exhaustion and weary of hands and has no nervous energy left, and I will terrify him and cause him to panic immobilizing him with fear; and all the people who are with him will flee. I will assassinate the king while he is alone or isolated, and I will restore all the people back to you as the return of all the people is tantamount to the man whom you are seeking, OR the death of the man whom you are seeking to destroy is tantamount to the return of all the people, furthermore the death of David means that all the people will be at peace.” So this plan seemed right to Ab'salom and all the ruling princes who had joined the revolutionary counsel of Israel. Then Ab'salom commented, “Please, summon also Hushai the Archite, and let us hear also what he has to say.” When Hushai reported to Ab'salom, then Ab'salom confided in him saying, “After this manner Ahith'ophel has spoken, Ahithophel has submitted the following plan; shall we execute the plan as he advises? If not, speak and state your own opinions or objections.” Then Hushai replied to Ab'salom, “The advice which Ahithophel has given you is not good at this time.” Furthermore Hushai advised, “You know your father and his army for they are GREAT soldiers, and that they are fierce, vehement, raging, with a ferocious like a mother bear deprived of her cubs in the bush. Furthermore your father is a professional soldier and expert in war; he will not bivouac with the frightened civilian people. Look now, he has concealed himself in some cave for ambush and attack, or in some other strategic place for counter attack. So it will come to pass when he, David, ambushes the revolutionary army in the first attack, then whoever hears the news reported will say, ‘There has been a slaughter among the people who follow Ab'salom.’ Then even the most brave and courageous men of the revolution, whose heart is like the heart of a lion, will be utterly paralyzed with fear; for all Israel knows that your father is a great soldier, and that those who are with him are courageous brave men. But I advise you to completely mobilize all Israel from Dan to Beer-sheba under your own command, an army as numerous as the sand of the sea shore, personally led by you. Then we will attack him in one of those places wherever he may be found, and we will fall on him at night like dew falls on the ground; and there will not remain in his presence even one living person OR neither he, David, nor any of his men will survive the battle. If he, David, withdraws into a city, then all Israel shall bring ropes to that city, and we will drag it into the valley, until not even a small stone is to be found there.” Then

Ab'salom and all the generals of Israel concluded, "The advice of Hushai the Archite, (David's mole) is better than the advice of Ahith'ophel." For the Jehovah, the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, had ordained to frustrate the better plan of Ahith'ophel, in order that Jehovah, the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ might bring disaster or evil to Ab'salom. Then Hushai reported to Zadok and Abi'athar the priests, "Ahith'ophel advised Ab'salom and the princes of Israel to do such and such; and I have advised to do so and so. (The details already covered in prior narrative) Now therefore send couriers immediately and make this report to David and advise as follows, 'Do not spend the night at the fords of the desert, but rather cross over the river without delay; lest the king and all the people who are with him be destroyed.'"

2Sam 17:23; When Ahith'ophel realized or saw that his plan was not executed or carried out or adopted, he saddled his ass, and rapidly went off to his chateaus in his home city. And he put all his personal affairs in order, and hanged himself; and he died, and was buried in the tomb of his father.

2Sam 22:35-36; He, God trains my hands for battle, so that my arms can bend a bow of Bronze; You have also given me the Shield of your Salvation and your help makes me great.

2Sam 23:2-3;"The Spirit of the LORD speaks by me, his word is upon my tongue. The God of Israel has spoken, the Rock of Israel Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ has spoken to me saying: He who rules over men righteously for a long time he must be just, ruling in the fear of God

2Thes 2:10-11; And In the sphere of or by means of all delusion or perpetual deception of wickedness, deceitfulness, injustice, falsehood or unrighteousness or wrongdoing as maladjustment to the Justice of God, to those citizens of the client nations both believers and unbelievers, who are being led astray, deprived, ruined or utterly destroyed just as the unbelievers will be in the tribulation by the man of lawlessness, because they did not receive, accept or embrace the Agape Mental Emotionless Love for the truth as Bible Doctrine or Laws of Divine Establishment in order that they might be delivered or saved. And In the sphere of or by means of all delusion or perpetual deception of wickedness, deceitfulness, injustice, falsehood or unrighteousness or wrongdoing as maladjustment to the Justice of God, to those citizens of the client nations both believers and unbelievers, who are being led astray, deprived, ruined or utterly destroyed just as the unbelievers will be in the tribulation by the man of lawlessness, because they did not receive, accept or embrace the Agape Mental Emotionless Love for the truth as Bible Doctrine or Laws of Divine Establishment in order that they might be delivered or saved.

2Thes 2:12; In order that they all, Gentile Unbelievers in the Tribulation and all believers and unbelievers in a client nation in the Church Age, might be condemned or judged because they have not believed the 3 categories of truth, Bible Doctrine, Laws of Divine Establishment and the Gospel of Christ, but because they have delighted or taken or found pleasure in, or chosen for, approved or selected, to their disadvantage, wickedness, wrongdoing or unrighteousness in the belief of evil.

2Thes 2:17; Summon for help, invite for aid, call on for help, appeal to, comfort, encourage, with Metabolized Bible Doctrine, the Right Lobe of your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, and establish, support, make immovable, strengthen, stabilize you in all or every absolute Divine Good production and Good Doctrine, not intruding on the privacy or rights of others.

2Tim 1:7; God has not given us the state of mind of fear (being a coward), but of power and reciprocal or virtue love for God, and the sound mentality of wisdom and of Discipline

Amos 5:14-15; Seek doctrine and not evil in order that you may live; and therefore the LORD, the God of the armies, will be with you, as you have said. Hate evil, and love doctrine, and establish justice in the gate; and the LORD, the God of hosts, will be gracious to the remnant of Joseph.

Deut 7:9; Know therefore that the LORD your God is God, the faithful God who keeps his covenant and steadfast love or Logistical Grace support to those who love him and keep his commandments, down to a thousand

generations,

Deut 20:1-3; When you spring forth with courage to battle against your enemies, and see horses and chariots and an army larger than your own, you shall always keep on not being afraid of them; for the LORD your God who brought you up from the land of Egypt IS WITH YOU! Now it shall come about when you are approaching the battle, the priest shall come near and speak to the soldiers of the army to prepare the men spiritually and morally for battle. And he shall say to them, Listen to me oh Israel, you are approaching the battle against your enemies today, do not let your Norms and Standards of the Right Lobe of the Soul faint, do not be afraid, do not run away nor panic being terrified causing others to be frightened before them.

Deut 20:4; For the Lord is your God, he is the one who KEEPS ON WALKING WITH YOU, the believer, IN COMBAT, to fight and consume, destroy and kill for you against your enemies, to cause you to be physically delivered from your enemies.

Deut 20:13-18; and when the LORD your God delivers the enemy into your hands in combat and conquest, you shall strike with the edge of the sword all the males of the enemy executing them. As for the women and children, and Livestock, and everything else in the city, you shall take all this as plunder for yourselves; and you shall use the plunder of your enemies, which the LORD your God has given you. This is the policy for all besieged cities which are some distance from you which are not the cities of the adjoining nations here like the Canaanites, you shall utterly destroy them, the Hittites and the Amorites, the Canaanites and the Perizzites, the Hivites and the Jebusites, as the LORD your God has commanded; that they may not teach you to do according to all their abominable practices which they have done in the service of their gods, and so to sin against the LORD your God.

Deut 24:5; When a man takes a new wife he shall not go out with the army nor be called to active duty or engaged in any business enterprise and shall be free to be home for 1 year and he shall cause to make happy, to give pleasure to, his wife whom he has seized or grasped.

Deut 31:6; Be strong and courageous, (think, concentrate & apply Bible Doctrine) do not be afraid, (emotion), nor tremble before the enemy (emotion out of control) or because of them for the Lord your God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, is the one who goes before you, he will never fail you, he will never forsake or cause you to fail.

Deut 31:8; Therefore the Lord is the one who advances ahead of you, taking care of you in any disaster, He will be with you from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, He will never fail you nor cause you to fail (forsake you), DO NOT FEAR NOR BE SHATTERED NOR BE AFRAID NOR LOSE YOUR POISE NOR BE DEMORALIZED NOR PANIC NOR BECOME DISORIENTED IN BATTLE.

Deut 33:26-27; There is no one like the God of Jeshurun, the upright righteous ones, who rides or mounts an offensive action in all three heavens in defense of Jeshurun believers, the upright righteous ones, to your help you Jeshurun Believers and on the clouds of the dust of his action, in the majesty or excellence of his essence and character. The eternal God is your refuge, fortress, stronghold you Jeshurun believers, the upright righteous ones, and underneath you are the everlasting shoulders of omnipotent power of God, continuously driving, by an unrelenting force of offensive military action those enemies or foes fighting against you, out and away from before your face you Jeshurun believers, the upright righteous ones, following and obeying the God, and He will continuously shout a battle command, and He will cause them to be utterly destroyed, eradicated, annihilated, exterminated.

Eccl 3:6-8; There is a Time to be aggressive, there is a time to give up as lost; there is a time to guard or keep, and a time to relieve or throw away. There is a time to rend or rip apart, and a time to put together, there is a time to be silent and a time to Speak, a time to love, and a time to hate; a time for war, and a time for peace.

Eccl 8:2-5; I Say keep the command of the king (government) because of the oath before God, do not be in a hurry to revolt against him, do not join in an Evil matter, revolution, for he will do whatever he chooses, since

the word of the king is authoritative who will say to him “where are you going”, he who keeps the royal command will experience no Evil, for a wise right lobe knows the proper time and procedure.

Eph 2:10; For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus via Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for good works, which God prepared beforehand, that we should walk in them.

Ex 14:13-14; And Moses said to the people, “Fear not, stand firm, and watch the salvation and deliverance of the LORD, which he will work for you today; for the Egyptians whom you see today, you shall never see again. The LORD of the Armies will fight for you, and you have only to be still.”

Ex 15:1-19; Then Moses and the people of Israel sang this song to the LORD, opening their mouths saying, “I will sing to the LORD, for he has triumphed gloriously; the horse and his rider he has thrown into the sea. The LORD is my strength and my song, and he has become my deliverance; He is my God, and I will prepare him a habitation, my father's house, my fathers God, and I will exalt him. The LORD is a man of war; the LORD is his name. “Pharaoh's chariots and his host he cast into the sea; and his picked or chosen officers are also drown in the Red Sea. The depths of the water have covered them the Egyptians; they sank to the bottom like a stone. Your right hand, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Oh Father, has become glorious in power in omnipotence, your right hand, O LORD, has dashed in pieces the enemy. In the greatness of your excellency you have overthrown them who rose up against you; you sent forth your wrath which consumes them like stubble. And with the blast of your nostrils the waters were gathered together, the floods stood upright as in a heap and the depths were congealed in the heart of the sea to fill the path. The enemy Egyptians said, ‘I will pursue, I will overtake, I will divide the spoil, my lusts will be satiated upon them, the women will be raped. I will draw my sword and kill, my hand shall destroy them.’ You did blow with your wind, the sea covered them; they sank as lead in the mighty waters. “Who is like thee, O LORD, among the gods? Who is like thee, majestic or glorious in holiness, fearful in praises, doing wonders? You did stretch out your right hand, and the earth swallowed them. You have in your steadfast love or mercy led forth your people whom you have redeemed, you have guided them by your strength to your holy habitation. The peoples shall hear, they shall be afraid or tremble; pangs of sorrow take hold or seize on the inhabitants of Philistia. Then the dukes or chiefs of Edom shall be amazed; the mighty men or giants of Moab, trembling seizes them; all the inhabitants of Canaan shall melt away. Fear or Terror and dread fall upon them; because of the greatness of your arm, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, they are as still as a stone, till your people, O LORD, pass over, till the people pass by whom you have purchased. you shall bring them in, and plant them in the mountains of your inheritance, in the place, O LORD, which you have made for you to dwell in, in the sanctuary, LORD, which your hands have established. The LORD will reign for ever and ever.” The horses of Pharaoh with his chariots and his horsemen went into the sea and the LORD brought again the waters of the sea upon them; but the people of Israel went in and walked on dry ground in the midst of the sea.

Ez 2:3-10; And he said to me, “Son of man, I send you to the people of Israel, to a nation of rebels, who have rebelled against me; they and their fathers have transgressed against me to this very day. The people also are impudent and stubborn: I send you to them; and you shall say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD.’ And whether they hear or refuse to hear (for they are a rebellious house) they will know that there has been a prophet among them. And you, son of man, be not afraid of them, nor be afraid of their words, though briers and thorns are with you and you sit upon scorpions; be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their looks, for they are a rebellious house. And you shall speak my words to them, whether they hear or refuse to hear; for they are a rebellious house. Now you, son of man, Prophet, Listen to what I am communicating to you; do not be rebellious like that rebellious house of client nation Israel; open your mouth, and eat what I am giving you.” Then I looked, and behold, a hand was extended to me, and, lo, a book or written scroll was in it; and when he spread it out before me it was writing on the front and on the back, and there were written on it words of lamentation and mourning and woe.

Ez 31:3-18; Behold, Assyria a great free enterprise and military establishment nation, was like a cedar in Lebanon, with beautiful branches and forest shade, and of high stature of Interlocking System of Arrogance, therefore its top came to be among the clouds with divorcement from reality. The waters of Bible Doctrine made it grow, the subterranean waters of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the souls of the people from Jonah, made it high

with its rivers continually flowing around the place of its planting becoming a great nation, sending forth its streams to all the trees of the forest. Therefore its height was higher than all the trees of the forest becoming the greatest of nations; its boughs of national prosperity became many and grew large and its branches long with great military power, because of its many water of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the people, its expansion became a great nation. All the birds of the air made their nests in its branches; under its branches all the beasts of the field brought forth their young; and therefore all great nations lived under its shadow. Consequently it was beautiful in its greatness, in the length of its branches of military power; for its roots went down to abundant waters of truth in 3 categories. The cedars in the garden of God could not match it and Israel was not as strong, nor the cypress the southern kingdom of Judah; the plane trees could not match or compared with its branches of beauty; no tree in the garden of God was like it in beauty and no nation in that period could match its greatness. I Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, made Assyria great and beautiful with the multitude of its branches, and all the trees of Eden the nations of history at that time, that were in the garden of God were jealous of it. “Therefore thus says or so decrees the Lord Jehovah : Because you have become high in stature with arrogance from your prosperity and set your top among the clouds in divorcement from reality therefore your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is arrogant in its loftiness, Consequently, I will give it the nation of Assyria into the hands of the chief of the nations, ie Nabopolassar and Cyaxeres, etc; he will effectively deal with it and destroy Assyria because of its evil. I have rejected it. Therefore Foreigners, chaldeans, medes, sythians, the most terrible of the nations, have cut him down in the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline and cast him away. His prosperous branches have fallen on the mountains and in the valleys and its boughs have been broken in all the deep places of the earth destroying all the prosperity; Therefore all the nations of the earth have departed from its shadow and have abandoned him letting it lie in ruins. Upon Assyria’s ruins the birds of the air will settle and all the beasts of the field will dwell among its broken branches. That no tree by the water ie no nation with Bible Doctrine may exalt itself on account of its height or stretch its top to the middle of the clouds in divorcement from reality and no water drinkers or nation built on Bible Doctrine stand upon itself in their arrogance assuming that your greatness is your work for they have been given over to death of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline to the earth below in the middle of the sons of the Human Race among those who go down to the grave. Thus says the Lord GOD: When it goes down to Sheol I will make the deep mourn for it, and restrain its rivers, and many waters shall be stopped; I will clothe Lebanon in gloom for it, and all the trees of the field shall faint because of it. I will make the nations quake at the sound of its fall, when I cast it down to Sheol with those who go down to the Pit; and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, will be comforted in the nether world. They also shall go down to Sheol with it, to those who are slain by the sword; yea, those who dwelt under its shadow among the nations shall perish. Whom are you thus like in glory and in greatness among the trees of Eden? You shall be brought down with the trees of Eden to the nether world; you shall lie among the uncircumcised, with those who are slain by the sword. This is Pharaoh and all his multitude, says the Lord GOD.”

Gen 3:15 (Salvation promise); and I will put enmity or hostility or antagonism between you (serpent) and the woman (Salvation Promise - Grace before Judgement), between your seed, offspring, descendant (fallen angels & unbelievers) and her seed, offspring, descendant (JC & believers), and HE (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) shall crush your (Satan) ruler-ship or headship (operation footstool), and you (Satan) shall crush His heel (Spiritually Dead Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ judged on the cross for SIN)

Heb 3:13; But, in contrast, keep on encouraging self and others on each successive day, as long as, in whatever place that you are located, while it is designated “This Day” or “Today”, while you are on earth that not one from among you believers as royal priests assembled together, begins to become hardened or negative toward Bible Doctrine, by the delusion from the source of sin as the Frantic Search for Happiness.

Heb 3:14-15; For we have become partners associates with the Christ if we retain and secure the beginning of our essence, daily function of Grace Apparatus for Perception to super-grace, stabilized by super-grace until the end of phase II in time. So long as it has been said in the past and applies today and these things continue there will be a gradual and continual destruction of the client nation, (Ps 95:8) “Today, If you, under self discipline and concentration, will hear, in the daily function of Grace Apparatus for Perception, his voice in the expression of

Bible Doctrine, do not continue to engage the process to harden your hearts as in the reversionistic revolution.”

Heb 5:13-14; For everyone partaking of Milk (infant believer) is ignorant of doctrine pertaining to nobility or royal righteousness because he keeps on being spiritually immature or an adult acting like a baby, but solid food (advanced doctrine) keeps on belonging to the mature or super grace Believer ones who because of self discipline or habitual use, keep on having and holding their perceptive faculties well trained or exercised with reference to differentiating between the Honorable or Noble and the Evil.

Heb 11:27; By Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he, Moses, gave up the throne of Egypt not being afraid of the anger of the king, for he became strong under pressure as long as he was occupied with the person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the invisible one.

Is 1:2-5; Hear oh heavens, the angelic observers, and give ear oh mankind of Earth as witnesses, For the Lord Jehovah, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, has spoken as the judge and prosecutor in court, I have nourished and brought up children, the defendants of the southern kingdom of Judah, and they have rebelled against me. (Even) The Ox knows and understands it's owner but the Jews do not know The Lord Jesus, The Christ as their owner, and (even) the Jackass or Donkey knows it's masters feeding trough, but believers in Israel, particularly Judah, do not know, consider or understand doctrine or where to get it. (Luke 2:12). Alas, sinful nation having rejected Christ, a people breaking down under a heavy weight of unpardonable sin of rejection of Christ, a progressing seed of evil passed on to their children ignoring Christ, arrogant children who are corrupters saturated with legalism! They have abandoned or forsaken the LORD in apostasy from false doctrine, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, therefore now receiving Divine Discipline, they are utterly estranged becoming spiritual morons. Where will you still be struck again, and you will continue in revolution? Your whole head is sick, and the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul if weak

Is 2:4; The Lord Jesus, The Christ will judge between the nations, he will render decisions for many people, they will hammer their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks, nation will not lift up sword against nation, and never again will they learn war.

Is 3:16-26; Moreover the LORD said: Because the daughters of Zion, the women are proud, haughty, egotistical in their sinful mental attitude thinking they are irresistible and walk with arrogant posture, glancing wantonly with their eyes flirting with every man, walking with short sexy steps along as they go, making a tinkling with bells on anklets above their feet; therefore the Lord will smite with a scab the crown of the heads of the daughters of Zion to destroy the beauty of their hair, and the LORD will lay bare their secret parts exposing their bodies during rape of the women, during siege and captivity and the rottenness of their souls. In that day, here the Chaldean Invasion and later the tribulation and during any 5th cycle of Divine Discipline invasion of a nation, the Lord will take away the glamour of their tinkling anklet bells, and their ornamental headbands or hairnets, and the beautiful necklaces shaped like the moon crescent; the pendants or earrings, the bracelets, and the very thin sexy veils; the tiara or crowns, the ornaments of the legs, silk stockings today, or ornate jeweled headbands or ribbons and the perfume boxes, and the amulets for the wrists carrying sweet smelling powders; the signet rings and nose jewels; their many gowns or dresses and coats and the hoods or cloaks, and the handbags and small bag or compact; the mirrors to examine self, the fine linen sheer dresses from Egypt, the crowns, and the veils. And it shall come to pass in the fall of Jerusalem instead of a sweet smell of perfume there will be a stench of a corpse; and instead of a beautiful ornate belt or girdle the close are torn, a rope of captivity shall hold them; and instead of well-set hair, baldness from the hair being pulled out during rape; and instead of a rich evening dress cloak or cape, a girding of sackcloth; and burning odor or shame or permanent scar, instead of beauty. Your men shall fall by the sword and your military men in battle in war. And her gates of Jerusalem shall lament and mourn; and she, Israel, being desolate and in slavery shall sit upon the ground in UTTER DEFEAT.

Is 11:13; Then the jealousy of E'phraim of Judah shall depart , and those who harass Judah shall be cut off; E'phraim shall not be jealous of Judah, and Judah shall not harass E'phraim.

Is 13:11; Thus I will punish the world for it's evil and the wicked for their iniquity, I will also put an end to the

Interlocking System of Arrogance related to the proud and I will humble the pride of tyranny.

Is 31:6; Return to him, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, from whom you have revolted and defected, O citizens of Israel.

Is 37:6-7; Isaiah said to them, “You shall say to your master, ‘Thus says the Lord, do not be afraid because of the word which you have heard, the servants of the king of Assyria whom have blasphemed you will be destroyed. Behold I will put a spirit in him, so that he shall hear a rumor and return to his own land, and I will make him fall by the sword in his own land.

Is 37:33-37; Therefore so decrees Jehovah (ADANAI ELOHENU), concerning the king of Assyria, He not come to his city (Jerusalem) nor shoot a single arrow there, nor assault or attack it with a single shield (infantry), nor built up an assault mound against it to break into the city and attack and destroy the people. By way of which HE (Sennach’erib) has advanced (through Judah), by the same line of logistical support, by the same line he shall retreat, Therefore he (Sennach’erib) shall not advance to this city, this is the dictum of the Lord (ADANAI ELOHENU, God the Father, an authoritative pronouncement or judicial decision, the Presiding Judge of the Supreme Court of Heaven). Consequently I will throw a shield over the city to deliver it, because of me (JC), because of David my servant. Then the Angel of the Lord (Adanai Eloheanu, The Lord of the Armies of Israel, the visible member of the Trinity, known as Jesus of Nazareth the Christ) Attacked or launched an assault (Ruler of the army of Israel), and he annihilated in the bivouac of Assyria, 185, 000 troops, so that when the Jewish garrison bivouacked near Libnah awoke in the morning and assembled for REVEILLE at Dawn, behold, nothing was there but the corpses of all the assyrian troops who had died the night before. As a result, Sennach’erib King of Assyria with all his troops dead (at libnah), broke camp secretly and retreated (his army at Lechish) and returned and remained in his capitol city nin’evah (this scared him silly).

Is 41:10; THEREFORE, Fear not, for I, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, am with you, do not anxiously look around for help, for I am your God, surely I will strengthen and give you power from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, definitely I will help you with Logistical Grace provision for any problems, most emphatically I will sustain you with the right hand of my righteousness or my victorious right hand, the hand of provision.

Is 54:17; No weapon which is formed against you shall prosper, this is the heritage of the servants of the Lord and their vindication is from me declares the Lord.

Is 58:11; Therefore the LORD will guide you continually, and satisfy your soul in the dried up or scorched places of disaster, even in time of catastrophe, disaster or hard times he will satisfy your soul, and he will give great strength to your bones and prosperity; therefore you shall be like a watered garden with great production, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not or do not deceive.

Is 59:13; transgressing rejecting Laws of Divine Establishment, and denying the LORD rejection of the gospel, and turning away from following our God rejection of Bible Doctrine, speaking oppression and talking about revolution, conceiving and uttering from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul lying words we have conceived.

Is 65:24; And it shall come to pass in historical disaster, Before they call I will answer, while they are yet speaking I will hear.

James 4:1-2; What is the source of conflicts and the source of fighting among you as believers? Is it not your passions that are in conflict in your soul? You continue to LUST or Desire in frustration (no rebound) and do not have tranquility and happiness, this results in you murdering, you are jealous so you are not able to acquire or advance in the SL, instead you quarrel and fight yourself,

James 4:6; Moreover He gives to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Greater Grace or

super-grace, therefore it the Old Testament Scripture says in Proverbs 3:34 “The God makes War against the Arrogant Believer, But he gives Grace to the Humble Believer”.

James 5:19-20; My brethren, if any one among you wanders away from Bible Doctrine and some one turns him around and restores him, be cognizant of this that he who restores the reversionist from the delusion of his way will deliver his soul from the Sin Unto Death and will in the future cover or cause a forgiveness of a large number of sins through Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Jer 4:19-23; My bowels or Emotions, my bowels or Emotions, nervousness breaking down the Coward! I am pained and writhe in pain at my very heart, the failure of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of my Soul breaking down because of Emotional Revolt of the Soul resulting in cowardice! My heart or dominant Right Lobe is screaming in cowardice within me because Metabolized Bible Doctrine has no place to go for response; I cannot hold my equilibrium, stability or peace for lack of tranquility; because you, my soul, have hear the sound of the trumpet, the alarm of war. (This is the wailing of the coward) Destruction follows hard on destruction is cried, for the whole land is laid waste. Suddenly my tents are destroyed, my curtains in a moment. How long must I see the war standard of the invader, and hear the sound of the trumpet of battle of the invader? “For my, God”s, people are foolish, they have not known me; they are senseless stupid children, ignorant of Bible Doctrine,, they have no understanding. They are skilled in doing evil, but how to do Divine Good they have no knowledge from a failure under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.” At the noise of the invading cavalry horseman and infantry archer every city in cowardice takes to flight; they hide in the thickets; they climb among rocks; every city shall be forsaken, and no man dwells in them. And you, SPOILED ONE, (women) what will you? Though you dress yourself in scarlet, though you deck yourself with ornaments of gold, and though you enlarge your eyes with makeup painting? In vain shall you make yourself beautiful, Your lovers will despise you; they will seek your life, raping and then killing you. For I have heard a voice as of a woman screaming, the anguish as of her bringing forth her first child, the voice of the daughter of Zion that bewails and screams herself gasping for breath, that spreads her hands saying, “Woe is me NOW! For my soul is wearied because of the violence of multiple rapes.”

Jer 4:24-31; I looked on the mountains, and lo, they were quaking, and all the hills moved to and fro. I looked, and lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the air had fled. I looked, and lo, the fruitful land was a desert, and all its cities were laid in ruins before the LORD, before his fierce anger. For thus says the LORD, "The whole land shall be a desolation; yet I will not make a full end. For this the earth shall mourn, and the heavens above be black; for I have spoken, I have purposed; I have not relented nor will I turn back." At the noise of the invading cavalry horseman and infantry archer every city in cowardice takes to flight; they hide in the thickets; they climb among rocks; every city shall be forsaken, and no man dwells in them. And you, YOU SPOILED ONES, (women) what will you do? Though you dress yourself in your best scarlet dress, though you deck yourself with ornaments of gold, and though you enlarge your eyes with precisely applied cosmetics? In vain shall you make yourself beautiful. Your lovers will despise you; they will seek your life, raping and then killing you. For I have heard a voice as of a woman screaming, the anguish as of her bringing forth her first child, the voice of the daughter of Zion that bewails and screams herself gasping for breath, that spreads her hands saying, "Woe is me NOW! For my soul is wearied because of the violence of multiple rapes."

Jer 5:23; But this people have a calous and revolutionary heart they have turned aside from BD and Establishment.

Jer 6:13-14; “For from the least of them the poorest in the land even to the greatest, every one is greedy for unjust gain and security consciousness; and from prophet even to priest, every one manufactures lies with total loss of integrity. And they allege to solve the problem, improved conditions of the people on the surface, or dress the wounds of my people as though it were not serious, giving a small measure of tranquility, saying, ‘Peace, peace or Perfect Peace,’ when there is no peace.

Jer 6:22-23; Thus says the LORD: “Behold, a people is coming from the north country, a great nation is stirring from the farthest parts of the earth. They lay hold on bow and spear, they are cruel and have no mercy, the sound of them is like the roaring sea; they ride upon horses, set in array as a man for battle, against you, O

daughter of Zion!”

Jer 8:11; They dress the wound or heal the hurt of my people slightly giving false tranquility, saying, ‘Peace, peace,’ when there is no peace.

Jer 11:22; Therefore thus says the LORD of the armies: “Behold, Therefore I will keep on causing to indirectly punish them; the vigorous conspiring men without self discipline, Authority Orientation, and without Metabolized Bible Doctrine shall die by the sword in battle; their sons and their daughters shall die by famine or economic depression;

Jer 17:5; Thus says the Lord, cursed, receiving unhappiness because of Negative Volition function, is the person, courageous male hero or exquisitely beautiful female, who uses his volition and puts his trust in mankind and establishes a pattern from free will Negative Volition toward any part of the Plan of God and depends on the flesh, male sexual ability, or some gimmick for his strength or as a crutch (the basis of attraction), whose Right Lobe turns away from the Lord and his design into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and Occupation with People in Human Viewpoint through a series of activities.

Jer 33:3; Call to me and I will answer you (your prayer give you the blessing) and I will tell you great and mighty things which you did not know.

Job 5:8-13; “As for me, I would seek, or inquire of or consult with Positive Volition, God for his will, and I would commit or place my cause with the Faith Rest Drill before God; I commit my cause to He who does great things and unsearchable things without human merit, marvelous or miraculous things without number (GRACE in the life of the believer in or out of fellowship): he who gives rain upon the earth and sends waters upon the fields providing prosperity to the agricultural economy; (God’s benevolent Deeds) he sets on high those who are lowly, he glorifies and prospers those oriented to Grace, and those who mourn are lifted to peace. He frustrates the devices of the crafty, so that their hands cannot achieve success. He takes the sneaky ones in their own craftiness using their devices to ruin you for their ruin; and the schemes of the contentious and implacable are brought to a quick end. They meet with darkness in the daytime going in a fog, and grope at noonday as in the night being disoriented. But he delivers the humble person oriented to grace from the sword of the mouth of the trouble maker, the needy from the hand of the mighty or powerful. So the humble oriented to grace or one without resources have hope, and from injustice or iniquity neutralizes what is said.

Job 5:19-27; From six troubles, crises, catastrophes or disasters, he will deliver, preserve or rescue you by your concentrated thinking and applying Bible Doctrine, mature Believer in Super-Grace status, furthermore in seven the evil of satanic Doctrine will not meddle with nor touch nor produce its desired effect on you, as long as you are insulated by Bible Doctrine. In famine, depression or economic disaster he will redeem or deliver or purchase or preserve you, Mature Believers, from death from Eternity Past, in war or military disaster from the power of the sword in battle, you will be protected and hidden by the Integrity of God, delivered from the lash or scourge of the tongue in social disasters from maligning, judging and gossip, neither will you be afraid being unable to think under the pressures of destruction, violent death, ruin, oppression, tyranny, when it comes because of Dying Grace. You will relax and laugh with great capacity for life and a sense of humor from Relaxed Mental Attitude from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and maximum relationship with the Integrity of God, at violent physical death and at economic depression because of dying grace and super grace status in time, neither will you be afraid of wild animals or violent death nor any dangerous instruments of death because of maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God. For your contract will be with the stones of the battlefield the artillery or bombs or missiles or other weapons of destruction of the military, and the wild animals of the field which kill man like conventional weapons will be at peace with you and pass you by, or will not destroy you until the Lord is ready for you to die. Therefore you have already learned that your human body is in a state of prosperity in peace while dying (Mature believers die with minimum pain) and you will visit your pleasure home in heaven and not fear forfeit of your rewards or blessings, and You will also know from application of Bible Doctrine that your descendants will be prosperous and the pivot great and that the Human Race will continue on and be able to adjust to your death and the nation perpetuated and your spiritual offspring shall be as the grass or

young shoots of the field from blessing by association and historical impact. You will come to your grave in full vigor at the peak of your life for the mature believer at the perfect time to die, like a shock of corn comes in its season as the Timing and Plan of God in Grace are perfect. Behold this doctrine of Death and Dying Grace, we have researched, investigated and studied it, this is the point of it, Hear, learn and know it applying it for yourself for your own good. Therefore you have already learned and will know that your human body is in a state of prosperity and peace while dying (Mature believers in Z Radical die with minimum pain) and you will visit with great pleasure your home in heaven and not fear forfeit of your rewards or blessings, And You will also know from application of Bible Doctrine that your descendants will be prosperous and the pivot great and that the Human Race will continue on and be able to adjust to your death and the nation perpetuated and your spiritual offspring shall be as the grass or young shoots of the field from blessing by association and historical impact. You will come to your grave in full vigor at the peak of your life for the mature believer at the perfect time to die, like a shock of corn comes in its season as the Timing and Plan of God in Grace are perfect. Behold this doctrine of Death and Dying Grace, we have researched, investigated and studied it, having the principle and experience of it, this is the point of it, CONCENTRATE, learn, inculcate into your soul and know it applying it for yourself for your own good.

Job 10:1; my soul is weary of my life; I will leave my complaint upon myself; I will speak in the Mental Attitude Sin of bitterness of my soul.

Job 10:17-18; You renew your witnesses against me, and increase your indignation toward me; you changes of times and WAR are brought against me. Why then have you brought me out of the womb, would that I had died and no one had ever seen me.

Job 28:28; And he said to man, `Behold, the fear of the Lord is wisdom; and to depart from evil is understanding.'"

Job 38:21; You, Job, know from the function consistently under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, not because you were born then, and the number of your days is great!

Joel 2:17-21; Before the party during disaster let the priests and ministers of prophets of the Lord, pray with great intensity between the vestibule and the altar, "Have compassion and exercise grace toward your people, oh LORD, and do not make your heritage of these people who are under your covenants to reproach under the 5th cycle of discipline among the other nations. That the heathen should not rule over them and they should not say among the people of the world, `Where is their God?'" Then will the LORD be Zealous for his land, and then he will have compassion on his people. The LORD will answer and say to his people, "Behold, I am sending to you corn, wine, and oil as an expression of incredible prosperity, and you will be satisfied Sharing the Happiness of God while in prosperity; and I will no more make you a reproach among the heathen thus no more 5th cycle of discipline. "I will remove far from you the northern army, and drive him into a land barren and desolate, his face toward the eastern sea of the dead sea, and the rear of his army toward the western sea of the mediterranean sea and they will be destroyed; their stench and foul smell will come up from the great number of dead, for he, God, has done great things. "Fear not and relax mentally, Oh land of Israel; rejoice and possess inner happiness because of the Grace of God, the LORD has done and will do great things!

John 3:36; He who at the most dramatic moment of his life expresses nonmeritorious faith alone in the son, The Lord Jesus the Christ, alone, keeps on having everlasting life, BUT in contrast to this, he who does not believe the Son, The Lord Jesus the Christ, shall not see life but the wrath of God keeps on abiding on him.

John 8:32; You will know the Bible Doctrine (truth) and the Truth of Bible Doctrine shall make you free (To execute the Spiritual Life under the Royal Family Honor Code)

John 12:31; Now judgement is upon this world, now the ruler of this world shall be cast out

John 14:13-14; (Jesus said to us) Whatever you ask in my name, that I will do, that the father may be glorified by

the Son, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ if you ask anything in my name, I will do it.

John 14:30; I will no longer talk much with you, for the ruler of this world is coming. He has no power over me;

John 15:7; If you abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask whatever you will, and it shall be done for you.

John 16:11; Concerning justice, the act of judgment, because the prince ruler of this world, Satan, is to be judged at the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ by the Justice of God.

Josh 5:13-6:2; When Joshua was by Jericho, he lifted up his eyes and looked, and behold, a man stood before him with a drawn sword in his hand; and Joshua went to him and said to him, "Are you for us, or for our adversaries?" And he said, "No; but as Commander of the Army of the LORD I have now come." And Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and worshiped, and said to him, "What does my lord bid his servant?" And the Commander of the LORD's army said to Joshua, "Put off your shoes from your feet; for the place where you stand is holy." And Joshua did so. Now Jericho was shut up from within and from without because of the people of Israel; none went out, and none came in. And the LORD said to Joshua, "See, I have given into your hand Jericho, with its king and mighty men of valor.

Josh 8:1, And the LORD said to Joshua, "Do not fear or be dismayed or lose your poise; take the entire army with you therefore assemble it, advance against Ai; behold, I have given it into your hand all the king of Ai, the people, the city, and the land;

Josh 11:23; So Joshua took the whole land, according to all that the LORD had commanded Moses; and Joshua gave it for an inheritance to Israel according to the divisions of their tribes, therefore the land had peace from war.

Josh 14:15; Now the name of Hebron formerly was Kir'iath-ar'ba; this Arba was the greatest man among the Anakim. And the land had rest from war.

Judg 3:1-2; Now these are the nations which the Lord left to test Israel by them in military training under combat conditions, all who had not experienced the previous wars of Canaan having lived in Joshua's generation. In order that the generations of the children of Israel might know or learn well in the Right Lobe of the Soul to be taught war, every generation who had not experienced it formally.

Judg 5:8; The people now chose from free will new idolatry gods, then war was at the gates was there a shield or spear seen among the 40,000 troops in Israel, NO!

Lam 1:1-13; How deserted lies the city that was full of people! How like a widow has she Judah become, she that was great among the nations! She Jerusalem that was a queen among the provinces, these have not become a slave. How Bitterly without the Faith Rest Drill 4 Stages She weeps in the night, tears on her cheeks; among all her lovers there is none to comfort her; all her friends have betrayed her, and they have become her enemies. After affliction and hard servitude Judah has gone into Exile ; she dwells now among the nations, but finds no resting place; All her pursuers have overtaken her in the midst of her distress. The roads to Zion and the Temple mourn, for none come to her appointed feasts; all her gates are desolate and without free enterprise commerce, her priests groan; her maidens grieve from repeated raping, and she herself is in bitter anguish and intense fear. Her foes have become her masters, her enemies are at ease and prosper, because the LORD has made her suffer and brought her grief for the multitude of her sins and transgressions; her children have gone into exile (Ps 119), captives before the foe. All the splendor has departed from the daughter of Zion. Her princes have become like harts that find no pasture; they fled without strength before the pursuer. Jerusalem remembers in the days of her affliction and bitterness all the precious things that were hers from days of old. When her people fell into the hand of the enemy, and there was none to help her, the Enemy gloated over her, mocking at her downfall. Jerusalem sinned grievously, therefore she became unclean; all who honored her despise her, for they have seen her nakedness and destruction; yea, she herself groans, and turns her face away. Her filthiness clung to her

skirts; she did not consider her future; her fall was astounding, there was no one to comfort her. "Look O LORD, on my affliction, for the enemy has triumphed!" The enemy laid hands on her free enterprise treasures; she has seen the pagan nations enter her sanctuary to rob and pillage the precious things there, those you have forbidden to enter your sanctuary. All her people groan as they search for bread during the siege; they trade their treasures for food to keep themselves alive. "Look, O LORD, and consider, for I am despised." "Is it nothing to you, all you who pass by? Look around and see is any suffering like my suffering which was brought upon me, which the LORD brought on me in the day of his fierce anger. "From on high he sent fire sent it down into my bones; he spread a net for my feet; he turned me back; he has left me stunned, faint all the day long.

Lam 3:19-27; Remember my afflictions and restlessness, the bitterness and venom of my soul from incarceration, I will remember. My soul still has them in remembrance and it is humbled within me. This DOCTRINE I recall to mind, therefore I have confident expectations or faith under pressure (HOPE) in time of disaster. It is because of the Lord's gracious unfailing love or mercies which never ceases that we are not CUT OFF or Consumed, His Gracious Mercies or functions (temporal security) never cease for His compassions never end or fail, they are renewed every morning, His faithfulness continues. (logistical grace is received 1 day at a time) (what GOD has promised HE will deliver) The Lord is my portion says my soul, therefore I am caused to have absolute confidence in Him in the midst of pressure (part of virtue is personal love directed to GOD, impersonal love directed to man, confidence directed to GOD, courage directed to man) The Lord is divine good to those who endure patiently in absolute confidence of hope or trust in him, to the soul who constantly seeks Him (Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine) great is his faithfulness. (The faith rest drill used in adversity with integrity {spiritual strength} from constant +volition for perception, cognition, metabolization and application of Bible Doctrine) Divine Good it is for a man to wait and be silent for the physical deliverance of the Lord. It is good for a man or person that he bears his yoke in his youth. (if he has Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul)

Lev 26:14-38 (5 Cycles of Discipline to a nation); 1st cycle of Discipline - But if you do not obey me (Execute the SL) and do not carry out all these commandments. (Decalogue - Freedom Code) If instead you reject my statutes (Laws of Divine Establishment) and your soul despises my ordinances (Spiritual code for Israel) and you fail to carry out my commands (All the Decalogue and Freedom Code) so breaking my covenants. Then I will bring down upon you sudden terror of apprehension of Violence, Unrestrained Criminality or its beginning, Epidemic Diseases and Fever which destroys the sight and drains the Life, you will plant your seed in vain for your enemies will devour it and they will take over and plunder your country. I will set my face against you so you will be defeated by your enemies, consequently those who hate you will rule over you and you will flee when no one is pursuing. (Cowardice) 2nd cycle of Discipline - If after all of these things you will not listen to me, then I will punish you seven times more. Then I will also break down the arrogance of your power breaking down your government, I will make your sky like Iron (Draught - Economic Disaster and Depression), and your earth like Bronze. Then your strength will be spent in uselessly, for your land will not yield it's produce nor will the trees of your land bear their fruit. 3rd cycle of Discipline - If therefore you remain hostile to me (-Vol to Bible Doctrine) and you are not willing to hear me, I will multiply your epidemics seven times more as your sins deserve. I will send wild animals against you or turn loose on you unrestrained crime and violence and Terrorism and they will rob you of your children and destroy your cattle and reduce your population and your roads will be deserted. 4th Cycle of Discipline - And if by these things you will not be corrected by me God the Father & the Supreme Court of Heaven but will continue to be hostile toward me. (-Vol from Carnality, Scar Tissue in the Soul, Blackout of the Soul) Then I will go into opposition with acts of hostility toward you, and I will strike you seven more times for your sins. I will bring the sword upon you to avenge the breaking of my covenant namely the Laws of Divine Establishment thus Military Disaster, and when you retreat into your cities I will send an epidemic among you so that you will be delivered into the hands of the Enemy. (Military Defeat and Slavery) When I cut off your food supply (Aug 70 AD) ten women will bake your bread in the ovens and they will dole out to you your bread by weight (rationing) so that you will eat and not be satisfied and starvation will result. 5th Cycle of Discipline - If in spite of this you do not listen to my doctrine (-Vol to BD) and continue to be hostile to me then in my anger (God anthropathism) I will be wrathfully hostile toward you and I will punish you seven times more for your sins. Then you will eat the flesh of your sons (Aug 70 AD) and you will eat the flesh of your daughters. (Canibalism malfunction of Laws of Divine Establishment) Then I will destroy your high places (Destruction of

Religious systems and demon worship, etc) and I will cut down your altars (for false gods) and I will stack your corpses on the corpses of your idols for my soul will despise you. I will turn your cities into ruins, I will lay waste to your sanctuaries and no doctrinal teaching, and I will take no delight in the fragrance of your offerings. And I will make the land desolate so that your enemies who settle in it will be appalled over it. You however I will scatter among the nations, I will draw out my sword and pursue you, your citizens will lie in ruin (Historically the Jews) Then The Land will satisfy its Sabbath requirements (Jews ignored the sabbatical years) all the days of desolation while you are in the land of your enemies, consequently the land will rest and be paid it's sabbath years. All the days of its desolation it will observe the rest which it did not observe during your Sabbatical years while you were living in the land As for those who survive the 5th Cycle, I will make their right lobes so afraid in the land of their enemies that the sound of a wind blown leaf will put them in flight, in fact when no one is pursuing they will run as though fleeing from a sword and they will fall when there is no one pursuing them. They will fall over each other as though fleeing from a Sword, although no one is pursuing them, consequently you (Israel) will have no strength, military power, or patriotic motivation of any kind to take a stand against you enemies, But you will perish among the nations and the land of your enemies (Assyria, Chaldea, Rome) and you will be devoured.

Luke 4:5-7; And the devil took him up, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time, and said to him, "To you I will give all this authority and their glory; for it has been delivered to me, and I give it to whom I will. If you, then, will worship me, it shall all be yours."

Luke 14:31; What ruler when he advances to meet another king in battle will not first sit down in peace time and take counsel whether he is strong enough with 10,000 men to attack the one coming against him with 20,000 men

Luke 21:9; but when you hear of wars and disturbances,, unstable conditions, *do not fear nor be terrified*, for these things must take place but the end does not follow immediately.

Mark 13:7; and when you hear of wars and rumors of wars do not be frightened for those things must take place.

Matt 6:28-30 (Logistical Grace & Temporal Security Afortiori); And why are you worried about clothing, observe the lilies of the field, how they grow they do not work neither do they spin. In fact I say to you even Solomon in all of his Glory was not clothed like one of these. In Fact, if God arrays or keeps clothing the common grass of the field, and he does, which is alive today and tomorrow thrown into the furnace, will he not do much more for you? (Temporal Security) Oh you believer of little faith rest

Matt 7:7-8; Keep on Asking and it shall be given to you, keep on seeking and you will find, keep on knocking and it will be opened to you. Everyone who keeps asking receives, and he who keeps seeking finds, and to him who keeps knocking it will be opened to you

Matt 13:37-38; He answered, "He who sows the good seed is the Son of man, The Lord Jesus, The Christ; the field is the world, and the good seed, the wheat, means you, the children of the kingdom, the tribulational believers; but the tares or weeds are the children who belong to the Wicked one, Satan who have accepted Evil having strong delusion,

Matt 21:22; And Everything you ask in prayer, believing you shall receive (Faith Rest Drill 4 stages)

Matt 24:6-7; See that no one (radical liberal) misleads you, you will be hearing of wars and rumors of wars see to it that you are not frightened for these things must always take place for nation must rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom.

Matt 26:52; Then Jesus said to him Peter, "Put your sword back into its sheath; for all who draw the sword in crime will die by the sword in capital punishment.

Micah 3:5-7; Thus says the LORD concerning the prophets who lead my people astray or make my people to

wander, they bite with their teeth and cry "Peace" when they have something to eat, but he who puts nothing into their mouths, he they prepare and declare war against him, who talks about peace. Therefore Night shall be unto you, so that you are without vision, and darkness to you so that you lose reality perspective, so that you will not have discernment. The sun shall go down upon the prophets, and the day shall be black over them; these prophets and the leadership of the nation are totally confused. Then shall the seers be ashamed, and the discerners confounded; they shall all cover their lips, for there is no answer from God.

Mic 4:3; He, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, shall judge between many peoples, and render judicial decisions for mighty distant nations, then they will hammer their swords into plowshares, their spears into pruning hooks and nation will not lift up sword against nation and never again shall they train for or learn war. (millennium)

Neh 4:8-9; And all of them together organized a conspiracy to invade the land and to fight against Jerusalem and manufacture harm to it but we made intercession to our God and established a military sentry security system and against them day and night.

Neh 4:13-15; Therefore I, Nehemiah, placed, stationed and garrisoned troops as a mobile reserve on the lowest dugout areas in a command post hidden by the wall, and on the higher places I stationed the observation posts and also stationing troops according to and along with their families to protect the civilians and as a defensive perimeter, with their swords, their spears, and their bows. And I, Nehemiah, rose up and looked, inspected the defenses and stabilized the perimeter then I spoke to the general officers, commissioned officers and men in ranks and the rest of the non military people and this is what I said to them, "Do not be afraid of them, having the doctrine use it and remember the Lord of the armies is great, the mighty warrior, the terrible fighter, therefore military men fight in battle for your brethren, your fellow citizens, fight for your sons, your daughters, your families, your wives, and your homes." And it came to pass when our enemies heard that their plans were known to us and God, Elohim, had brought their conspiracy to nothing and they all departed then we returned all of us to the wall and everyone to his work and his own home.

Neh 5:9; So I said, "The thing that you are doing is not good. Ought you not to walk in the fear of our God to prevent the taunts of the nations our enemies?"

Num 1:2-3; Take a census of all the congregation of all the sons of Israel. 20 years old and upward, whoever is able to go to war in Israel you and Aaron shall muster them by their armies.

Num 16:16-35; And Moses said to Korah leader of the spiritual rebellion, "Be present, you and all your company of 250 Levite prince teachers, before the LORD in front of the Tabernacle, you and they, and Aaron, tomorrow; and let every one of you take his censer shovel, and put incense in them, and every one of you bring before the LORD every man his censer, two hundred and fifty censers; you also, and Aaron, each his censer." So every man took his censer, and they put fire in them and laid incense upon them, and they stood at the door or entrance of the tabernacle of the congregation with Moses and Aaron. Then Korah gathered all the congregation on his side against them, Moses and Aaron, at the door or entrance of the tabernacle of the congregation. And the glory of the LORD, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, appeared to all the congregation. And the LORD spoke to Moses and to Aaron saying, "Separate yourselves from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment." And they, Moses and Aaron, fell on their faces in Prayer of intercession, and said, "O God, the God of the spirits of all flesh, shall one man sin, Korah, and wilt thou be angry with all the congregation?" And the LORD said to Moses, "Speak to the congregation saying, 'Get away from about the tabernacle or tents of Korah, Dathan, and Abi'ram.'" Then Moses rose and went to Dathan and Abi'ram first; and the elders of Israel followed him. And he spoke to the congregation saying, "Depart, I pray you, from the tents of these wicked men, and touch nothing of theirs, lest you be consumed with all their sins." So they, the people in the congregation, got away from about the dwelling tents of Korah, Dathan, and Abi'ram on every side; and Dathan and Abi'ram came out and stood at the door of their tents, together with their wives, their sons, and their little children. And Moses said, "Hereby you shall know that the LORD has sent me to do all these works, NOT OF MY OWN MIND, it has not been of my own accord, I did not dream up this punishment, this is from the Lord. If these men die the common death or natural death of all men in the future, or if they are visited by the fate of natural death of all men of old age,

then the LORD has not sent me. But if the LORD creates something new, and the ground opens its mouth, and swallows them up, with all that belongs to them, and they go down alive into Sheol, then you shall understand that these men have provoked or despised the LORD.” And it came to pass as he, Moses, finished speaking all these words, the ground under these men split asunder and opened; and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them up, with their dwelling tents, their households and all the people that belonged to Korah and all their goods. So they and all that belonged to them went down alive into Sheol; and the earth closed over them, and they perished from among the midst of the congregation. And all the adult congregation of Israel that were round about them seeing this fled at their cry; for they said, “Lest the earth swallow us up!” And fire came forth from the LORD, and consumed the two hundred and fifty men offering the incense.

Num 16:41-50; But on the next day all the congregation of the people of Israel murmured or complained against Moses and against Aaron, saying, “You have killed the people of the LORD.” And it came to pass when the congregation had gathered or assembled against Moses and against Aaron, they looked toward the tabernacle of the congregation; and behold, the cloud covered it, and the glory of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, appeared. And Moses and Aaron came before the tabernacle of the congregation, and the LORD spoke to Moses saying, “Get away from the midst of this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment.” And they fell on their faces in prayer. And Moses said to Aaron, “Take your shovel censer, and put fire therein from off the brazen altar, and put incense on it, and carry it quickly to the congregation, and make atonement for them; for there is wrath gone out from the LORD, the plague of Divine Discipline as the Sin Unto Death has already begun.” So Aaron took it as Moses said, and ran into the midst of the assembly; and behold, the plague had already begun among the people; and he put on the incense, and made a bloodless atonement for the people of fire and incense. And he stood between the dead and the living; and the plague was stopped. Now those who died by the plague were fourteen thousand seven hundred who would not change their attitude after the Divine Discipline of the leadership of the revolution, besides those who died in the matter of Korah, with Dathan, Abiram and the 250 Leviticus prince teachers. And Aaron returned to Moses at the entrance of the tabernacle of the congregation, and the plague was stopped.

Num 17:1-13; The LORD spoke to Moses saying, “Speak to the people of Israel, and take from every one of them a rods or scepter or walking stick, according to one for each fathers' house, from all their leaders according to their fathers' houses, twelve rods. Mark the name of the ruling prince of each of the tribes upon his rod, and you shall mark Aaron's name upon the rod of Levi. for there shall be one rod for the head of the house or the ruling prince of each of the tribes of Israel. Then you shall put them in the tabernacle of the congregation before the testimony, the Ark of the Covenant in the Holy of Holies, where I will meet with you. And it shall come to pass that the rod of the man whom I choose shall blossom; thus I will make to cease from me the murmurings or complaining of the people of Israel, which they murmur against you.” And Moses spoke to the people of Israel; and all their prince leaders gave him rods, one for each prince leader, according to their fathers' houses, twelve rods; and the rod of Aaron was among their rods. And Moses laid the rods before the LORD in the tabernacle of witness (the Tabernacle Witnessed to the Person and Work of The Lord Jesus, The Christ). And it came to pass on the next day Moses went into the Tabernacle of witness; and behold, the rod of Aaron for the house of Levi had budded and put forth buds, and produced blossoms, and it yielded ripe almonds. Then Moses brought out all the rods from before the LORD in the holy of holies, to all the people of Israel; and they looked, and each man took his rod. But the LORD said to Moses, “Go back into the Holy of Holies, bring or put back the rod of Aaron again because the testimony or the Ark of the Covenant, to be kept or preserved as a sign against the sons of revolution that you may put an end to their grumblings or complaining against me, so that they should not die the Sin Unto Death.” And Moses did as the LORD commanded him, so did he. And the people of Israel said to Moses, “Behold, we die, we perish, we all perish. Anyone who comes near to the tabernacle of the LORD, shall die. Are we all to be consumed with dying?”

Num 21:14; Therefore it was written in the Book of the Wars of the LORD, “Jehovah takes or captures in the storm, Waheb in Suphah, and the valleys of the Arnon,

Num 26:2; Take a census of all the congregation of the people of Israel, from twenty years old and upward, by their fathers' houses, all in Israel who are able to go forth to war.

Num 31:3-5; And Moses spoke to the people saying prepare and learn to use Arms for warfare, Mobilize and start Training men for war among you in order that those who are trained among you may attack Midian to execute the lord's vengeance on Midian. You shall send to war 1000 from each tribe from all the tribes of Israel, therefore there were mobilized in a draft from the thousands of Israel for training 1000 from each tribe, 12,000 who were trained men for combat

Num 32:5; And they (Ruben, Gad, some of Monasseh) said, "If we have found grace in your sight, let this land be given to your servants for a possession; do not force us to go across the Jordan."

Num 32:6-7; But Moses said to the Men of Gad and to the men of Reuben who were still on the other side of the Jordan, "Shall your brethren go to the war while you sit here? Now you are discouraging the sons of Israel from crossing over into the land which the LORD has given them?

Num 32:8; Thus did your fathers, when I sent them from Ka'desh-bar'nea to see the land.

Num 32:14; Now behold, you have risen up in your fathers' stead, a brood of sinful men, to add still more the fierce burning anger of the LORD against Israel!

Num 32:15-17; For if you turn away from following him, God, he will yet again abandon them in the desert; and you will destroy all this people." Then they, Ruben, Gad and Manasseh, came near to him, Moses, and said, "We will build sheepfolds here for our flocks, and fortified cities for our little ones, but we ourselves, our trained men, will go ready armed, taking up arms, to go before the people of Israel, until we have brought them, the inhabitants of the land, into their place by conquest of the land; and our little ones shall dwell and be protected in the fortified cities because of the inhabitants of the land.

Num 32:20-23; So Moses said to them, "If you will do this thing, and if you will still arm yourselves to go before the LORD for the war, and every armed man of you will pass over the Jordan before the LORD, until he has driven out his enemies from before him and the land is subdued before the LORD; then after that you shall return and be free of obligation to the LORD and to Israel; and this land shall be your possession before the LORD. But if you draft dodgers will not mobilize for war and refuse military training, behold, you have sinned against the LORD; and be sure your sin will find you out and you will lose freedom.

Num 32:31-33; And the children of Gad and the children of Reuben answered, "(Yes SIR) As the LORD has said to your servants, so we will do. We will pass over armed before the LORD into the land of Canaan, in order that the possession of our inheritance on this side of the Jordan shall remain ours." And Moses gave to them, to the sons of Gad and to the sons of Reuben and to the half-tribe of Manasseh the son of Joseph, the kingdom of Sihon king of the Amorites and the kingdom of Og king of Bashan, the land and its cities with their territories, the cities of the land throughout the country.

Phil 1:28-30; Likewise in the sphere of not one thing or in no way be intimidated, being stupidly frightened or terrified or stop thinking because of them or panicked repeatedly from reversionism by your enemies, which intimidation is to them in reversionism under the influence of evil, an evident public token or proof or sign of your destruction or neutralization from a successful ambush, but with reference to you physical deliverance from the ambush, in fact this deliverance from the ambush is from the source of God. In fact because it has been given, on a grace basis freely without any requirements as a favor from God, to you the unique ones, the believer in the countdown of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace B No Man's Land, in substitution for Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ not only to believe by faith alone with reference to him alone for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, but also to emphatically suffer intensively in behalf of him in Super-Grace B No Man's Land, since you have, from the past continuing into the present, the same intensive combat conflict suffering of the Angelic Conflict for Super-Grace B, such as you have seen in me and right now hear through my writing to you.

Phil 4:6; Stop having anxiety or being concerned or worrying about anything not even one thing the smallest of things, but in contrast, in everything, all circumstances in No Man's Land advancing toward Ultra Super-Grace and also in your life before reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, through prayer, as part of the Royal Family of God, and entreaty for specific special personal needs for Bravo Grace logistics, AFTER thanksgivings, let the things sought, your requests be declared and revealed in the presence of face to face with The God.

Prov 1:33; But he who listens to Bible Doctrine will live in security and be at ease from danger or dread of evil.

Prov 2:10-14; For wisdom or Bible Doctrine will enter your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and knowledge of Bible Doctrine will be pleasant in your soul (Superabundance of Happiness) application of Bible Doctrine will guard you, Understanding of Bible Doctrine will watch or mount guard over you, to deliver you from the way of evil, from the person who speaks distorted things, from those who leave the path of the righteous in reversionism to walk in the way of darkness (Blackout of the Soul) who delight in doing evil and find happiness in distortion of evil

Prov 3:34; He, the Lord, mocks or ridicules the arrogant scoffer, but he gives grace to the humble believer.

Prov 12:20-21; Deceit in the Right lobe of those who devise evil, but counselors of prosperity or Laws of Divine Establishment have happiness in the Right Lobe of the Soul. No Evil happens to the righteous or super-grace believer, but the evil are filled with trouble.

Prov 14:22; Will they not go astray who devise evil, but Grace and Doctrine to those who devise or are under the device of Good

Prov 17:11; A (rebellious) revolutionary man seeks only evil.

Prov 20:18; War Plans are formed or established or stabilized by wisdom or professional knowledge of military science in planning; and through with GOOD DECISIONS, the art of Leadership wage war.

Prov 22:3; The Wise or super-grace believer sees evil and hides himself, but the Stupid or negative volition Believer goes on and is punished for it or destroys himself.

Prov 23:7; for as he thinks in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so he is. He says to you "Eat and drink my food and beverage!"; but his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is not with you but in fact against you and despises you.

Prov 24:1-6; Be not continuously intensely envious or jealous of, or have ANY Mental Attitude Sins toward, the successful evil person, believer or unbeliever, who habitually lives under the Old Sin Nature and appears to profit by it and has the Human Viewpoint of life, because it will result in intense Self Induced Misery; neither extremely intensely desire or long, without possibility of satiation, to be with them socially and participate in the details of life to the exclusion of Bible Doctrine; for the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul studies reversionism and plots and devises violence, destruction and revenge and is obsessed with tyranny seeing all authority as tyranny, and their lips express, through verbal sins, mischief or speak things to make people miserable, gossip, maligning, judging, etc. Through wisdom or consistently Metabolized Bible Doctrine applied, a house, the Edification Complex of the Soul, is built or constructed, and by insight into or understanding of the Absolute truth of Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul, of the principles of tactics and strategies in the military profession, one prepares himself for life or the military profession; and by means of knowledge from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception shall the rooms or chambers of categorical storage in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, receive fullness with something of value and something stimulating as maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the spiritual and physical super-grace blessings in time. A hero of wisdom and skill, having Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is applied to experience, reaches a peak of development, becomes strong in his profession, excels

in the Spiritual Life, possesses the highest virtue of the Spiritual Life, and a man of knowledge, a mature believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul, increases or strengthens his professional talent, ability, alertness, bravery, moral courage and Mental Attitude, with vigor and power; for a capable general by the art of leadership through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you will execute warfare (or any profession) for your nation, therefore victory resides in the greatness of the general, the one who commands and is making the decisions, planning strategy and tactics.

Prov 24:19-20; Do not fret yourself because of evil doers or be jealous of evil doers or be jealous of the reversionist for there will be no future for the evil one and the lamp of the evil will be put out

Prov 29:25, The fear of man provides a snare, but he who puts his trust in the Lord will be promoted.

Ps 3:6; I will not be afraid of tens of thousands of people who have set themselves against me on every side.

Ps 18:32-33; The God who girded me with strength, and made my way BLAMELESS, PERFECT or MATURE. He made my feet like hinds' feet very fast, and set me up secure on the heights.

Ps 18:34; He trains my hands for war, so that a bow of bronze is broken by my hands or my arms can bend a bow of bronze, the enemy is annihilated.

Ps 18:46-48; The LORD lives; and blessed by my rock of Zion or circumstances, Therefore exalted be the God of my deliverance, the God who executes vengeance for me and subdues peoples under me; He, delivers me from my enemies; surely you promote me above those who rise against me; you rescue me from the violent men.

Ps 19:9; the fear of the LORD is clean, enduring for ever; the ordinances of the LORD are true, and righteous altogether.

Ps 23:4; Also, when in this life, I, as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, walk through or in a valley overshadowed by physical death, I cannot, will not, and do not fear anything about the manner of my death, about harm, malignancy, sting of death, violence of death from another person's or any category of evil, because or since you, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as God, are with me (reciprocity), Your rod of Blessing from Divine discipline from the Justice of God and your staff of Blessing and protection from Divine Deliverance and Bible Doctrine from the Justice of God, They both console and comfort me.

Ps 23:6 Grace Orientation.

Ps 27:3; Though an outnumbering organized military force besiege, encamp, entrap, ambush or conspire against me, resulting in great battle pressure, the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of my Soul shall continue to not fear; though war shall rise or be declared against me from all sides, in spite of this I will keep on being absolutely confident in God, I will keep on using the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages)•

Ps 27:4; One thing, which is my first priority, have I desired or asked or petitioned of the LORD, and that will I constantly seek after; in order that I may dwell permanently in blessing and relaxation, in the permanent house, the teaching of Bible Doctrine, of the Lord, all the days of my life, in order that I may perceive and permanently understand the Glory and Grace of the Lord.

Ps 33:16; No king is delivered by a the size of his army, no warrior or strong man is delivered by bulging muscles or great physical strength,

Ps 33:17-20; The War horse is a strong delusion for a victory or deliverance therefore despite it's great strength it cannot deliver or save anyone. Behold the eyes or omniscience of the Lord are on those Believers who are occupied with or respect, fear, stand in awe of him, on those who have absolute confidence or trust in time of crisis from the Faith Rest Drill 4 Stages in his unfailing love or grace. To Rescue or cause to deliver their souls

from the dangers of death by dying grace and keep them alive in economic depression or crisis or other adversity. Our souls as mature believers, wait in full confidence for the Lord, he is our aid or help, he is our shield or defense in disaster. For our right lobes having put together doctrinal rationales will express superabundant happiness in him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, in disaster or under pressure, because we trust in his holy person or essence. Oh Lord, let your unfailing love or Grace be upon us according as we have ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE in You under pressure

Ps 33:21-22; For our right lobes having put together doctrinal rationales will express superabundant happiness in him, /jc, in disaster or under pressure, because we trust in his holy person or essence. Oh Lord, let your unfailing love or Grace be upon us according as we have ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE in You under pressure

Ps 34:16; The face of the Lord is against those who do evil in judgment and it will cause to cut them off from the memory of the world.

Ps 36:1-4; A divine word within the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of my soul concerning the rebellion or defection of the reversionist of Kelah, who have no respect of God before his, God's, eyes. For he, the reversionist of Kelah, flatters or complements himself in his own eyes, to find his own egotistical sins of pride or megalomania is to hate his sin, The flattering words of his, the reversionist of kelah, mouth are emptiness or vanity and deceit, he has ceased to be wise or lost all their doctrine in reversionism, he has ceased to be pleasing to God, He, the reversionist of Kelah, plans or plots vanity, wickedness, nothingness, or evil to hurt someone in his bed before he sleeps, he takes a stand in a way that is not Good being treacherous, and praise a person to his face while cursing him behind his back, he does not reject evil and will do whatever he can get away with.

Ps 37:16-19; Better is A little of the mature believer than the abundance of many Evil unbelievers. So the arms of the evil unbeliever will be broken from Divine Discipline and reversionism and they will loose all the details of life and develop a greater capacity for self induced misery but the Lord sustains the Mature believer. The Lord knows the days of the mature believer in time and their inheritance will be forever. They will not be ashamed in times of evil in historical disaster, and in the days of economic depression they will have abundance and be filled and satisfied.

Ps 46:1-11; Elohim or God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ the visible member of the trinity, the Lord of the armies, is to us a fortification, our security, he is a help in times of adversity, he has always been tested and proven to be faithful to us. For this cause we will NOT fear, when the earth is caused to change, and when the mountains quake into the heart of the seas from natural disasters. His (Sennacherib's or any others) armies shall bellow a war cry to inspire fear of them and boil with anger. Think about it, give it serious thought. A River of Doctrine whose channels shall cause happiness to the city or nation of God, the holy places of the Most High God, Since Elohim is in the middle of her (here Jerusalem and any client nation), the Lord will help her, and she will not totter nor fall under the 5th cycle of discipline, the Lord Elohim will help her when the morning dawns and the armies will utter their great battle cry, and they will cause kingdoms to tremble, but he, The Lord Jesus, The Christ will utter his battle cry and the earth will be dissolved. Therefore so decreed the lord concerning the King of Assyria Sennach'erib, he shall not come into the city of Jerusalem nor shoot an arrow there, nor assault it with a single shield, he will not build up an assault or mount an attack against Jerusalem, he will NOT be successful. Fall in and pass in review or march in review, to see how the Lord has caused annihilation in the land of Judah, or to see who is responsible for this punishment, The Lord Jesus, The Christ who causes wars to cease, terminate or be interrupted to the end of the earth, he smashes or breaks the bow of the Assyrian infantry or any opposing army and cuts to pieces their spears, he destroys the war chariots, he burns them with fire. Be caused to cease striving, relax and trust the Lord, and know based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine that I am the lord, I will be exalted among the heathen enemy nations, I will be exalted in the Land of Judah. The Lord of the Armies, The Lord Jesus, The Christ is with us, an impregnable fort is the God of Jacob, who gave him salvation and prosperity, he is our refuge our war department. Rest and Think about it.

Ps 48:14; This God is our God forever and ever. He will be our guide even unto death.

Ps 55:1-19; Listen to my prayer, O God; and do not hide yourself from my supplication! Hear me and answer me; My thoughts trouble me and I am distracted at the voice of the enemy (Absalom reigns in Hebron), By the depression of the lawless one, For they bring down suffering on me, and in anger they would trap me or destroy me. My Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is anguished within me, and the terrors of death have fallen on me. Fear and trembling came upon me, and horror has overwhelmed me. I thought, "O that I had the wings like a dove! Then I would fly away and be at rest; I would flee far away and stay in the desert to avoid my responsibility, [Selah]. I would soar to my place of refuge far from the rushing wind and storm." Confuse the revolutionists, O Lord, divide their speech and get them to argue among themselves; for I see violence and strife in the city of Jerusalem. Day and night the conspirators prowl around on her walls; trouble and misery are in her midst. Destructive forces are at work in the city of Jerusalem, threats and lies never leave her streets in unrestrained crime. If an enemy were insulting me or debating me in our assembly I could endure it; if someone who hated me magnified himself against me I could hide from him. But it is you, a man who is my equal, my associate, my close friend (Ahithophel, Absalom, Ammah). With whom I once enjoyed sweet fellowship as we walked to the house of God's with the festive crowd. According to your will Oh God, Let death surprise them; let them go down alive in a slow painful death into the grave; for evil is at home within their souls. But I call to God; and the LORD delivers me. At Evening and morning and at noon I cry under pressure and he hears my voice (confidence of humility under pressure). He has preserved and set free or delivered my soul in peace and tranquility and prosperity from the attack of the revolution enemy approaching upon me, even though there are multitudes opposed against me. God who is sovereign from Eternity Past will hear me and answer my prayers, and humble or afflict my enemies, he who always dwelt in prosperity from Eternity Past; Even they who think nothing of others men who do not changes their ways such as in the reversionism of Saul or the revolutionists, because he has no respect for Elohim. [Selah = God works while we rest and did all of it in Eternity Past]

Ps 55:20-23; He (Saul, Absalom or any Evil Nations) has put forth his hands against those who were at peace with him, He has violated his covenant. He Absalom has violated his pardon or covenant, he has used it to become leader of the revolution. His speech was smooth as butter but his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul was in war, his words were softer than oil but they were drawn swords. Cast your anxieties, burdens or cares upon the Lord, and he will sustain you, he will never permit the righteous, the one's with imputed Absolute Righteousness, to fall, be shaken or destroyed even when all else is falling apart. But you, Oh Elohim, will bring them, the reversionist revolutionists, down to the pit of destruction, men of bloodshed and deceit will not live out half their lives, and I will trust in you.

Ps 56:3-4; The Day that I am constantly afraid I will trust in or slam my trouble on you and your doctrine. In God, I will praise or believe his doctrine, in God and his doctrine I have put my trust without any fear. What can man do to me?

Ps 56:11; In God have I put my trust I shall not be afraid of what man can do to me.

Ps 56:13; For you have snatched from danger or delivered my soul from the Sin Unto Death , Not just my feet from falling in simple carnality, in order that I, myself, and no one else, may walk before Elohim in the light or doctrine of the life, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

Ps 62:1-12; My soul finds rest in God alone through the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories), My deliverance comes from him [The battles are always won in the soul before they are fought on the ground]; For He, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, alone is my rock and my deliverance, He is my fortress or security from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in my Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, I shall not, I cannot be shaken or greatly moved. (David says he didn't need the fortress of castle Zion because God is his fortress). How long will you, revolutionists, attack a man unjustly, that all of you may break him down while he is helpless against revolution; all of you shall be violently killed or murdered by means of the Sin Unto Death, you are like a bulging wall, a tottering pushed in fence? (Revolutionists plot only to destroy the rulers and government because they must use the people as their weapon to overcome the government) They plot conspiracy and have determined to overthrow him from his exalted status

of honor from Occupation with the Person of Christ in super-grace, they take great pleasure in deceit or lies and falsehood and maligning. With their mouth they bless, but with their Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul they curse in the hypocrisy of revolution. [Selah] My Soul waits in silence for or finds rest in or submits to the Plan of God alone through the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories), for my absolute confidence or strong faith or expectation comes from him in application of doctrinal rationales. Only He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, is my rock or place of fortress or security and my deliverance or salvation; I shall not, I cannot be greatly moved or shaken. Shaken. My deliverance and my honor depends on Elohim; My Rock of defense my refuge is in Elohim through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Oh People, By means of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine, Trust in the Lord at all times; Pour our all of your problems or troubles from your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to him; for God is our refuge for us. [Selah] Absolutely, emphatically, dogmatically, Men of low degree or trashy people, scum are empty or vanity or always arrogant revolutionary leaders, men of high degree or aristocrats who turn against the government are but liars but scum are always arrogant; If they are weighed on a balance they are as a breath and weigh nothing in comparison to the super-grace believer. Do not trust or depend upon the terror or violence and oppression of the tyrant extracting liberty from others, furthermore do not become arrogant or foolish or vaporous or vain about stolen plunder; though wealth or promotion or success increases through revolution, do not become arrogant and make it the center of your norms and standards in life or your happiness. One Doctrine Elohim has spoken; two doctrines I have heard under the Grace Apparatus for Perception: First namely that power belongs to Elohim Not the Revolutionists; Also Grace or steadfast love belongs to YOU and is your policy, oh Jehovah. For you, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, prosper each person according to his Modus Operandi or functions in concentration or thinking or Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine resulting in Occupation with the Person of Christ .

Ps 64:4-5; They that shoot in secret or from ambush at the one equipped with Metabolized Bible Doctrine the honorable, shooting at him suddenly and by sneaking and do not fear. They encourage each other to hold fast to their evil purpose or plans; they discuss laying snares secretly, thinking, "Who can see them?"

Ps 68:19-20; Blessed be The Lord, who daily bears our burden; The God who is our salvation. [Selah] Our God is to us a God of deliverance; From the sovereign Lord Lord, comes escapes from death.

Ps 68:30; Rebuke the beasts that dwell among the reeds, the herd of bulls with the calves of the peoples. Trample under foot those who lust after tribute; scatter the peoples who delight in war.

Ps 76:10; For the Wrath of man shall praise you and the rest of the wrath you will restrain.

Ps 89:3-4; You, God the Father, have said, "I have made a contract in favor of my chosen one, I myself have made a solemn promise to David my servant: I, God the Father, will cause to establish or authorize your dynasty in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, forever, and build up your throne to generation after generation.'" [Selah, stop and consider the implication of the Plan of God continuing despite our failure or success]

Ps 89:15; Happinesses to the people or nation who keep knowing from one generation to the next, the sound or blast of the trumpet in universal military training, Oh Jehovah, they shall march and advance while concentrating and thinking in discipline in the light or doctrine of your face or countenance,

Ps 91:10; The range of pressures or misfortunes or adversities do not touch or harm or get to me though they are trying to destroy me, neither will any totally destructive disaster even though they approach me ever destroy my inner being.

Ps 91:14-15; Because I have loved Him (The Lord Jesus, The Christ) Therefore HE will deliver me! He will set me securely on high because I have known His Name or Person! I will call upon Him and He WILL answer Me, He will be with me in Trouble, He will rescue me and honor me

Ps 97:10; You who love the Lord Hate evil, the Lord who preserves the Souls of the Spiritual Gift ones he delivers

them from the hand of the Evil one.

Ps 120:1-7; In my pressure, distress, or adversity I cried out aloud to the LORD, and he answered me: "Deliver or rescue my soul, O LORD, from lying lips, from a deceitful tongue." What shall be given to you Saul? And what more calamities of discipline shall be added to you, you false tongue? Sharp Arrows of a Mighty Hero warrior, Jonathan, who takes care of his weapons, with burning hot coals of the broom brush used for discipline and self induced misery! Woe is me when I left Jonathan in reversionism and self pity, that I dwell as a stranger in persecution in Meshech in the northern assyria living with undesirable gentiles , that I dwell among the tents of Kedar becoming as a nomadic arab! Too long has my soul had it's dwelling with those who hate peace, namely Saul. Even though I ran away I am for peace, and when I open my mouth to speak they are for war in implacability and reversionism.

Ps 121:7; The Lord will guard you from all evil he will guard your soul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine from evil

Ps 140:1-2; Rescue or deliver me Oh Lord, from evil men, preserve me from violent men, who devise evil things in their right lobes against me, who continually stir up wars.

Ps 144:1-2; Being adored in Category I love is the Jehovah, my rock, strength, who trains through discipline and constant repetition my hands for hand to hand combat, and my fingers for weapons of war; My grace giving one with unfailing love, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, my defense perimeter, my stronghold or fortification for training and my deliverer, my shield and the one in whom I take refuge, who subdues or disciplines the people or enemy under ME.

Rev 19:11-15; Then I saw heaven opened (2nd advent), and behold, a white horse! He who sat upon it is called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he judges and wages war. His eyes are like flame and fire, and on his head are many crowns or diadems of Kings; and he has a name inscribed on him which no one knows except himself. He is clothed in a military cloak or robe dipped in blood, and the name by which he is called is "ho logos", The Word of God. And the armies of heaven, arrayed in fine linen, white and clean, followed him on white horses. From his mouth comes a sharp sword with which to smite the nations, and he will rule them with a rod of iron; he will tread the wine press of the fierce wrath of God the Almighty.

Rev 19:21; And the rest were slain by the sword of him who sits upon the horse, the sword that issues from his mouth; and all the birds were gorged with their flesh.

Rev 20:3-4; Then he Officer of Arms of the Angelic College of Heralds threw him (Satan) into the abyss (Prison) he both locked him up and sealed him in (maximum security) in order that he should no longer deceive the nations until the 1000 years are completed. After these things (Millennium) he must be released for a short time. Then he (Satan) will appear again on the earth to deceive the nations those in the 4 hemispheres of the earth code named Gog (leader of the revolution Satan) and Magog (followers) to concentrate or assemble them for battle whose number is like the sand of the sea.

Rev 21:4; And God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes, and there shall be no more death, neither shall there be any more mourning, sorrow or crying neither shall there be any more pain, for the things Jews have endured in the passed the first things have passed away."

Rom 1:19; Because what is known about God is evident within them, or Revealed to them as unbelievers at God Consciousness, for THE God made it evident or has revealed himself to them as Unbelievers under 5 means of coming to God Consciousness.

Rom 1:20-32; for since the creation of the world his own invisible attributes, his eternal power, his divine nature or the Essence of God have been clearly perceived being perspicuous and clearly understood through things which he has created, namely both his eternal power the omnipotence of God, and his divine nature or essence, for the purpose of being or so that they, the whole Human Race, are without excuse or defense against the Justice of God

at God consciousness. Because (the reason for the wrath of God toward those maladjusted to the Justice of God at salvation) when they knew God as a result of the common grace ministry of God the Holy Spirit at gospel hearing, they did not honor with Positive Volition and Faith alone in Christ as God, nor did they feel obligated to thank him, in fact as a result of their negative volition or maladjustment to the Justice of God, they received worthless evil thoughts in their evil deliberations or rationalizations, and their deliberately ignorant right lobe receives darkness in the past and present. Although they claimed to be wise they became fools, saltless, insipid [These are Smart People who are DUMB] their right Lobe receives darkness although they claimed to be wise. And they, the unbeliever reversionists, exchanged the Glory or Essence of the Incorruptible, Imperishable, Eternal God for an image or copy in the form or appearance of corruptible, mortal, perishable mankind, and soaring birds and powerful quadrupeds and snakes and reptiles resulting in degenerate Humanizing of God. Therefore, as a result of the maladjustment to the Justice of God as unbeliever reversionism, the Justice of God handed or delivered them over to judgment, in the various multiple lusts of the Right Lobes of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul; to impurity, immorality, sexual promiscuity, uncleanness, namely alienation from God, that their own bodies might be degraded or dishonored among themselves. For they unbeliever reversionists who exchanged the Truth of the Gospel of The God for the Lie or false assertions of evil satanic doctrines, and they showed reverence or respect or ritual worship of demonism, possession, human sacrifice, etc and served the Creature Satan or his perversions to their disadvantage, instead of or rather than the Creator, the Lord, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who is blessed and whose integrity and all attributes are inviolable forever; Amen, I believe it with total confidence and am sure of the truth of it. Because of this, Negative Volition rejection of the truth of the doctrine of the gospel at God Consciousness and / or Gospel Hearing, The Justice of God in action, handed them, who are maladjusted to the Justice of God, over for judgment, not stopping their sins, to dishonorable, disgraceful, degenerate, degrading passions of sexual perversions. For not only their degenerate females exchanged the natural or normal function of the woman in sex with a man for that which is unnatural or contrary to natural function in Lesbianism. But also in the same manner even the degenerate or perverted males after they abandoned the natural or normal function of sex with the female, through deliberate volition, burned or become inflamed in their sexual lust or desire one toward another, males with homosexual males working out homosexual lusts from the past accomplishing perverted shameless acts and duly receiving back in their own persons the DUE or JUST penalty or judgment of their perversion which was inevitable from the Justice of God. And since or in so far as they, the unbeliever reversionist, rejected with Negative Volition after testing or examining in full knowledge the epignosis gospel and having the God at God Consciousness, resulting in maladjustment to the Justice of God causing unbeliever reversionism, The God, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, delivered or handed them over for judgment, in time and eternity, to a worthless mind filled with satanic evil, destroying their genius, to do those evil things which are not proper. Having been or being saturated or fully possessed or influenced by all anti justice through salvation maladjustment to the Justice of God; By Cat I intentional practice of evil wickedness in a state of evil; By Cat II inordinate desire of any kind such as greed, insatiability, avariciousness in the Frantic Search for Happiness; By Cat III depravity or degeneracy, malignity, function of evil, quality of evil, outworking or practice of all EVIL; including being full of jealousy, full of murder, full of strife, full of discord, full of contentiousness, full of dissension, troublemakers accompanied by and full of treachery as instinctive cunning or intelligent deliberate deceit, full of evil craftiness, they have become slanderers or gossips. They are backbiters, maligners, detractors, gossips, slanderers haters of God, violently insolent, haughtily arrogant, disrespectful, implacable, overbearing, boastfully presumptuous, braggards, fabricators or contrivers of evil, with reference to parents disobedient ones, Evils of Socialism without understanding related to Laws of Divine Establishment or any spiritual connotation, senseless, foolish, stupid, ignorant ones with Black Out of the Soul, contract breakers, faithless, perfidious lacking personal integrity, untrustworthy, without natural affection, unloving, devoid of love instincts, unmerciful, unsympathetic, uncompassionate, inexorable, never pacified or appeased or reconciled to authority. Such are those unbeliever reversionists, who completely and fully with total cognizance and perception know the ordinances or legal requirements of the Justice of God as the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ along with Establishment or Doctrinal Truth, that those who practice such evil reversionistic things of heathenism from the past through the present keep on being deserving of physical Death through maximum justice from the Justice of God as the Sin Unto Death, (Rom 13); these unbeliever reversionists not only do the same things but also continue to give hardy endorsement or approval to those who also practice them. (this demands execution)

Rom 5:8-9 (Eternal Security & Deliverance from the last Judgment); In that the God demonstrates, shows clearly,

manifests, makes evident, evinces, proves, reveals, bring together in our soul SC, his own love for us, in that while we were yet sinners Christ Died as a substitute for us. Much more therefore, having been justified by his blood we shall we be delivered from wrath through him.

Rom 5:10 (Reconciliation Afortiori); For if while we were enemies we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, and it is true, much more, having been reconciled, we shall be delivered in his life.

Rom 5:15 (temporal blessing Afortiori); But now as the transgression of Adam's Original Sin so also is the gradious gift of the first advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross. For if by the transgression of that one Adam the Human Race died spiritually, and they did, much more the grace of God even the gift of grace by one man Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who has provided superabundance of special blessing at Spiritual Maturity for the many mature we.

Rom 5:16 (Eternal Blessing Afortiori); For if by the transgression of Adam's Original Sin the spiritual death ruled through that one and it did, much more they who receive in life that surplus from the grace imputation of special blessing to the mature believer, and the gift of Absolute Righteousness for the blessing much more they shall rule through that one Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

Rom 7:19+21; What I desire namely Good, I do not do, What I do not desire namely Evil, this I keep on practicing. Now if what I do not desire, purpose or resolve to do, the same I keep doing, I am no longer the one bringing it about or accomplishing it, but the Old Sin Nature which dwells or resides within me. Therefore I discover a principle residing in me, that to me always desiring to do human good, to me Evil is always present.

Rom 8:28-34; Therefore, we, Consistently Advancing Believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace or Ultra Super-Grace, have learned dogmatically to KNOW from reverse concentration, IN FACT, that to those mature believers ONLY who are elected according to privilege, forming the pivot, as a part or on the basis of a predetermined plan (Execution of the Plan of God, $X + Y + Z = \text{Maximum Glorification of God}$) who persist in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who love THE Unique God, from Reciprocal Love for God Motivation, HE, God, CAUSES all things, both blessing in time and Undeserved Suffering, to continue to work together for good of intrinsic value, to the advantage of those, both individual mature believers and the client nation. Because we know, from doctrine, that whom he, God the Father, has foreknown before hand from Eternity Past, he also decided beforehand, predesigned, foreordained or predestined us into the perfect Plan of God for our life; to be conformed ones, as Royal Family of God in the Church Age through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, to the image of his son (who provided our Spiritual Life), in order that He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, might become the first born through resurrection, ascension and session to the right hand of God, among many brothers of the Royal Family of God. And whom He, God the Father, decided beforehand, predesigned, foreordained or predestined, providing a plan for us to share all Christ had in Hypostatic Union, these same ones, church age believers, as Royal Family of God, he also elected to privilege, giving responsibility for execution of the plan, moreover these same ones he also justified or declared righteous or vindicated at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and execution of the Spiritual Life, and whom he justified these same ones, he also glorified or gave a share of glory from imputed blessing in time and eternity. THEREFORE or CONSEQUENTLY, face to face with these things (prior context Rom 8:28-30), to what conclusion are we forced? If the GOD [is] (ellipsis) for us or on our side, and it is true He is, who [can be] (ellipsis) against us as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God? The God the Father who did not even spare his very own unique adult son, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, but He, God the Father, delivered him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, over through judicial imputation of all personal sins to Substitutionary Spiritual Death judgment as an act of justice, as a substitute on behalf of all of us; it is surprising that you cannot understand this logical concept; how shall he, God the Father NOT also, with him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, graciously or beneficially in grace give to us from the Justice of God the all things as temporal blessing, He DOES. (ALL Grace Blessings in time) Who shall bring charges or accusations or judicial proceedings against or judge the elect or chosen Royal Family of the God? God is the one who always vindicates or justifies; Who is the one carnal reversionistic believer who condemns through maligning and judging a believer's status as a Christian? Christ Jesus is the one who died spiritually in substitution for us, Yes rather, having been resurrected or raised from the

dead, who is ascended and seated at the right hand of God the Father, who indeed as our royal high priest intercedes with prayer and petitions and appeals the Supreme Court of Heaven on behalf of us as our defense attorney?

Rom 8:35; (rhetorical question) Who shall divide or separate us from the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and his love for us? (answer NO ONE) Shall extreme circumstantial pressure afflictions or oppressions of historical disasters, or pressure of mental anguish, or persecution because of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, or deprivation of food, or nakedness from being deprived of clothing, or natural dangers, or suffering from military defeat or disaster, or revolution, or crime or violence?

Rom 12:21; Stop being overcome or conquered by EVIL but overcome or conquer EVIL with the Absolute Good of intrinsic value (Rom 8:28) of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thus the Plan of God (X + Y + Z)

Rom 13:1-5; Let every soul (thinking area) be in subjection to governing authorities for there is NO authority except from God and those which exist are established by God. Therefore he who resists authority has opposed the ordinance of God (Laws of Divine Establishment) and also they (Believers) who have opposed will receive condemnation on themselves (discipline from God). For rulers are not a cause of fear for Good behavior (establishment Good) but for evil, do you want to have no fear of authority then do what is Good and you will have praise from the same, for it (Government authority of Establishment) is a minister from God to You for Good, but if you do what is EVIL you should be afraid for it (Government) does not bear the sword for nothing or in vain (capitol punishment), for it is the minister of God an avenger who brings wrath on those who practice evil. therefore it is necessary to be in subjection of authority not only because of punishment for rejection of establishment but for conscience sake

Rom 13:10; The Love required by the Royal Family Honor Code, namely Impersonal Love, does not produce evil to a neighbor or those in our periphery, therefore the love is the fulfillment of the law and the Royal Family Honor Code.

Rom 16:17-18; Now I urgently keep on appealing to, exhorting, comforting, encouraging, beseeching or energetically urge you advancing or mature Believers in the Royal Family of God, keep your eyes on or mark or be discerning or take critical notice of being alert with regard to, those weak believers who keep on causing dissensions, divisions, apostasies and temptations or strife and hindrances or offenses, trapping by causing enticement of people to get out of fellowship contrary to the Bible Doctrine which you have consistently learned from a Pastor Teacher, IN FACT, keep avoiding, shunning, separating yourself or turning away from them. For such reversionistic believers as these Troublemakers, do not obey or serve as slaves to our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but their own hollow emotional, empty, hidden responder patterns serving themselves, and by good, gracious, pleasant, bland, clever words or sweet speaking masking a fraudulent purpose and clever speeches or smooth and flattering speech of hypocrisy of false teachers deceive or seduce away from truth into error, the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of those ignorant of Bible Doctrine.

Zech 14:2-4; For I will gather all the nations against Jerusalem to Battle, and the city shall be captured and the houses plundered (just before the above deliverance) the women raped, half of the city shall go into exile but the rest of the people shall not be cut off (Slaughtered in battle) from the city. Then the LORD will go forth and fight against those nations as when he fought on the day of battle. On that day his feet shall stand on the Mount of Olives which lies before Jerusalem on the east; and the Mount of Olives shall be split in two from east to west by a very wide valley; so that one half of the Mount shall withdraw northward, and the other half southward.

